





# CHAOTIC SWORD GOD

BOOK 11

*Xin Xing Xiao Yao*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Chaotic Sword God

(混沌剑神)

by

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

(心星逍遥)

# Synopsis

---

Jian Chen, the publicly recognized number one expert of the Jianghu. His skill with the sword went beyond perfection and was undefeatable in battle, After a battle with the exceptional expert Dugu Qiubai who had gone missing over a hundred years ago, Jian Chen succumbed to his injuries and died.

After death, Jian Chen's spirit was transmigrated into a completely foreign world. Following an extremely fast growth, his enemies piled up one after another before becoming gravely injured once more. On the gates of death, his spirit had mutated, and from that moment henceforth, he would tread on a completely different path of the art of the sword to become the sword god of his generation.

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Pipipingu @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1001: Eliminating the Tiger King

## (One)

---

“I greet the great beast god,” a Class 7 Magical Beast knelt down first in human form as he cried out emotionally.

Jian Chen glanced passed the magical beast, and his nonchalant gaze suddenly froze. He recognized this magical beast. It was the ape king of the spirit apes he had met many years ago at the border of the Cross Mountains. The ape king had obtained a large quantity of heavenly resources and the very precious Hundred Grass Wine.

A few other Class 7 Magical Beasts that viewed the Winged Tiger God as their god did not hesitate either. Like the ape king, they all dropped to their knees and called out loudly, “We greet the beast god.”

The faces of the magical beasts with rather ugly expressions changed once more after they saw so many people kneel down. In the end, they could only kneel obediently as well, and they called out loudly like the others. However, their voices lacked emotion, and were extremely calm.

In the blink of an eye, all the magical beasts that had hurried over threateningly from the depths of Cross Mountains were on their knees. They only seemed to look at the Winged Tiger God and directly ignored Rum Guinness, Jian Chen, You Yue, and Hei Yu beside the white tiger.

Jian Chen suddenly looked into a distance. Immediately, a gleam

of light flashed across his eyes when he spotted a white-robed, scholarly middle-aged man flying over unhurriedly. He seemed ordinary with no presence at all, just like Hei Yu. He had erased his presence as well.

However, Jian Chen's presence was more powerful. Under his senses, he could see through the man's strength completely despite the other party's erased presence.

"Second Heavenly Layer of Saint King," thought Jian Chen. However, he did not care too much, as experts at such a level could no longer threaten him thanks to his current strength.

The man directly arrived before all the Class 7 Magical Beasts and looked at the Winged Tiger God with mixed emotions. He did not kneel down like the others and bowed instead. He said calmly, "I greet the beast god."

The man was much more composed than the other Class 7 Magical Beasts. After he bowed to the Winged Tiger God, he glanced to Jian Chen's group. He could tell that Jian Chen and You Yue were humans, but he remained calm. He did not show any hostility.

Rum Guinness's face also became mixed when she saw this man. After a slight hesitation, she bowed to the man and said, "Rum Guinness greets the peng king."

A thought flashed through Jian Chen's head when he heard how Rum Guinness referred to the man, "Peng king? The Gilligan clan

has two kings. One of them is the tiger king, so does that mean the man before us is the second king of the clan?”

The peng king looked toward Rum Guinness and a warm smile immediately formed on his face, “Rum Guinness, welcome back. It has been difficult for you in the past years.” He knew all about the hidden truth when Rum Guinness and her husband were pursued by the tiger king, except he was unable to prevent it or stop it. After all, Kaiser of the Beast God Continent was the instigator behind the scenes. All he could do was watch the events unfold, as the two of them suffered from the tiger king.

“The peng king is too kind. I have stopped being a member of the clan long ago.” Rum Guinness’ voice was rather cold. Although the peng king did not take part in the hunt for her and her husband, she did not know where the peng king stood. As a result, she was extremely cautious of him and even possessed some hostility.

The peng king could naturally feel how Rum Guinness treated him. If an elder was so impolite to him before, he would definitely teach her a lesson. But it was different now. Rum Guinness was the mother of the Winged Tiger God, so her status was drastically different from before. Even as a king of the Gilligan clan, he needed to treat her politely and would fear offending her. This was why the peng king could only smile indifferently toward how Rum Guinness reacted, and he said nothing more.

Suddenly, a tremendous presence appeared. A burly, bare-chested middle-aged man flew over quickly in a threatening manner. His face was extremely dark while his eyes were cold as dense killing intent flickered inside.



Jian Chen's gaze also began to sharpen, becoming like drawn swords. He stared closely in the direction of the presence and heavy killing intent appeared in his eyes as well. He made no effort to conceal it. Despite the distance, he could tell from first glance that it was the tiger king. This individual had come out of Cross Mountains all those years ago to hunt down Xiao Bai and had almost claimed his life.

In the blink of an eye, the tiger king arrived before everyone and stood beside the peng king. He maintained a fifty meter distance from Jian Chen's group.

Hatred surged in Rum Guinness' eyes as soon as she saw the tiger king. She gnashed her teeth and said, "Tiger king, you've probably never thought that I'd still be alive. Today, my son and I will personally kill you and tear you to shreds to take revenge for my husband." Her voice was riddled with emotion.

The tiger king paid no attention to Rum Guinness and stared darkly at the white tiger. A gleam of light flickered through his eyes, and he thought, "The growth of the Winged Tiger God really is terrifying. I never thought that it could reach Class 7 in such a short amount of time after being born. If it gets some more time, reaching Class 8 would be no problem for it, but he's no threat to me before he actually reaches Class 8."

Afterwards, the tiger king glanced past Jian Chen's group. He directly ignored You Yue, but when he saw Jian Chen and Hei Yu, his eyes narrowed by an undetectable amount. He could not see through their strength.

Jian Chen's presence was covered up by the saint artifact, which was impossible to see through with the tiger king's current abilities. As for Hei Yu, he was a Saint King at Great Perfection. He was even greater than Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings, so if he erased his presence, the tiger king could not see through it at all.

"Jian Chen was only at the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler the last time I saw him. No matter how outstanding his talent is, it's impossible for him to reach a level where I can't see through his strength in these short few years. The two of them are standing toward the back, so they clearly aren't anyone important. Looks like they've hidden their presence using a special method, but they aren't very strong. Hmph, they're just faking it," thought the tiger king. He immediately relaxed, before looking toward Rum Guinness and the white tiger once again. The light in his eyes flickered.

Jian Chen sneered, "Tiger king, you've probably never thought that we'd meet again so soon. Last time, you left the Cross Mountains to come find me on the Tian Yuan Continent, yet this time, I've come to find you in the depths of the Cross Mountains. You heavily wounded me last time, almost making me pass away. This is an irreconcilable matter. I will be taking my revenge today."

The elders of the Gilligan clan all looked up at the tiger king after they heard these words. They were all surprised. The Gilligan clan had an agreement with the humans, which stated that any magical beast beyond Class 7 could not step outside the Cross Mountains. Otherwise, the human experts would mercilessly slaughter them.

Although the Gilligan clan was the greatest force within the Cross Mountains, their true strength was only equivalent to the ancient clans among humans. They were not the opponents of the entire human race at all. The only reason they had this territory was because the Beast God Continent was supporting them from behind, so the world beyond the boundaries of the Cross Mountains were a forbidden zone that the elders of the clan could not trespass. However, never did they think that the tiger king had crossed it and trespassed into the Tian Yuan Continent despite the consequences. They found this unbelievable.

The tiger king became enraged when he heard these words. If it were not for Jian Chen who put his life on the line to protect the Winged Tiger God, the white tiger would have ended up in his hands long ago. The supreme human experts would not have been alerted, and he would not have been forced to use a secret technique to flee, cannibalizing his cultivation, which dropped from the Second Heavenly Layer to the First. He had yet to recover even today.

“Hmph, you dare to say such with even with your limited abilities? Such impudence. You interfered with what I was doing last time. You’re lucky for being able to live a little longer, but since you’ve trespassed my Cross Mountains today, don’t think you can leave alive,” the tiger king said with gnashed teeth. He blamed Jian Chen for everything, so he felt an intense hatred for him.

“Tiger king, why don’t you try me if you’re so confident? I’d like to see how you prevent me from ever leaving the Cross Mountains again,” sneered Jian Chen. Killing intent bloomed in his eyes.

“You arrogant brat. I’ll deal with you after I deal with my family,” the tiger king said with a darkened face. Then, he looked toward Rum Guinness and said coldly, “Rum Guinness, you’re actually working with humans as an elder of the Gilligan clan. Your crimes cannot be forgiven, and you shall be put to death on the spot.” The tiger king suddenly appeared next to Rum Guinness as soon as he finished speaking. Surging energy condensed in his palm and he struck out.

This palm strike did not target Rum Guinness, but the Winged Tiger God beside her.

The peng king’s eyes narrowed, and he sighed gently inside. He did not plan on interfering. He did not dare to interfere, as the connected matters were just too important. It was no longer a battle between him and the tiger king. It would directly tie into the matters of the Beast God Continent if he interfered.

# Chapter 1002: Eliminating the Tiger King

## (Two)

---

The tiger king held nothing back with his palm strike toward the Winged Tiger God. It shot out with a great might that almost caused the surrounding space to shatter. However, the space suddenly froze in the next moment; the tiger king had used his Spatial Force to freeze it. This firmly immobilized the white tiger and prevented it from fleeing.

Although the white tiger was a Winged Tiger God, it was still a Class 7 Magical Beast after all. A huge gap existed between it and Class 8 Magical Beasts, so it was unable to go up against the Saint King tiger king with its current strength.

However, the reactions of the white tiger were in no way slow. It growled deeply and shot backward in the form of a white blur. It moved with lightning speed in this crucial moment. It retreated to twenty meters away. The frozen space of the tiger king was unable to trap it.

The tiger king's attack missed. The terrifying energy explosion actually surpassed the endurance of the space there and immediately caused space to cave in. It formed a hole the size of a pot as the space around it distorted randomly.

A gleam of light immediately flashed across the tiger king's eyes when he saw the Winged Tiger God break free from his frozen space. However, he did not stop at all. He pushed away the empty space and arrived before the white tiger with a single step. He swung his hand and the energy of the world began to condense

quickly. Then, it formed a ten-meter-wide hand that grabbed at the white tiger.

The huge hand enveloped a region of space and locked the white tiger out of all possibilities and directions of escape.

The tiger king had moved extremely suddenly. Coupled with his great speed, Rum Guinness and the other Class 7 Magical Beasts in the surroundings had just noticed him. Their faces changed instantly when they saw that the tiger king wanted to kill the Winged Tiger God.

“How dare you, tiger king! The Winged Tiger God is the publicly acknowledged god of magical beasts. You are disrespecting the beast god. Have you betrayed us magical beasts?” Rum Guinness called out in panic. She spoke extremely sharply, before she lunged toward the tiger king regardless of the danger. She tried to stop him.

The peng king floated in place as he watched everything unfold. The light in his eyes constantly flickered. He was hesitating.

Many people among the elders of the Gilligan clan were confused. They did not know why the tiger king had suddenly attacked the Winged Tiger God, so they all became stunned there. They had never considered the possibility of the tiger king trying to kill the Winged Tiger God.

Only a small portion of them knew the truth to what had happened all those years ago, and the ape king was one of them.

“The tiger king is trying to kill our god. Elders, stop him with me,” the ape king called out, as he charged towards the tiger king first.

A few elders who did not know about the truth were astounded by the ape king’s words. Many of them immediately charged toward the tiger king despite the danger, as they wanted to stop the tiger king from laying his hands on the Winged Tiger.

The tiger king was a king of the Gilligan clan and possessed great prestige among the elders, but the Winged Tiger God was the god of magical beasts. It stood as a great god in the eyes of those elders, worthy of the respect and support of all magical beasts. As such, these elders had chosen to stand on the side of the Winged Tiger God given the situation without any second thought.

However, it was too late. The tiger king’s attacks were just too fast, and it was nowhere near something that the Class 7 Magical Beasts could block. The huge hand condensed by the tiger king had encased the white tiger completely and it quickly tightened its grasp. It tried to crush the white tiger to death forcefully.

At this moment, a devastating energy suddenly appeared. It flooded the sky, and its terrifying might and chilling presence surprised all the high class magical beasts in the mountain range.

Jian Chen suddenly appeared in this crucial moment. His left hand was around You Yue’s waist, while a layer of dark, beautiful Chaotic Force covered his right. He hurled the energy toward the

tiger king's condensed hand with lightning speed.

Boom!

A deafening sound immediately erupted when the two supreme energies collided in mid-air. Terrifying residual energy rocked the surroundings and swept out in all directions in the form of a ripple.

The clash between Saint Kings was undoubtedly devastating. The surrounding space would immediately distort to its limit wherever the ripple of energy passed, as if it would cave in and shatter. Clouds of dust were kicked up into the air as the ground cracked. Ten whole mountains collapsed from the residual energy. Rock slides were triggered everywhere, which caused the ground to constantly shake as they produced rumbles.

Jian Chen easily dispersed the tiger king's hand. The residual energy knocked the tiger king back, which caused him to backpedal a few steps. He became filled him with shock.

All the Class 7 Magical Beasts that had charged up in an attempt to stop the tiger king all came to a stop from the energy, before they retreated helplessly. Even Rum Guinness was affected.

Jian Chen punched out a second time to stop the incoming energy ripples and to prevent You Yue from being harmed.

The peng king stood several dozen meters away unmovingly. He



stared at Jian Chen in interest and his heart finally settled. He could not help but smile as he thought, “Looks like I’ve been worrying too much. The Winged Tiger God really does have something to count on for coming to the depths of the Cross Mountains despite knowing that the tiger king wants to harm him.”

“How is this possible?! How can this be possible!? How did you become so strong in such a short amount of time!?” the tiger king cried out.

Jian Chen sneered, “Nothing is impossible. Tiger king, today will be the day you die.” With that, Jian Chen arrived before the tiger king. He slapped toward the tiger king’s chest with a palm full of destructive Chaotic Force. Jian Chen did not need to resort to the Emperor Armament when he fought an injured First Heavenly Layer Saint King.

The tiger king roared angrily and darkness-attributed energy surged wildly from him. His hands turned into huge tiger paws and clawed at Jian Chen’s hand.

Only when the claws came into contact with Jian Chen’s hand did the tiger king discover in shock that his full-powered attack could not harm Jian Chen at all.

Crack! In the next moment, the sound of bones breaking rang out clearly. The tiger king’s paws had already become bent. Jian Chen’s hand broke his paws when they collided.

The tiger king groaned deeply. The agony made him pale slightly. He glanced at Jian Chen in shock. Then, he immediately shot backward. He reappeared a hundred meters away.

“Impossible, impossible. This is impossible. When I saw you last time, you were only a mere Saint Ruler and could not even resist before me. Only ten years have passed, so how has your strength reached such a level?” The tiger king glanced past his broken arms and looked at Jian Chen. He became stunned as he murmured with a deep voice. He struggled to accept everything unfolding before his eyes.

# Chapter 1003: Eliminating the Tiger King

## (Three)

---

Jian Chen stared at the shocked tiger king coldly and sneered, “Tiger king, I’d like to see how you escape from me today. Pay for what you did all those years ago!” With that, Jian Chen moved slightly and appeared before the tiger king, crossing the several dozen meters in an instant. He struck toward the tiger king once more with a hand that radiated with a destructive aura.

The tiger king roared at the sky and a dazzling golden light immediately coated his body. It illuminated the surroundings and was extremely blinding.

The tiger king immediately turned into a golden-furred tiger within the light. His true form was a Gold Fur Tiger King. Although the species was nowhere near the level of a beast of antiquity, it was still a so-called ‘king’ within tiger magical beasts.

(TL: The same species that killed Kendall #neverforget)

The tiger king opened its huge mouth and produced an earth-shaking roar at Jian Chen. A ball of compressed, fist-sized darkness-attributed energy shot out from the tiger king’s mouth. It headed toward Jian Chen with lightning speed.

The surroundings darkened slightly with the appearance of this ball of energy. Even the surrounding temperature seemed to plummet.

Boom!

Jian Chen's fist struck the ball of energy and a loud sound immediately ran out. Terrifying residual energy swept through the surroundings, which caused the sky to shake and the space to crack.

The space of the Tian Yuan Continent was nowhere as tough as the space in the sea realm. Just Saint Rulers were enough to break through the space on the Tian Yuan Continent, so every time Saint Kings clashed, they would show signs of utterly destroying the surroundings.

This time, the collisions of Jian Chen and the tiger king's attacks caused the entire Cross Mountains to shake. All the mountains had cracked in the depths of the mountain range, with countless collapsed together. The terrified cries of countless magical beasts filled the air.

Jian Chen resisted the dark energy with his body and suffered no injuries. On the other hand, the tiger king became slightly weaker after he spat out the energy ball. Even at his peak condition, he was nowhere near Jian Chen's opponent, let alone now where he was still injured, and his strength was reduced.

"A human expert has trespassed our Cross Mountains. Get him, elders of the Gilligan clan. Chase out the human. Peng king, why aren't you helping out?" said the tiger king in human tongue after he turned to the peng king and the elders. His voice was hoarse,

and he tried to get the entire Gilligan clan to fight Jian Chen.

The peng king stood with his arms crossed as he watched on from afar. He observed Jian Chen in interest, but he did not step forward to help anyone. He did not show any intentions of interfering either. He had directly ignored the tiger king's words.

The elders of the Gilligan clan were knocked afar by the terrifying residual energy. They were all scattered quite a distance from the location of Jian Chen and the tiger king's battle. They all stared at Jian Chen in shock. Right now, all of them could tell that Jian Chen was a human Saint King and one that the tiger king could not beat.

The elders all looked at each other as they floated in the distance. They appeared hesitant. The trespassing of a human expert in the Cross Mountains was indeed something that they could not bear with, but the person this time was just a little too terrifying. They did not dare to charge up recklessly, as that would just be charging to their deaths.

Afterward, all the elders looked toward the peng king. They decided not to interfere either as they saw the peng king's actions. As such, they behaved as if they did not hear what the tiger king had said.

"Tiger king, you even dare to plot against the god of your continent. This is heresy. I'd like to see who'll help you now," Jian Chen said coldly. He punched out again and struck the tiger king's back. It broke and completely caved in, while the violent force knocked him down. He struck the ground heavily; the ground

became covered with cracks and formed a huge crater.

Jian Chen did not stop and descended. Just when the tiger king climbed to his feet, Jian Chen kicked the tiger king's head heavily, which knocked him into the air once more.

Jian Chen could kill the tiger king with no difficulty, but that was not what he wanted as it would let the tiger king off too easily. As a result, he wanted to crush the tiger king's pride as a Class 8 Magical Beast.

The tiger king landed heavily fifty meters away. He shook his head as he had become rather dizzy after Jian Chen kicked him. Then, he looked toward Jian Chen viciously. He said in human tongue, "It's not that easy if you want to kill me. Jian Chen, I will make you regret the idiotic things you have done today sooner or later." Bright, blood-red light suddenly encased the tiger king. It was extremely dazzling and by the time it had dimmed, the tiger king had disappeared. He had used a secret technique to flee in magical beast form.

Jian Chen's expression changed slightly when he saw the tiger king suddenly vanish. He immediately closed his eyes and expanded his presence to its limits in an attempt to locate the tiger king.

"He has actually vanished." Jian Chen opened his eyes again very quickly. He became pale-white, because he could not find the tiger king within the expanse of his presence.

At this moment, Hei Yu's suddenly began to smile sarcastically. He had always been standing at the very back silently, but he broke that silence now. "I know where he ran off to."

Jian Chen's face lit up when he heard this. He immediately turned to Hei Yu and asked, "Senior, please tell me where the tiger king is. He can't escape."

A gleam of light flickered through the peng king's eyes. He immediately looked toward Hei Yu doubtfully.

Hei Yu nodded slightly and said, "There's no need to panic, brother Jian Chen. I'll bring him over here right now." Hei Yu casually swung his hand and ripped opened space. A Space Gate formed quickly.

In a region of wilderness a hundred thousand kilometers outside the Cross Mountains, a huge tiger crawled extremely weakly on the ground with matted, bloody fur. It seemed to even lack the strength to stand up.

It was the tiger king who had just fled.

"Jian Chen, you won't be able to live much longer. As soon as I recover some strength, I'll immediately report everything that has happened here to the ruler of the Beast God Continent," the tiger king muttered hoarsely with a vicious look.

Suddenly, his expression changed. He stared fixedly at the space

up ahead as it began to distort wildly. A Space Gate quickly began to form as he stared helplessly.

“Crap.” The tiger king became terrified. Just as he struggled to climb to his feet, a huge hand condensed from energy reached out from the Space Gate, grabbing him and dragging him in.

Only when the tiger king passed through the Space Gate did he discover that he had returned to the depths of the Cross Mountains.

“You don’t have the power to flee before me, so quite wasting your energy,” an old voice boomed.

The tiger king turned toward the sound. The black-clothed Hei Yu stood beside him.

The tiger king’s heart immediately turned cold. Despair permeated his heart. He knew that his conjectures were wrong. The old man behind him was a terrifyingly powerful expert.



# Chapter 1004: Gathering of Three Saint Emperors

---

“Tiger king, why don’t you keep running? Why aren’t you running anymore?” Jian Chen jeered at the tiger king as he flew over from afar.

The tiger king showed no fear even though he knew that it was almost impossible for him to avoid this disaster. He looked at Jian Chen with hatred, while his vicious gaze seemed like he had a blood feud with Jian Chen.

“If I knew that this would happen today, I should’ve killed you immediately when I met you the first time. How else would you have been able to survive today?” The tiger king gnashed his teeth. Regret flooded his heart.

A cold light flashed across Jian Chen’s eyes when he heard these words. He kicked the tiger king’s chest and blood sprayed from the latter’s mouth.

“It’s a pity that time can’t run backward. You are now my captive, and your life is in my hands. You have no right or power to kill me,” Jian Chen said coldly.

“Hmph, kill or torture if you want, but if you kill me, a great disaster will fall your way as well. The Beast God Continent definitely will not just standby with human experts trespassing and acting brazenly in the territory of my Beast God Continent,” the tiger king said coldly. He still did not know that Jian Chen now

possessed the power to resist the experts of the Beast God Continent.

“Savior, can you let the two of us deal with the tiger king? The tiger king killed my husband and even wanted to harm us all those years ago. We have an irreconcilable hatred for him. I am a magical beast as well, so if I deal with the tiger king, even the Beast God Continent can’t say anything,” said Rum Guinness in consideration of Jian Chen.

Jian Chen nodded and said, “Alright then. I’ll leave the tiger king to you.” Although Jian Chen did not fear the Beast God Continent, Rum Guinness and the white tiger’s had an intenser hatred for the tiger king. It was more suitable for the two of them to take the tiger king’s life.

“Rum Guinness, you’re a traitor of the magical beasts, and you want to overthrow the hierarchy?” The tiger king glared at Rum Guinness as he called out feebly. He tried very hard to maintain a dignified appearance, but it was an utter failure with his currently dejected look.

“Tiger king, my child is the Winged Tiger God. Even the rulers of the Beast Continent needs to treat him politely when they meet him. Not only have you failed to respect the Winged Tiger God, but you even tried to harm him time after time. What do you think you’re trying to do? The one who’s trying to overthrow the hierarchy is you.” Rum Guinness said sharply, before she slowly arrived before the tiger king. Hatred surged in her eyes and she gnashed her teeth. She asked, “Tiger king, did you ever think you would end up like today when you harmed my husband and I?”

“Hmph,” snorted the tiger king. Then, he closed his eyes and stopped talking, acting as if he was waiting for his death. Jian Chen first heavily injured him, and then he used a secret technique to flee. These actions made him suffer a great backlash and had deepened his wounds. He could not even stand up right now, much less run away.

The tiger king did not beg for his life, because he knew it would be useless.

Rum Guinness looked at the tiger king hatefully as crystal-clear tears ran down her face. She mumbled, “Husband, you were killed mercilessly by your own brother back then. Today, I will be taking revenge for you. I hope you don’t blame me for killing your brother. He’s unworthy of being your brother.” Rung Guinness slowly raised her hand. Immediately, a powerful energy surged out and she struck the tiger king’s head with lightning speed.

No one stopped Rum Guinness from killing the tiger king. The peng king floated in the distance calmly, though his eyes were filled with some mixed feelings. They were both kings of the Gilligan clan and had quite a few years of friendship. He found it a little hard to bear watching the tiger king die so helplessly before him.

The elders in the surroundings all stared with wide eyes. The light in quite a few people’s eyes constantly flickered as they hesitated. They wanted to save the tiger king, but no one dared to do anything in the end.

Bang!

The tiger king's head immediately exploded as Rum Guinness' attack landed. Bloody white matter flew in all directions.

At the same time, a white ball of light emerged from the destroyed head and shot toward the distance with lightning speed. It was the soul of the tiger king.

Jian Chen sneered. With a thought, the space before him froze in an instant. It trapped and immobilized the tiger king's soul.

"You should understand that any attempts to flee before me is futile, tiger king," Jian Chen said coldly.

Roar! The white tiger roared at the sky from beside Jian Chen, before it turned into a white blur and entered Jian Chen's frozen space. It bit the tiger king's soul viciously, tearing it to shreds and making it disperse.

The tiger king's soul slowly vanished in the surroundings, and a roar filled with regret seemed to ring out vaguely.

The depths of the Cross Mountains fell into silence. A Class 8 Magical Beast, equivalent to a human Saint King, had just disappeared from the world forever. Moreover, it was one of the kings of the Gilligan clan. This matter left all the elders dumbstruck.

The peng king stared at the tiger king's dispersing soul blankly and sighed inside. This was how the tiger king, someone equal to him, had died and disappeared permanently.

Rum Guinness hung in the air as tears gushed down her cheeks like a fountain. Her buried desire for revenge was finally fulfilled after so many years.

“Husband, do you see this? Your cold-hearted brother has finally died in the hands of your wife and child. We’ve avenged you,” Rum Guinness murmured gently, as she looked at the sky.

...

At the same time, two burly middle-aged men stood with their hands behind their backs in an ancient mountain range far, far away from the Cross Mountains. They stood nonchalantly on the tallest, sword-shaped mountain, as they allowed the wind to blow wildly around them.

They stood unmoving like statues. If someone else were present, they would get an illusion from time to time that these two were a part of the world. They seemed inseparable from the surroundings.

At this moment, the space above a mountain two thousand meters from them began to twist violently. It quickly formed a Space Gate and an evil-looking, middle-aged man in white robes emerged.

The man floated in the air and looked toward the two people from afar. Only after a while did he speak slowly, “Kaiser, tiger emperor, I never thought it was the two of you.”

“Path lord of the carnal desires, how have you been?” Lankyros asked nonchalantly.

“Have the two of you forgotten the agreement between my Tian Yuan Continent and your Beast God Continent? You’ve trespassed the territory of the Tian Yuan Continent once again, so please leave immediately.” The path lord’s voice was extremely calm and possessed no emotions whatsoever.

Kaiser said, “Human Saint Emperor, we’ll get straight to the point. We have personally come from the Beast God Continent because we want to work with you for something.”

A light flickered through the path lord’s eyes when he heard this. He asked after a while of silence, “What is it?”

# Chapter 1005: Hong Lian

---

“It regards the Winged Tiger God,” Kaiser said slowly. He gazed mercilessly toward the path lord of carnal desires.

The path lord’s expression remained the same. He had already guessed that it would be related to the Winged Tiger God when Kaiser stated he wanted to work together.

After some more silence and pondering, the path lord asked, “What are the details of working together?”

The tiger emperor said, “Human Saint Emperor, you’re a smart person as well, so you should know why we want the Winged Tiger God. The Winged Tiger God is the god of the magical beasts, so how can we allow a human youngster to raise it as a pet? However, that youngster has two experts protecting him, and they possess origin energy treasures that protect them, which makes even Saint Emperor unable to do anything to them. As a result, I want you to help us out and keep one of them busy.”

“Once the Winged Tiger God matures, it’ll surpass Saint Emperor. No one can contend with it other than the greatest human expert Mo Tianyun in the ancient times. Do you really think that I’ll help you and bring a calamity to my Tian Yuan Continent?” the path lord said coldly.

Kaiser and Lankyros had expected the path lord to say this long ago. Their expressions remained calm and, Kaiser said, “Human Saint Emperor, you are over-worrying. The Winged Tiger God will

not invade your Tian Yuan Continent even if it fully matures, because your continent has nothing that tempts us. Only the Beast God Continent is truly suitable for us magical beasts, so you don't need to worry about that."

Kaiser continued, "There must be something on the Winged Tiger God that tempts you as well. If you agree to work with us, we'll give you ten drops of the Winged Tiger God's essence blood as remuneration. You should know exactly how precious its essence blood is, so I don't need to explain any further."

The path lord's eyes immediately lit up when he heard them mention the essence blood. A sliver of greed appeared in the very depths of his eyes.

Kaiser and Lankyros did not continue to speak. Instead, they stared at the path lord in interest as they waited silently for his reply.

"Alright, I'll work with you. I'll keep one of them busy," the path lord of carnal desires agreed in the end after quite some hesitation. He really did need the essence blood very much, and the only way to obtain it was to work with Kaiser and the tiger emperor. This was the only way to keep the two experts besides the Winged Tiger God busy.

"Hahaha, I hope we can work together happily," said Kaiser as he laughed aloud. He was filled with confidence now that the path lord had promised to aid them.



Lankyros also smiled as an indiscernible sliver of excitement appeared in the depths of his eyes. He thought, “Looks like it’ll not be long until the day I enter the ninety-ninth floor of the Beast God Hall and receive the Winged Tiger God’s legacy. Kaiser, you really are a good helper of mine.”

At this moment, Kaiser and Lankyros’ faces changed drastically. They revealed horrible expression in that moment and an unsuppressible rage began to radiate from them. It caused the surrounding air to freeze.

Their sudden change mildly surprised the path lord. He immediately became cautious and asked, “What happened?”

“Someone killed the person we planted in the Cross Mountains,” Lankyros growled. His face darkened to the point that it became terrifying.

Kaiser gently closed his eyes and said coldly, “That brat must have done it. How dare he breaks the rules of the humans and trespass the depths of the Cross Mountains? Does he really think that we magical beasts are easy to oppress?”

A dense killing intent flickered in Lankyros’ eyes. He said, “We just happened to want to find him, but I never thought he would come provoking us instead. Hmph, we can’t let him go this time. Let’s go to the Cross Mountains right away.”

...

Rui Jin stood with his arms crossed and at leisure in a scorching region covered with volcanoes. He stared silently at the volcano that constantly-churned magma.

At this moment, the magma began to surge more and more violently. A layer of white flames shot out from the opening. They were terrifyingly hot and turned the surrounding rock into red lava and widened the volcano opening.

Bang!

The lava suddenly exploded and a clarion phoenix cry pierced the sky. A huge phoenix had shot out from the lava. She was coated in terrifying flames, as she circled around in the sky. Immediately, the surrounding temperature began to skyrocket and even the surroundings turned red.

“Hong Lian, congratulations on successfully reaching Great Perfection, though you were a little slower than Hei Yu,” Rui Jin smiled at the phoenix as he stood near the volcano. The flames that gushed out from the volcano failed to get any closer to him.

The phoenix flew around two more times before her scorching white flames began to disperse. In the end, she transformed into a slender woman who seemed to be in her twenties, as she descended slowly.

She wore a long, red dress, while her crimson hair shone like raging flames. She was extremely pretty and as enchanting as a picturesque drawing.

She was the Scorching Divine Phoenix who had left the artifact space with Rui Jin and the others—Hong Lian.

She was already at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer when she had first left the saint artifact, only an inch away from the Ninth. The energy of the world was much denser outside than within the artifact space, so she immediately found a perfect place to seclude herself as soon as she had come out. After so many years of cultivation, not only did she reach the Ninth Heavenly Layer successfully, she had even surpassed it and reached Great Perfection.

Hong Lian landed slowly next to Rui Jin and said with some surprise, “Rui Jin, what did you say? Hei Yu has reached Great Perfection before me?”

“Yep,” smiled Rui Jin. He was happy to see Hong Lian, as there were not many people who had the right to be his friends in the artifact space. There was only Hei Yu and her.

“How is that possible? When we first broke free, Hei Yu had just reached the Eighth Heavenly Layer, so how did he reach Great Perfection before me?” Hong Lian found this unbelievable.

Hei Yu did not bother to explain. With a flip of his hands, a piece of armor completely forged from blood-red plumage and an exquisite red hairpin appeared. A pearl-like white bead was attached to the red piece of armor.

“Hong Lian, examine these items are,” Rui Jin smiled as he held the armor and hairpin.

# Chapter 1006: Legacy Treasures

---

Hong Lian's gaze suddenly froze when Rui Jin produced the crimson piece of armor. She stared blankly at it and the exquisite red hairpin.

She could swear that it was the first time she had seen these two items, yet she felt a sense of familiarity toward the piece of armor and the hairpin. To her disbelief, she actually felt a weird bloodline connection to them, as if the feathermail and hairpin were items that solely belonged to her.

Hong Lian stared blankly at the feathermail in Rui Jin's hands. Her eyes hazed over as she thought long and hard as to where she had seen these items, as well as why they made her feel like she was familiar with them.

Suddenly, a locked memory appeared. Information from her inherited memories surged forth, which immediately allowed her to understand what these items were and why she felt so familiar with them.

"T-t- these are the legacy treasures of my Scorching Divine Phoenix clan, the Ninerefined Godfire Feathermail and the Scorching Godfire Hairpin," Hong Lian cried out involuntarily. Disbelief flooded her face, as the Scorching Divine Phoenix clan and the Dragon clan had already vanished from the world. These two treasures had naturally vanished with the clan, so they should not have been able to reappear in the world. Yet, Rui Jin was actually holding those two exact items, which she found unbelievable.

“Correct. These are indeed legacy treasures of your clan, the Ninerefined Godfire Feathermail and the Scorching Godfire Hairpin. Hong Lian, I will give you these two items right now.” Rui Jin extended his hands with the items toward her and directly passed them over.

Hong Lian was still rather stunned. She just refused to believe that the items had actually appeared before her. She had basically extended hands subconsciously. Her hands trembled, as she received the items from Rui Jin. Despite this, she never looked away from them throughout the entire process.

A while later, Hong Lian finally calmed down. She looked away from the items and stared at Rui Jin fixedly. “Rui Jin, where did you get the legacy treasures of my clan? Did my clansmen not take them away when they vanished all those years ago?”

“No, that’s not the case.” Rui Jin shook his head and continued, “Hong Lian, sense it closely and see if the treasures are the same as the description in your inherited memories.”

Hong Lian looked at Rui Jin doubtfully, as she slowly closed her eyes. She sensed the two treasure carefully.

Her eyes snapped open very quickly. They shone so brightly that they actually seemed to be able to illuminate objects, and deep shock and disbelief replaced her previous emotions.

“Origin energy. This is actually origin energy. How is that

possible? How can origin energy exist in the legacy treasures of my clan?" Hong Lian became to cry out uncontrollably once again. The shock within her had reached a maximum peak.

She was born and raised within the saint artifact, but her inherited memories possessed a lot of hidden information about the world. She knew what origin energy was very well. It was something that could make Saint Kings salivate over. Only those who had surpassed Saint Emperor could control it.

"Rui Jin, just what is going on? Why does origin energy exist within the legacy treasure of my clan? This is completely different from my inherited memories. And just where did you get these two treasures from?" Hong Lian stared at Rui Jin impatiently. She wanted to know the answers as soon as possible.

Rui Jin did not hurry to answer. Instead, he turned slowly toward the clouds that seemed like they were on fire. He said slowly and calmly, "Hong Lian, I met the Winged Tiger God."

"The Winged Tiger God. That young Winged Tiger God?" Hong Lian asked curiously.

"No." Rui Jin shook his head and said, "The Winged Tiger God that surpassed Saint Emperor in the ancient times."

These words stunned Hong Lian, and she asked, "How is that possible? So much time has passed. Has the Winged Tiger God not died?"

“I don’t know whether he’s dead or not, but he was old a strand of a soul when I met him all those years ago. It was the Winged Tiger God who handed me the two legacy treasures of your clans. He also got me to pass them onto you,” said Rui Jin.

“The clan head of every generation always used the legacy treasures and it never leaves their body. How did it end up in the hands of the Winged Tiger God?” Hong Lian asked in confusion.

Rui Jin turned around and looked at Hong Lian sternly. A bright golden light shone from him and the legacy treasures of the Dragon clan—the Sacred Dragon’s Armor and Sacred Dragon’s Sword—appeared.

“Even the legacy treasures of my Dragon clan were with the Winged Tiger God, and the two items also now have this extra origin energy, making them stronger. They’re far more powerful than their descriptions in the inherited memories.”

“Moreover, Hei Yu also acquired a similar suit of armor and weapon. They both possess origin energy and are no weaker than our legacy weapons. They Winged Tiger God gifted both to him.”

Hong Lian was clearly stunned by these words, and she said, “Why did the Winged Tiger God give us these two items. He seemed to have disappeared with our two clans. And why does he know that there are still members of the Dragon clan and Phoenix clan left in this world?”

“Not only did the Winged Tiger God know that there are



remaining members of the two clans, he knew even more unbelievable matters in even greater detail. I even suspect that the Winged Tiger God is not dead, but hiding somewhere and observing the Tian Yuan Continent silently,” said Rui Jin.

“What did you say?” Hong Lian became astonished. This conjecture was just too astounding.

“Hong Lian, I have something else to tell you. Our clansmen have not vanished. They might have gone to another realm. There’s still hope for us to find them.” Rui Jin’s tone was in no way calm. It possessed a sliver of excitement that he struggled to hide.

“A-are you sure?” Hong Lian also became excited.

Rui Jin nodded and said, “When the Winged Tiger God left us these items, he said that we needed a crucial person to find our clansmen, and that person was the human youngster which the saint artifact took as a master, Jian Chen.”

“The Winged Tiger God said that we need to protect Jian Chen if we want to find our clansmen. Moreover, he told us that we would never be able to see them ever again if Jian Chen died.”

“Jian Chen. It’s actually him. He’s not very old, so how does the Winged Tiger God know someone like him. Maybe it’s true that he’s not dead, but secretly hiding somewhere as he observes everything unfold...” Hong Lian murmured. She felt quite uneasy.

# Chapter 1007: Death Hunt (One)

---

“Hong Lian, you should refine the two treasures of your clan as soon as possible. The relationship between the Tian Yuan Continent and the Beast God Continent has been quite unpeaceful recently. The ruler of the Beast God Continent has become Jian Chen’s enemy because he wants the Winged Tiger God. Jian Chen can face danger at any moment, so we can’t leave his side for too long. Although Hei Yu is with him, he’s just one person in the end. If he comes across two Saint Emperors, he won’t be able to save Jian Chen,” said Rui Jin.

Hong Lian nodded slightly. She understood just how important Jian Chen was right now. She found it rather hard to accept that she needed to protect a junior, but in order to reunite with her clansmen, she would not hesitate to pay any even greater price.

Hong Lian glanced at the bead on the feathermail silently and asked, “Rui Jin, what is this bead? It doesn’t seem to be an item from my clan.”

“It was gifted by the Winged Tiger God. It’s an extremely wondrous treasure that specializes in protecting the soul. It can make the soul immune to foreign influences. It is extremely simple to refine the bead. All you need to do is drip a droplet of essence blood, and then fuse a portion of your soul into it,” Rui Jin explained.

Hong Lian did not say any more. She lifted up the two legacy treasures and the bead gifted by the Winged Tiger God and jumped into the crater of the volcano. She submerged herself in the

churning magma.

Rum Guinness chose a beautiful mountain to construct a grave for her dead husband in the depths of the Cross Mountains. The grave was extremely simple, with a three-meter-tall stone gravestone and a dirt mound.

She did not bury her husband in the mound. Instead, she buried a few items that her husband always carried around, as well as some pieces of furniture her husband would use when he lived in the Gilligan clan.

Rum Guinness had no other choice except to bury these items, as her husband had already been dead for many years. She could not find his corpse no matter what.

“Husband, we’ve already avenged you. You can rest well in the afterlife....” Rum Guinness sobbed painfully before the gravestone as tears ran down her face unceasingly.

Growl! The white tiger produced a growl as well. Moreover, its voice carried some sorrow, as if it was trying to say something in its own language.

Jian Chen, You Yue, and Hei Yu stood silently beside Rum Guinness, as they watched everything unfold. Jian Chen and You Yue both carried a sliver of sorrow and sympathy, while Hei Yu remained indifferent.

Behind them stood the white-robed peng king and a group of elders from the Gilligan clan. They all looked at Rum Guinness and the Winged Tiger God silently with mixed gazes.

The peng king told the elders everything that had happened all those years ago with the tiger king's death, which allowed them to understand the truth behind everything. Rum Guinness had not worked with humans and betrayed the clan. Instead, the tiger king framed her since he intended to kill the Winged Tiger God.

Although all the elders were magical beasts, there were plenty of clever people among them. Many of them immediately connected these events to the Beast God Continent after they learned the truth from the peng king. They guessed that there was definitely someone powerful on the Beast God Continent who had prompted the tiger king to harm the Winged Tiger God. Otherwise, the peng king would not have been so fearful either.

Rum Guinness dried her tears and rubbed the white tiger's head gently. She said, "Child, let's go. The Cross Mountains are no longer a place where the two of us can stay." She turned to Jian Chen as she spoke and bowed politely toward him. "Savior, thank you for allowing us to complete our revenge. From now onward, I, Rum Guinness, am willing to work like a slave for the savior."

Jian Chen quickly helped Rum Guinness up and said, "Please don't be like that, senior. I am very good friends with Xiao Bai. It's something that I'm supposed to do, helping a friend that is. And I also had some enmity with the tiger king, so I just happened to assist you in your revenge this time. Please don't call me your savior, senior. Just call me Jian Chen."

“Savior, how can I do that? I faced impending death back then, and if the savior had not taken in my child, he probably would not have been able to live until today. Also, saviour saved my life. Your kindness toward the two of us is so great that I cannot even return it with my life,” Rum Guinness said from the bottom of her heart.

The way Rum Guinness acted pained Jian Chen. After a slight hesitation, he said, “Senior, let’s not talk about this for now and leave this place.”

This time, Rum Guinness did not say anything more. She traveled toward the boundary of the Cross Mountains with Jian Chen and the white tiger.

The peng king could no longer remain silent, as he watched them gradually get further away. He said, “Rum Guinness, your child is the beast god, the Winged Tiger God. I hope the great beast god can stay behind and protect the Gilligan clan, as well as lead all the magical beasts in the Cross Mountains. Everyone in the Gilligan clan is willing to follow the great beast god.” The peng king dropped to one knee, as he finished his words.

“We’re willing to follow the great beast god!”

All of the elders dropped to their knees, and they all repeated what the peng king had said. No one disagreed.

“We will not be staying here. The Gilligan clan no longer has anything to do with us. I’ve stopped being a member of the clan

long ago,” Rum Guinness said without looking back. The Gilligan clan was a region of pain in her heart, and a region of despair.

The peng king immediately hesitated with that. He secretly sighed as pity filled his face. He knew that Rum Guinness was still unable to let go of the matters from all those years ago because he, the peng king, did not interfere when the tiger king hunted down the couple. Additionally, he failed to stand up and reveal her innocence when the tiger king framed her.

Suddenly, a gleam of light flashed across Hei Yu’s indifferent eyes. They sharpened in that instant as he gazed at the space high up in the air.

The space there began to twist violently, and a Space Gate quickly formed. Three middle-aged men emerged from the Space Gate simultaneously. Two of them were burly, while one of them were evil-looking.

They were the two Class 9 Magical Beasts of the Beast God Continent and the path lord of carnal desires.

Kaiser and Lankyros’ faces were both dark as dense killing intent flickered in their eyes. As soon as they had appeared, their cold killing intent caused the surrounding temperatures to plummet and become bone-chilling.

# Chapter 1008: Death Hunt (Two)

---

Hei Yu's expression immediately became extremely horrible. He had never thought that the two Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent would enter the Tian Yuan Continent once again and directly arrive before them.

Hei Yu knew that they had come with ill intentions, so he did not hesitate and immediately contacted Rui Jin with a secret technique. Otherwise, It was impossible for him to deal with the two Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent.

Jian Chen's expression also drastically changed when he saw the two Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent and the path lord of carnal desires. However, he reacted relatively quickly and simultaneously let out the saint artifact into his palm and the Octoterra Divine Hall from his Space Ring. He made the divine hall expand quickly.

"Don't resist, I'll send you all into the artifact space," Jian Chen growled. He sent You Yue, the white tiger, and Rum Guinness into the saint artifact as fast as he could. Then, he disappeared into the divine hall.

A tremendous energy rippled from Hei Yu, and an azure suit of armor appeared on him. A machete that glowed with a silver light had also appeared in his right hand as it radiated with a terrifying pressure. These were the items he relied on the most to fend off Saint Emperors as a Saint King at Great Perfection.

The peng king recognized the tiger emperor and Kaiser at first glance. He immediately became surprised, and he dropped to one knee, “I greet the esteemed Kaiser and your majesty the tiger emperor!”

“We greet the esteemed Kaiser and your majesty the tiger emperor.” All the elders dropped to one knee as well.

Kaiser and the tiger emperor did not even look at them and directly ignored them. They glared at Jian Chen, who had fled into the divine hall.

“First, you ignore the rules of the Gilligan clan and trespass the depths of the Cross Mountains. Then, you kill experts of my race. You cannot be forgiven, Jian Chen. I’d like to see where you flee off to this time. Don’t think that hiding in that wretched divine hall can keep you safe. I’ll break through your divine hall right now,” growled Lankyros, before he struck the air with his palm.

The energy of the world immediately began to gather at an unbelievable speed with the tiger king’s strike, before it formed a huge palm a hundred meters in length. It whistled out and targeted the Octoterra Divine Hall with a devastating might.

Hei Yu appeared before the divine hall with a flash. The origin energy armor covered his body with a hazy layer of azure light. At the same time, a sharp blade of light that was several dozen meters in length, shot out from his machete. It struck the tiger king’s palm strike.



Hei Yu's attack was in no way weaker than a strike from a Saint Emperor, because it had originated from a weapon with origin energy.

The terrifying blade of light struck the palm and produced a deafening boom. Terrifying ripples of energy directly wreaked havoc in the surroundings. The surrounding space collapsed and turned it into darkness.

Even the sun darkened slightly from the collision of their attacks.

The entire mountain range shook violently. A large region of the range collapsed, and the terrifying residual energy knocked all the elders of the Gilligan clan flying. They could not resist at all and vomited blood. They were just too close to the energy collision, so even with their strengths as Saint Kings, they were still injured by the residual energy.

The peng king became extremely stern. He transformed into a faint blur and fled far away with unbelievable speed before the residual energy could get to him. He appeared several dozen kilometers away in the blink of an eye.

The energy also knocked the Octoterra Divine Hall far away as it floated in the sky. It constantly trembled and shook as it flew, clearly affected by the energy as well.

Jian Chen sat on the top floor of the divine hall as he poured all his strength into controlling it. He borrowed the knockback force to flee toward the outer boundaries of the Cross Mountains as fast

as he could.

The Cross Mountains were very close to Mercenary City. The distance that separated them were less than two hundred thousand kilometers. He needed to hurry there as fast as he could to save his own life, as he could already tell that the path lord of carnal desires was working with the two other experts. Even if Rui Jin was by his side, he would not be able to repel three Saint Emperors.

“I’ll keep him busy. You go hunt down Jian Chen,” growled Lankyros as he continued his fight with Hei Yu. He kept Hei Yu busy so that he could not protect Jian Chen at all.

Kaiser and the path lord did not respond and just chased the divine hall silently. Kaiser directly hurled a punch at the hall.

Boom! Kaiser’s punch knocked the huge divine hall far away, and it shook violently all over. A tiny crack had appeared where Kaiser’s punch had landed, and it constantly expanded. It covered a quarter of the entire hall like a spider’s web.

Jian Chen’s expression took a change for the worse, as he controlled the divine hall on the very top layer. Kaiser’s strength had completely exceeded his imaginations. He had never thought that just a single attack could damage the divine hall to such an extent.

Kaiser sneered, “This is a very tough divine hall. I wonder how many punches it can withstand from me,” as he spoke, Kaiser heavily punched the divine hall once more.

The cracks constantly expanded and widened; they almost covered half of the hall now.

Jian Chen gritted his teeth, as he controlled the divine hall. He had no power to resist Saint Emperors. All he could do was hurry to Mercenary City as fast as possible.

“Jian Chen, you can’t run away this time. It’ll be pointless even if that dragon returns,” Kaiser icily said, and he punched the divine hall once more. It caused the cracks to become even denser.

As his fourth punch landed, cracks had covered every inch of the divine hall.

Boom! With the fifth punch, the entrance to the divine hall directly shattered. It completely disintegrated and had destroyed a large part of the structure.

The sixth punch destroyed half of the structure. The majestic divine hall had now fallen into ruins.

“This is the last punch, Jian Chen. I’d like to see if your divine hall can withstand my seventh punch,” Kaiser coldly said before he struck out.

This punch was clearly much more powerful than the rest. As it flew out, it directly ripped through whatever it passed. It was strong enough to destroy the surroundings completely.

# Chapter 1009: Death Hunt (Three)

---

Jian Chen's expression could not help but change, as he felt the might within Kaiser's punch. He instinctively knew that the divine hall would definitely be reduced to ruins completely if this attack landed. Moreover, it would possibly be irreparable damage.

The divine hall was already heavily damaged, so it was no longer able to resist Kaiser's punch that was close to his full strength.

Terrifying energy coiled around Kaiser's fist. Just this simple attack possessed an earth-shaking aura. Space became as fragile as tofu before it, ripping open easily and turning into darkness.

However, just when the punch was about to strike the divine hall, it suddenly disappeared. Kaiser's punch missed and struck the space before him. It caused the space to tremble violently.

Jian Chen had stored the divine hall away. He did not want it simply destroyed like this after he had obtained it through so much difficulty. Then, a golden streak of light shot out from his forehead and instantly turned into a hundred-meter-tall golden tower. It hovered above his head as he flew toward Mercenary City.

"You sure have quite a few treasures, but it'll be difficult for you to escape death no matter how many you have," sneered Kaiser. A cold light shone from his eyes, which displayed his determined killing intent.

Kaiser disappeared as soon as he finished speaking. He

reappeared before Jian Chen and hurled out at simple punch at him.

Kaiser's attacks were extremely simple, without any fancy tricks to it. However, every single one possessed an unbelievably great might, enough to easily annihilate the surroundings.

The saint artifact above him immediately began to fall. It stopped in front of Jian Chen. With a violent boom, Kaiser's fist landed on the saint artifact like a lightning bolt. The powerful force directly knocked it backward, and it slammed heavily into Jian Chen who was behind it.

Spurt! Jian Chen immediately vomited a mouthful of blood and shot backward along with the saint artifact. The sound of his ribs breaking was faintly audible. The collision from the saint artifact was comparable to a strike from a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King, so Jian Chen struggled to defend against it even with his Chaotic Body. He became quite injured.

A head-sized dent appeared on the saint artifact after it resisted Kaiser's punch. It was clearly much tougher than the Octoterra Divine Hall.

Jian Chen shot backward like a cannonball. He was directly catapulted out of the depths of the Cross Mountains and arrived in the outer boundary of the mountain range.

Houston suddenly raised his head in a valley over ten thousand kilometers away from Jian Chen, as he plowed the ground. His

indifferent eyes lit up in a shocking fashion as he cast his gaze into the distance.

“It’s two Class 9 Magical Beasts from the Beast God Continent. They actually entered the continent sneakily. Weird, where are Jian Chen’s two experts that possess the origin energy items? Why do I only feel one of them? Is the other one not with him?” Houston mumbled with a deep voice. He immediately became extremely ugly when he thought of this possibility. “If that’s the case, Jian Chen’s in trouble.” With that, Houston tossed aside his hoe and ripped open a Space Gate easily. He directly disappeared through it.

Jian Chen’s Chaotic Force had filled his body long ago, as he pushed everything that the Chaotic Body could provide to the maximum. He had drawn his Emperor Armament as well and shot a powerful sword Qi time after time at Kaiser with the saint artifact protecting him. He knew his current attacks could not harm Saint Emperors at all, but it could slow down Kaiser temporarily at the very least.

Kaiser treated the sword Qi from Jian Chen as nothing. He struck out with a great might and shattered it all into pieces and even damaged the saint artifact several times. The dents became denser and denser as the space within it trembled constantly. It seemed like an apocalypse inside.

Although the saint artifact could resist attacks from a Saint Emperor for some time, Jian Chen could not hide in it to escape the dangers, as Kaiser would be able to take it back to the Beast God Continent and open it up slowly. At that time, it would not

just be him; even the white tiger hidden in the artifact space would lose its life.

“Hmph, just what is this golden tower? There clearly isn’t any origin energy, yet it can resist so many of my attacks.” Kaiser could not help but become angered as Jian Chen blocked his attacks time after time. It was just humiliating for him to expend so much effort to deal with a mere Saint King.

Suddenly, Kaiser opened his hand and clenched the space up ahead tightly. He said, “Freeze, space.” The space around Jian Chen froze in that instant, which trapped him in place and immobilized him. He even lost control of the saint artifact.

“I’d like to see where you run off to now,” Kaiser smiled viciously at Jian Chen. Then, he arrived before Jian Chen in a flash. He directly thrust his hand at Jian Chen’s chest in an attempt to dig out his heart.

“I never thought that a great expert of the Beast God Continent would lower himself to fighting a junior. If the word made its way out, you’d probably become a laughing stock.” An old voice suddenly boomed in the surroundings. A thousand meters away, a Space Gate suddenly formed and a long, jet-black spike flew out. It shot toward Kaiser at an unbelievable speed, as it pierced through space.

“You’re looking to die!” Kaiser’s face darkened, and his hand that originally headed toward Jian Chen’s heart curled up into a fist. He punched toward the spike.

The spike was knocked away by the terrifying energy that had erupted when it reached half a meter from the fist. It shot back toward the Space Gate with unbelievable speed.

Houston emerged from the Space Gate in a coarse garment and without shoes. He looked at the spike indifferently and made a slight gesture with his hand. The sharp force that propelled it immediately disappeared, and it landed obediently in Houston's hand.

Kaiser looked at Houston coldly and said, "A Saint King at Great Perfection. However, you're not my opponent. You can't stop me."

"Kaiser, you're still one of the great experts of the Beast God Continent after all. Isn't it just too far for you to bully a junior. And you've broken our agreement once again, entering the Tian Yuan Continent," growled Houston. His complexion was very ugly.



# Chapter 1010: Houston's Baleful Yin Force

---

“Hmph, you have no right to govern what I do. And your junior of the human race purposely instigated this matter. He trespassed the depths of the Cross Mountains and killed an expert of my Beast God Continent. Do you really think that my Beast God Continent can be trampled on?” Kaiser growled. His hand shot out once again and grabbed toward Jian Chen's heart.

The frozen space left Jian Chen completely immobilized. Kaiser froze it with his abilities as a Saint Emperor, so it was not something that Jian Chen could break free from.

Houston's eyes shone with a light that had never appeared before. In that moment, his eyes were like torches that were sharp and dazzling as the sun. Two beams of light seemed to shoot from his eyes, which caused the space in front of him to twist.

Suddenly, a great presence erupted from his body. It shot into the sky and caused the air and clouds to churn. A black mist began to emerge from Houston's body. It blotted out the sky and suddenly plunged the bright world into darkness. It was so dark that the range of visibility was less than an arm's reach, while even the blazing sun had disappeared.

This was darkness-attributed Saint Force.

The long, black spike in Houston's hand seemed to fuse perfectly with the pitch-black world. It shone with a barely-visible light as it shot soundlessly toward Kaiser. The spike was unbelievably fast,

which made it even harder to sense.

A strike like this would definitely be difficult to block for an opponent with a similar strength to Houston. They would be heavily injured even if they avoided death, but it could not threaten Saint Emperors.

A cold light flickered in Kaiser's eyes, as if darkness completely did not affect him. He stared fixedly at Houston as cold killing intent permeated from him without any restraint. He snorted, "You overestimate yourself. Since you want to stop me time and time again, I'll eliminate you first." Kaiser could not help but stop his hand that targeted Jian Chen's chest. Afterward, he clenched it tightly and struck out loudly. A terrifying energy immediately surged wildly from Kaiser's punch. It transformed into a dragon, as it struck the black spike with an unstoppable force.

Houston's spike struck with the dragon condensed from energy. With a violent boom, Kaiser's attack blew the spike far away. Meanwhile, the dragon continued toward Houston with no reduction in force, as it seemed to roar.

With the spike knocked backward, Houston produced a visible tremble. However, his face remained the same. He gently spoke, as he stared at the threatening dragon, "Shadow Escape." He suddenly disappeared with these two words. It was not just his figure, as his presence had vanished as well.

The dragon flew past Houston's previous location and struck a mountain behind him in the end. It produced a violent rumble, which caused the entire mountain to collapse loudly.

“Hmph, do you really think that I can’t find you after you’ve fused with your surroundings? It’s just small tricks. Watch how I break through your domain of darkness,” Kaiser sneered disdainfully. Then, he struck out with a simple punch at the dark sky. The power that coiled around the punch was enough to shake the sky.

Bang! Kaiser’s punch seemed to have landed on a drum. It produced a muffled sound and immediately, the world of darkness began to violently twist. The entire region greatly shook as rays of bright light pierced in from the outside world.

In the blink of an eye, all the darkness disappeared completely from the region. The scorching sun illuminated the world once more. The light of the world had returned.

Houston reappeared now that his secret technique had been broken through. He hovered a thousand meters away with a pale face.

Spurt! Suddenly, Houston vomited a mouthful of blood. His face became even paler, now without any trace of blood.

Kaiser’s strength was just too great. He was one of the most powerful people even among Saint Emperors. His attacks were straightforward, but it possessed the might to destroy the surroundings every time he struck out. No one could withstand his attacks unless they were Saint Emperors. Even Saint Kings at Great Perfection were not enough.

Kaiser did not give Houston any time to catch his breath. He took a step and traversed the distance between them silently and arrived before Houston. He eyed Houston coldly, before he extended his hand in the form of a claw toward Houston's chest. He wanted to dig out Houston's heart as well.

"It's not that simple if you want to kill me!" Houston glared at him, as the darkness-attributed Saint Force on him disappeared in that instant. A dense, blood-red mist erupted from him. It was as thick as sticky blood and enveloped Houston's entire body. He said deeply from within the mist, "This is the Baleful Yin Force I have condensed after taking countless lives throughout my entire life. I originally thought that I would never use it again, but I never thought that I'd still be able to see its might one more time right before I pass away. Kaiser, enjoy."

"T-this is the Baleful Yin Force of the Bloodsword sect. What powerful Baleful Yin Force." Kaiser's expression finally changed when he saw the dense red mist. His hand that reached toward Houston forcefully stopped in mid-air. He was no longer willing to extend his hand any further. He immediately began to retreat rapidly without any hesitation in an attempt to get as far from Houston as possible.

However, it was already too late. All the Baleful Yin Force around Houston condensed into a blood-red spike that shot toward Kaiser as a red streak of light.

Kaiser became extremely stern, as he faced the spike. He had not shown this level of sternness even when he had faced the path lord

of carnal desires.

The Baleful Yin Force was a powerful energy that only existed within the Bloodsword sect. It was condensed from the Qi of slaughter and was tangible yet intangible. It specialized in harming the souls of people. It could not be blocked or parried, and there was no way to break through it. The only way out was to forcefully resist it.

Kaiser was a Saint Emperor, but magical beasts were born with weaker souls than humans. They were nowhere as great as human souls. Meanwhile, Houston had condensed his Baleful Yin Force throughout his life. It was so powerful that it could wipe out the souls of anyone at the same level as him, so even human Saint Emperors would suffer quite a lot before it, let alone magical beasts. Also, when Baleful Yin Force injured a soul, it would become extremely difficult to heal. This injury would greatly affect any cultivation done in the future.

Kaiser backpedaled consecutively as he moved extremely fast. He would travel several kilometers with every step, as he feared the Baleful Yin Force very much. However, he was nowhere as fast as the Baleful Yin Force, which allowed it to catch up very quickly and pierce through the center of his eyebrows.

“Argh!” Kaiser cried out painfully. He no longer behaved as mightily as before. He clutched his head with both his hands in agony. The Baleful Yin Force currently devoured his soul without mercy. It was far worse than the time he received the Palm of Severance from the path lord of carnal desires.

Although the path lord of carnal desires had forced Kaiser into a horrible condition with his attacks in the battle outside the atmosphere. The attack would affect his soul, which triggered the desires and emotions hidden within his heart. On the other hand, the Baleful Yin Force directly harmed his soul.

The frozen space around Jian Chen had shattered long ago as Kaiser fought with Houston, so Jian Chen recovered his mobility. A sharp gleam of light immediately flickered through Jian Chen's eyes when he saw Kaiser's behavior. The saint artifact directly landed in his hand with a thought, and he removed the only strand of emperor's power from inside.

A devastating energy flooded the surrounding space with the power's appearance, which caused it to tremble nonstop.

Jian Chen carefully controlled the emperor's power as it floated above his hand. He arrived before Kaiser in a flash and struck Kaiser's head resolutely.

# Chapter 1011: Rui Jin Arrives

---

Jian Chen carefully controlled the emperor's power as it floated above his hand. He arrived before Kaiser in a flash and struck Kaiser's head resolutely.

A gleam of light flashed through the path lord of carnal desires, who was standing to one side. He stared in interest at the drop of emperor's power in Jian Chen's hand, and his expression changed slightly. He cried out inside, "It's an emperor's power. I never thought Jian Chen would actually possess some emperor's power. It's teeming with water-attributed energy, so it must have come from a Saint Emperor of the sea realm."

"The power is enough to threaten Saint Emperors. The Baleful Yin Force has injured Kaiser's soul. From the looks of his expression, he's in so much pain that he would rather be off dead. He can't bother with what's going around him at all. I wonder if this emperor's power can heavily injure him or not." The light inside the path lord's eyes immediately began to flicker as he thought up to there. A gleam of extremely hidden but sharp light flickered through his eyes from time to time.

Houston had also noticed the emperor's power in Jian Chen's hand. When he saw that Jian Chen was about to push it into Kaiser's head, his eyes immediately lit up. He felt a sliver of anticipation.

Hei Yu who was locked in combat with Lankyros, naturally discovered the emperor's power in Jian Chen's hand. He could not help but sneer when he saw Jian Chen's actions.

Bang! With the emperor's power in hand, Jian Chen finally slapped it forcefully into the back of Kaiser's head. It produced a bang and immediately, a terrifying ripple of residual energy burst out and flung Jian Chen far away.

Jian Chen was thrown backward and only stabilized himself after he flew several thousand kilometers. His right hand that had carried the emperor's power also began to tremble uncontrollably, while his complexion became extremely ugly. There was some disbelief present on his face as well.

When he had stuck Kaiser's head just then, Jian Chen felt like he had struck a tough steel board. Not only did it fail to turn Kaiser's head into pieces as he had expected, it even failed to heavily injure him.

"The emperor's power actually failed to pierce Kaiser's skull. All it has done is blow away his skin. Isn't his head just a little too tough?" Jian Chen thought. He could feel that the emperor's power had caused minimal damage to Kaiser. The toughness of Kaiser's body had far exceeded his expectation.

"I never thought that Kaiser's body would be so terrifying. He sure is worthy of being a species that borderlines dragons. If it were not for the fact that I had some advantage in soul attacks when I had fought him before, I probably would not have been his opponent," thought the path lord of carnal desires. He was also surprised, as he watched from afar.



“Argh! You impudent brat! To actually make a sneak attack on me! I’m ripping you into pieces today no matter what!” Kaiser roared angrily. Although the emperor’s power did not threaten him at all, it reduced him to an even more horrible state. With Kaiser’s level of pride, how could he endure being forced into such a state by a human junior that was both weaker than him in strength and status?

It was basically a great humiliation to him.

Suddenly, Kaiser’s gaze became extremely terrifying. His face twisted viciously and became like a demon that had climbed out from hell. Just a glance at him was enough to make people shiver. Kaiser poured everything he had into suppressing the great pain in his soul, as he glared coldly at Jian Chen. He seemed to be tempted to devour Jian Chen alive.

Suddenly, Kaiser disappeared. When he reappeared, he had already arrived before Jian Chen. One of his hands had completely turned into a dragon claw, as he swung it mercilessly at Jian Chen’s head. At the same time, he froze the space around Jian Chen once more. This limited Jian Chen’s movements and prevented him from using the saint artifact to block the attack.

Jian Chen’s eyes narrowed abruptly. Kaiser’s claw constantly grew larger and closer in his eyes, but he was trapped and immobilized. He could only helplessly watch on, as it rapidly approached.

Suddenly, the space to their side split open in this moment of life and death. A sword that radiated with a blinding golden light and a

terrifying sword Qi suddenly materialized. Then, it shot toward Kaiser's claw with lightning speed.

Clang!

As the sword collided with the dragon claw, the sound of an earth-shaking metallic collision erupted. The sword was knocked away, but it also derailed Kaiser's claw. A tiny wound appeared on the claw and bright-red blood began to flow from it.

This was the blood of a Saint Emperor. Although it was only a tiny amount, it was incredibly eye-catching. Moreover, the terrifying amount of energy hidden inside could be clearly felt.

Kaiser immediately became shocked when Rui Jin injured his claw, because it was the toughest part of his body. Even Saint Emperors would fail to injure his claws.

"It's a weapon that possesses origin energy. The Sacred Dragon's Sword!" Kaiser muttered hoarsely as he stared at the shining sword.

A Space Gate quickly formed. Rui Jin in golden armor stepped out with Hong Lian, who wore a crimson dress.

Rui Jin made a gesture with his hand, and the Sacred Dragon's Sword flew over from afar as a streak of light. Then, it landed obediently in Rui Jin's hand. Rui Jin wielded the sword as he looked expressionlessly at Kaiser. He growled, "I never thought I'd

see you, mutated earthworm, so soon. What, do you really want to go against me?”

Kaiser stared viciously at Rui Jin and gnashed his teeth and said, “You again. It’s actually you again who’s messing with what I’m doing. You may be a king of the Dragon clan, but the Dragon clan no longer exists now. It’s best if you don’t get in my way, or I’ll kill you as well believe it or not.”

“Mutated earthworm, do you really think that you can kill me?” Rui Jin said with a deep voice. His face was extremely dark. The fact that a mere mutated earthworm dared to threaten him—a dragon king—made Rui Jin extremely furious.

Kaiser no longer bothered to talk with Rui Jin. Instead, he turned to the path lord of carnal desires and called out, “Human Saint Emperor, it’s about time.”

A gleam of light flickered through the path lord’s eyes. He said nothing and directly took a step forward. He crossed more than ten kilometers to arrive before Rui Jin.

Rui Jin’s face sank when he saw the path lord. He growled, “Human Saint Emperor, I never thought you’d actually be working that mutated earthworm to harm the genius of your race.”

“You talk too much,” the path lord said indifferently. He grabbed at the empty space; the energy of the world began to condense quickly, which he used to strike Rui Jin. At the same time, he uttered gently, “Since you have a treasure that can protect you

against my attacks of the seven emotions and six desires, I'll abandon them and completely use the abilities of a Saint Emperor to fight you."

# Chapter 1012: Hong Lian Injured

---

The Sacred Dragon's Sword danced with his arms, as he wielded it. It immediately stabbed out toward the path lord of carnal desires with a terrifying presence, and the sword radiated brightly with golden light.

Boom!

The sword collided violently with the surging energy from the path lord of carnal desires in mid-air and immediately produced a deafening sound. Terrifying residual energy swept out, which caused the mountains below to collapse one after the other. The entire Cross Mountains turned into a mess, where a large number of weaker magical beasts died due to the collision between Rui Jin and the path lord's attacks.

Their clash also shattered the frozen space around Jian Chen. As soon as Jian Chen regained his mobility, he had to face the residual energy. The energy knocked him away like a kite with a broken string.

"Let's fight in outer space, or the life on this continent will suffer," the path lord said. With that, he shot into the sky and headed directly for outer space.

Rui Jin turned to Hong Lian and growled, "The human Saint Emperor's attacks of seven emotions and six desires target the soul. They can affect a person's mind unknowingly. You still haven't fully refined that protective bead, so only I can keep him

busy. You stay here and protect Jian Chen.”

Hong Lian nodded sternly. White flames radiated from her body and enveloped her completely.

Immediately, the terrifying heat spread into the surroundings and caused the temperature to skyrocket. It reached a terrifying level very quickly, as if even the air was burning.

Through the white flames, one could vaguely see that Hong Lian had already equipped the feathermail completely made out of plumage. It was a legacy treasure of her Divine Phoenix clan, the Ninerefined Godfire Feathermail. The strengthening of origin energy had increased the defense of the treasure. It could withstand attacks from Saint Emperors and not suffer any damage.

Hong Lian was only a Saint King at Great Perfection—it could be said that someone with this level of strength could not even flee before a Saint Emperor. However, she could contend with Saint Emperors as she possessed the offensive and defensive treasures of her clan.

“Origin energy. It’s actually origin energy again,” said Kaiser with his deep voice, as he stared at the Hong Lian wrapped in white flames in interest. The muscles on his face constantly twitched and twisted, perhaps due to the fact that he had to suppress the pain of his soul with everything he had. He seemed extremely vicious.

Kaiser looked at Hong Lian as the light in his eyes flickered. He

growled, “Little phoenix, I won’t make it hard for you considering that you’re a magical beast as well. It’s best if you don’t interfere with my matters.” With that, Kaiser tried to travel around Hong Lian in the form of a flash, as he attempted to chase Jian Chen.

However, the white flames around Hong Lian suddenly began to churn violently just as Kaiser passed by her. It turned into a huge white phoenix in that instant, which swallowed Kaiser in roaring flames.

“Little phoenix, don’t blame me for not going easy on you since you have no idea what’s good for you. Tyrant Dragon’s Punch!” Kaiser called out angrily from within the white flames.

With a great boom, Kaiser destroyed the phoenix condensed from the white flames with a single punch. The phoenix immediately collapsed and turned into a cloud of fire in the sky. The terrifying temperature caused the space to twist.

Hong Lian floated sternly in the sky. Her crimson hair danced in the wild wind. Suddenly, she opened her arms and cried out, “White Cleansing Flames, return!”

A mysterious force seemed to lead away the white flames after Kaiser scattered them with his punch. The flames gathered toward Hong Lian from all directions.

“Blazing the void, a refinement of flames!” Hong Lian called out. She quickly compressed all the white flames in her surrounding into a fist-sized ball. Then, it exploded loudly and rapidly expanded

in all directions. It formed a ball of flames ten kilometers across in the end.

White flames filled the entire ball. It was like a sea of flames, and it was so hot that it seemed to be able to scorch anything and everything.

Kaiser stood proudly in the sea of flames. A powerful layer of energy had condensed around him to protect himself from the flames. Although the white fire was terrifying, it clearly posed no threat to Kaiser as a Saint Emperor.

Hong Lian also appeared in the sea of flames. The crimson feathermail was eye-catching in the space of white flames.

“Little phoenix, you’re not my opponent. If you’re sensible, then back off quickly,” Kaiser said coldly as he eyed Hong Lian. The origin energy feathermail protected her, so he could not harm her at all. As a result, Kaiser did not want to bother with Hong Lian anymore.

“The refinement of flames may not be able to harm you, but it can exhaust your energy unceasingly,” Hong Lian said calmly. She slowly raised her hand as a flame-red hairpin appeared bit by bit. Immediately, a mysterious and powerful energy began to radiate from it.

“Origin energy again. God dammit, why do you people all have so many items with origin energy.” Kaiser’s expression changed slightly.



Swish! The hairpin in Hong Lian's hand shot toward Kaiser as a flash.

Kaiser bellowed out, and his right hand became a powerful dragon's claw in that moment. He swung it toward the hairpin.

Ding! With a metallic ring, Kaiser's claw actually knocked the hairpin away, while he remained unscathed.

Kaiser's eyes lit up. He thought, "This item with origin energy is far weaker than the Sacred Dragon's Sword of the Dragon clan."

Excitement sprouted within Kaiser. His fear of Hong Lian had already decreased significantly. He charged toward Hong Lian, as his right hand swept toward her in the form of a dragon's claw.

Hong Lian could not dodge the attack at all with her strength as a Saint King at Great Perfection, so the claw struck her feathermail heavily.

The feathermail sustained no damage, but a powerful force traveled through its defense and entered Hong Lian's body.

Spurt! Hong Lian paled, and a mouthful of blood sprayed out. The blow knocked her entire body backward.

"Hahahahaha, I never thought that your legacy treasure would

be far weaker than the two others. I'd like to see how you fight against me now," said Kaiser, as he laughed aloud.

Hong Lian became even sterner. She had just obtained the feathermail, and as time was too tight, she had failed to completely refine the defensive treasure before she hurried over. This prevented her from using the maximum power of the two treasures.

# Chapter 1013: Strength that Surpasses Saint Emperor (One)

---

Hong Lian gritted her teeth when she heard Kaiser's arrogant words. Her eyes became filled with determination. Jian Chen was a stranger to her, but she needed to protect him no matter what. She needed to this in order to see her clansmen that had disappeared. She was even willing to accept an outcome of being heavily injured.

The Scorching Godfire Hairpin that Kaiser had knocked away returned to her hand under her control. Her hands constantly danced about before her; she formed complicated hand seals one after another in a blur. At the same time, she called out, "Flaming Comet!"

The hairpin immediately burst into roaring flames, and it rapidly expanded from its original size of a palm's width. It became ten meters long in the blink of an eye, as the flames roared on its surface.

Whoosh! The huge hairpin transformed into a streak of red light, as it flew toward Kaiser with terrifying ripples of energy. Its speed was unbelievable.

"Little phoenix, you're not my opponent. Do not take other people's kindness for granted," Kaiser called out. Suddenly, his right arm struck out again in the form of a dragon's claw, and he knocked away the hairpin once more. Afterward, he no longer bothered with Hong Lian and went straight for Jian Chen.

Jian Chen had already disappeared from his field of vision and was now very far away from the Cross Mountains. He rapidly drew closer to Mercenary City, yet Kaiser could still precisely sense his location. He thought, "I can't let Jian Chen reach Mercenary City no matter what, or it'll be troublesome."

"Your opponent is me. If you want to deal with Jian Chen, get through me first." Hong Lian said coldly. She controlled the hairpin to attack Kaiser time and time again in order to obstruct him.

Although the hairpin possessed origin energy, Hong Lian had yet to refine it completely. As such, she could not use all of its power. This was why she could not pose too great of a threat to Kaiser and was only able to keep him busy and prevent him from reaching Jian Chen.

Intense fury surged inside Kaiser after Hong Lian blocked him time after time. He called out, "Since you have no idea what would be most beneficial for you, let me wipe out your soul first!" Tremendous energy coiled around Kaiser's claw, and he directly knocked the hairpin away with a single strike. Afterward, he reappeared several thousand meters away in front of Hong Lian with a slight movement and viciously clawed toward her chest.

Screech! As his sharp claws scraped across feathermail, an ear-piercing sound rang out. Although his attack could not destroy the armor, Hong Lian could not resist the attack, as she had not fully refined the feathermail. A great force immediately passed through the feathermail's defense and into Hong Lian.

Spurt! Hong Lian vomited another mouthful of blood and Kaiser dispersed the roaring flames around her.

Killing intent flooded Kaiser's eyes, and he chased up to Hong Lian. He formed a fist with his claws and bellowed, "Tyrant Dragon's Punch!"

Bang!

Kaiser's devastating fist landed on Hong Lian, which immediately caused her to vomit blood yet again. Her face paled, while her feathermail almost fell off her body.

"Tyrant Dragon's Punch! Tyrant Dragon's Punch! Tyrant Dragon's Punch!"

Kaiser pursued Hong Lian, as he rained her with attacks. Eight punches landed on Hong Lian, and the power was so great that even the sky shook.

After Kaiser struck her with a rain of fierce attacks, Hong Lian's became presence extremely weak. Her eyes were now closed, and she was now taking her last gasps of air. She seemed to be almost dead.

However, at this moment, a crimson flame shot out from within Hong Lian and enveloped her body completely as it blazed.

A clear phoenix's cry rang out from within the flames as they constantly churned. The image of a divine phoenix with its head up, as it called at the sky appeared behind. It seemed extraordinary.

“This is the innate ability of the Divine Phoenix clan! Rebirth of Fire!” Kaiser became ugly when he saw this. The reason he was unwilling to deal with Hong Lian before was because of this innate ability present within the members of the Divine Phoenix clan. They could immediately return to their peak condition through a baptism of flames when they died, which made them extremely hard to kill and almost immortal.

The crimson flames dispersed very quickly and revealed the elegant Hong Lian. A tremendous presence radiated from her, and it was much more powerful than before.

All of Hong Lian's injuries had been healed after she underwent rebirth. She had returned to her peak condition, and her strength had even increased.

The innate ability of the Divine Phoenixes could be used a total of nine times. The user would grow stronger after each use and after all nine times, their strength would have increased by several folds. However, the increase was only temporary, so it was impossible to stay like that permanently.

“You can't kill me,” said Hong Lian calmly, as she nonchalantly looked at Kaiser.

A sharp light flickered in Kaiser's eyes. He sneered, "If you were a Class 9 phoenix, even one that has just broken through to Class 9, I would not be your opponent with your innate ability. But it's a pity that you're only Class 8. You're not my opponent even if you undergo the ninth rebirth." With that, Kaiser charged toward Hong Lian. He struck out as hard as he could and heavily injured her once again and made her undergo a second rebirth.

"I'll kill you every time you rebirth," said Kaiser with gnashed teeth. He killed Hong Lian once more with his strength as a Saint Emperor.

Hong Lian's gaze remained extremely calm throughout. Her strength would increase a little with every rebirth. Soon, she had entered the third rebirth.

Suddenly, an uncomfortable thought appeared in Kaiser when he noticed Hong Lian's calm gaze. He thought, "It's said that the rebirth of the Divine Phoenix clan can be used nine times. Will she be dead after those nine times or what..."

"I can't mess with you any longer!" thought Kaiser, as a light flickered through his eyes. He made up his mind. He struck out a few times with full power to heavily injure Hong Lian, who had rebirthed three times. Then, he no longer stayed put. He fused with the surrounding space and turned into a blur as he traveled in the direction that Jian Chen had disappeared off to. He vanished in the blink of an eye.

Hong Lian was still undergoing the process of her fourth rebirth, so she could not obstruct him at all. She could no longer see Kaiser

after she had completed the process.

Hong Lian's expression changed slightly and without any hesitation, she turned into a red streak of light in pursuit.

Houston currently carried Jian Chen. Houston was a Saint King at Great Perfection, so his comprehension of the laws of space was far beyond Jian Chen's. As a result, he moved extremely quickly and covered several tens of thousand kilometers with Jian Chen in that short amount of time. They grew nearer and nearer to Mercenary City.

"Jian Chen, you can't escape," Kaiser roared out angrily from behind. He was catching up with a speed several times faster than Houston.

"Crap!" Houston's expression changed and darkness-attributed Saint Force poured out from his body. His speed immediately skyrocketed, as he traveled with a secret technique.

However, he was still slower than Kaiser. Kaiser caught up very soon, and he directly stabbed his claws at Jian Chen's back.

However, a white streak of light shot over with unbelievable speed at this very moment. It shot past Jian Chen's side and struck Kaiser's claws with great precision.

"Argh!" Immediately, Kaiser shrieked out. His claws that were strong enough to repel the Sacred Dragon's Sword was as weak as



tofu before the streak of white light. It shot through his claws and bore a hole.

“Origin energy. It’s actually origin energy. This is strength that surpasses Saint Emperor.” Kaiser became absolutely terrified.

# Chapter 1014: Strength that Surpasses Saint Emperor (Two)

---

“Origin energy. It’s actually origin energy. This is strength that surpasses Saint Emperor.” Kaiser became absolutely terrified. He felt life-threatening danger for the first time in quite a while from that ordinary-looking streak of white light.

Kaiser no longer bothered with Jian Chen, who was only inches away. He also seemed to forget the intense pain from his arm. He looked in the direction where the white light had shot over with an extremely stern expression. Dread filled his eyes.

Although he was so powerful that he even placed among the strongest within Saint Emperors, Kaiser knew that he was no stronger than a kid before an expert that had surpassed Saint Emperor.

This was because they would be an expert of a completely different realm. The power they used would not be the Saint Force that ordinary people used, but the origin energy that was on a higher level.

“May I ask which expert is attacking me from the shadows? Can you please show yourself?” growled Kaiser. He suppressed the shock within him and looked around cautiously. At the same time, a layer of ink-black scales appeared on his body. It covered every inch of his skin, and even his body began to bulge at a visible rate. He very quickly became a ten-meter-tall monster. He maintained a human head, but his limbs had already turned into sharp claws, while thirteen jagged spikes protruded from his back. Each spike

was around three meters in length and they glistened with cold light.

Kaiser had become half human, half dragon. This was his most powerful state.

Jian Chen and Houston both forgot to flee. They hung in the air in shock as Kaiser's words 'surpasses Saint Emperor' constantly boomed through their heads. Their hearts churned, and they were no longer able to stay calm.

"Bad! You're a bad person! You bullied Xiao Ling's big brother, making him like this. Xiao Ling will definitely teach you a solid lesson for big brother." At this moment, an immature girl's voice suddenly rang out. A white-dressed girl with two pigtails, who seemed like she was eleven or twelve years old, silently appeared beside Jian Chen. She faced Kaiser angrily.

This was the first time Xiao Ling had appeared without hiding herself, so Kaiser and Houston immediately noticed her. However, they both became stunned at the same time when they noticed it was such a young girl, but they returned to their senses very quickly. Deep shock and disbelief immediately flooded their hearts, as they did not sense when she had appeared even with their strength.

"Xiao Ling, it's you. You've actually left Mercenary City." Jian Chen stared at Xiao Ling in surprise. He immediately understood she was that the expert that had surpassed Saint Emperor and had attacked Kaiser earlier.

Xiao Ling's anger immediately subsided substantially when she heard Jian Chen's voice. She turned around and looked at him in concern. "Big brother, Xiao Ling can't just watch you being bullied by this big bad person. If Xiao Ling did nothing, that big bad person would have killed big brother. Master forbid Xiao Ling from leaving the city all those years ago, but to save big brother, Xiao Ling will stop caring for master."

Kaiser heard every single word from Xiao Ling. A gleam of light immediately flashed across his eyes, and he looked toward her in doubt. He cried out, "Are you the barrier spirit of Mercenary City?"

"I never thought that the barrier spirit would leave the protective barrier. Looks like the rumors aren't completely true," Houston also cried out when he saw the child-like Xiao Ling.

In truth, Xiao Ling was a spirit that the earth gave birth to. She was and not some spirit of the barrier. She could just control the power of the barrier in Mercenary City.

Years ago, the city lord Mo Tianyun had tasked her with protecting and suppressing the seal underneath the city, so she had never left there even after so many years. This was why people misjudged her as a spirit that was born from the barrier. They assumed that she was connected to the barrier and could never leave Mercenary City.

Xiao Ling's expression changed when she heard Kaiser's voice.

She glared at Kaiser with her naive eyes and said angrily, “You bad person. You just bullied big brother. Xiao Ling will teach you a good lesson for big brother.” As she spoke, Xiao Ling casually swung her hand and a streak of white light suddenly appeared. It shot toward Kaiser with lightning speed.

This was the origin energy that only those who had surpassed Saint Emperor could control. It did not have any earth-shaking presence or aura when it shot from Xiao Ling’s hands, nor did it have any terrifying ripples of energy. Only a mysterious and profound presence circulated within it.

Origin energy was a completely new power. It surpassed the understandings of the people from the Tian Yuan Continent. They could not sense its power and terror from how it looked like.

Although it was only a careless wave of her hand, the attack from Xiao Ling made Kaiser feel like he could not avoid it no matter what action he took. As such, he forcefully received the attack head-on.

Kaiser’s powerful body became as weak as tofu before the origin energy. The origin energy directly disintegrated his scales upon contact and turned him into a bloody mess.

“Argh!” Kaiser shrieked in agony. The injury from the origin energy was nowhere as simple as it seemed. The pain was so great that even a Saint Emperor like him could not bear with.

“Is this origin energy?” thought Jian Chen as curiosity flooded

his eyes. He had watched the white light strike Kaiser. He could clearly feel a mysterious yet profound presence from it.

“There’s clearly some different between the origin energy from Xiao Ling and the weapons and armor with Rui Jin and the others. I can feel that Xiao Ling’s origin energy is most pure, without any impurities. Meanwhile, the origin energy on Rui Jin and the others’ items also possess a great power that originates from this world,” Jian Chen thought.

“Origin energy. This is origin energy. What pure origin energy.”

At the same time, the path lord of carnal desires, Lankyros, Hei Yu, and Rui Jin also sensed the appearance of the power. They immediately became shocked and stopped fighting. Then, they shot toward Xiao Ling’s location like lightning bolts.

# Chapter 1015: The Seal Loosens

---

Kaiser painfully clutched the wound on him in half human, half dragon form. He could feel the flesh around the area that the origin energy struck disappear at a visible rate, which caused the wound to rapidly enlarge. The agonizing pain tortured his nerves time and time again and caused all his muscles to convulse.

The origin energy seemed simple and possessed no earth-shaking presence, but its power was indescribably terrifying. The energy seemed to be able to eat away everything once struck, able to turn everything to dust.

Jian Chen and Houston stared blankly as the wound rapidly increased in size. Their hearts churned, as they witnessed the power of the origin energy. They had never imagined that a powerful Saint Emperor would be so weak before origin energy.

“Argh!” Suddenly, Kaiser roared out angrily. A tremendous energy surged out unceasingly from his body like a flood. In this moment, Kaiser was using everything he had to stop the residual origin energy within him; he wanted to nullify it.

The disturbance from a Saint Emperor using everything they had would be doubtlessly earth-shaking. Before the supreme power, all the space in a radius of several hundred meters began to twist constantly as black spatial cracks formed everywhere. Moreover, the ground below Kaiser rapidly sank. The powerful energy forcefully pressed it down.

The surroundings were dark. Kaiser's power was enough to cause the world to lose its color, while the energy of the world and World Force in the surrounding hundreds of kilometers was affected as well. It became violent, no longer as peaceful as its normal state.

All the experts of protector clans in their independent spaces scattered across the continent stepped out. They sternly looked in the direction of Kaiser.

The eyes of the person with the greatest seniority of the Zu faction in the Changyang clan—Changyang Zu Xiao—lit up and glowed like torches. He fixedly gazed into the distance and growled, “Only Saint Emperors can cause such a vast disturbance. The Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent have trespassed our continent once again.”

“Saint Emperors are now invincible existences in the world. Even with the two continents in perspective, there are only four Saint Emperors, yet the magical beast Saint Emperor clearly is using his full strength to make such a disturbance. That's weird. Who's so powerful that forced the Saint Emperor into such a state?” said a great elder in thought from beside Changyang Zu Xiao. Shock filled his face.

“The Saint Emperor of the magical beasts must have come to the Tian Yuan Continent for the Winged Tiger God. The Winged Tiger God is with Jian Chen, while Jian Chen has the protection from the two experts with the origin energy items. Have they begun fighting with the Saint Emperor?”

“It doesn't matter what's happening. Since they've begun



fighting on our Tian Yuan Continent, we can't just stand by. Let's go see first," Changyang Qing Yun said with a deep voice. Afterward, he casually waved his hand, and the space before him immediately ripped open. He wanted to construct a Space Gate.

However, the ripped space trembled violently, before it slowly closed up once more. He had failed to create a Space Gate.

Changyang Qing Yun furrowed his brows, "Their fight is too intense. It has broken the balance of space. I actually can't construct a Space Gate."

"Let's designate a Space Gate several tens of thousands of kilometers away from them since we can't set up one right there. We'll fly over afterward," suggested a great elder.

Afterward, the great elders all left through the new Space Gate. They did exactly as one of them suggested and arrived a distance from Jian Chen's location. Then, they flew over.

At the same time, the nine other protector clans, a few ancestors of ancient clans, and some Saint Kings of various other organizations hurried in the direction that the battle had erupted.

Kaiser raised all the energy within him to contend against the origin energy, but he could not stop its havoc. In the end, his wounds only stopped worsening after the origin energy was completely consumed, as it did not have a constant force.

Currently, Kaiser's face was moist with sweat, and he was in a horrible shape. He was no longer as awe-inspiring as before. A half-meter-wide hole stood out like a sore thumb in his ten-meter-tall, dragon-like body. It was chilling.

Four tremendous presences flew over like streaks of lightning from afar. Simultaneously, Hei Yu, Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and the tiger emperor arrived from the same direction. The tiger emperor stood beside Kaiser while Hei Yu, Rui Jin, and Hong Lian immediately stood before Jian Chen. They all stared at the hole in Kaiser's body with shock.

"I felt a pure origin energy before. Kaiser, who made you injured like this?" Lankyros growled.

Still badly shaken, Kaiser stared at Xiao Ling and said, "It's that girl. I never thought that she's actually the barrier spirit of Mercenary City."

"What! She's the barrier spirit of Mercenary City!?" Lankryos cried out uncontrollably in his surprise, and he immediately looked toward Xiao Ling.

Lankyros immediately became intrigued when he discovered that Xiao Ling only seemed to be a young girl. He had only read about the barrier spirit of Mercenary City in some ancient records stored within the Beast God Hall, which previous magical beasts left behind. This was the first time the barrier spirit revealed its true form. He just never thought that the barrier spirit would be a young girl.

“Didn’t the records say that the barrier spirit cannot leave Mercenary City? How has she left Mercenary City right now?” Lankyros cried out with his deep voice. Doubt filled him.

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian all stared unblinkingly at Xiao Ling. They all felt shocked when they thought about the purity of the origin energy that had come from the small girl. They all knew that only those beyond Saint Emperor could control this power. The young girl before them had actually surpassed Saint Emperor.

Xiao Ling paid no attention to everyone’s shocked gazes. She stared angrily at Lankyros and Kaiser. “You both bullied big brother. You’re all bad. Xiao Ling must teach you a difficult lesson for big brother.” Xiao Ling swung her hand once more with that and shot two strands of origin energy toward them.

The expressions of the two Saint Emperors changed drastically when they faced this seemingly ordinary origin energy. However, a feeling of being unable to dodge appeared in both their heads, as if the origin energy had locked tightly onto their presences. It was to the point where they would be struck no matter where they ran off to.

“Since I can’t dodge it, I’ll face it head-on!” Similar thoughts flashed through their heads. They gritted their teeth and roared out at the same time. Terrifying ripples of energy began to surge from their bodies. Then, they struck the incoming origin energy as hard as they could.

However, origin energy was not something that Saint Emperors could block. It passed through their attacks like a hot knife through butter, before it directly shot through their bodies.

“Argh!” Both the tiger king and Kaiser immediately shrieked out miserably. The origin energy caused wounds that began to expand rapidly at a visible rate as their flesh and blood disappeared bit by bit.

Suddenly, Xiao Ling at a distant region of space said angrily, “Hmph, do you really think that Xiao Ling can’t see you just because you’re hiding? You’re even worse than the two of them to actually work with them and harm big brother together. Xiao Ling must teach you a hard lesson this time. It won’t be as easy as the times before.” With that, another strand of origin energy shot out from Xiao Ling’s hand, as it struck the empty space with lightning speed.

“Argh!” Immediately, another miserable cry rang out. Suddenly, the path lord of carnal desires appeared, with a fist-sized hole on his chest. The origin energy had punched a hole through him and the wound constantly expanded.

“As long as your souls are uninjured, you won’t die. Hmph, Xiao Ling will capture you all for big brother to deal with after Xiao Ling has taught you all a lesson. Big brother will be very happy,” said Xiao Ling, before she sent three more strands of origin force toward the three Saint Emperors. It added another hole to their bodies.

“Let’s go!” Lankyros roared angrily at Kaiser. A mist of blood

sprayed out from his body and when it dispersed, he had disappeared.

With the tiger king gone, Kaiser and the path lord of carnal desires also used fleeing techniques. They instantly disappeared after they paid quite a heavy price.

Xiao Ling stood with her hands on her hips, as she said unhappily, “With me here, it doesn’t matter where you run off to. Watch as Xiao Ling captures you three bad people.” Just as Xiao Ling wanted to do something, Mercenary City violently trembled. The entire city that was several kilometers away shook violently, as if it was amidst some great earthquake. Huge cracks formed on the ground of the city.

Xiao Ling’s naive, pure face changed abruptly. She cried out involuntarily, “Oh no, that’s bad. A very, very scary expert is attacking the seal.” Xiao Ling no longer bothered with the fleeing trio and disappeared before she had even finished speaking. She had reappeared in the depths below Mercenary City.

Hidden below Mercenary City was a huge seal. There were extremely few people who knew of its existence. For most of history, there was only Xiao Ling, other than Mo Tianyun who had cast down the seal all those years ago.

Mo Tianyun had sealed the entry to the World of Forsaken Saints there. The single seal had prevented experts of that world from reaching the Tian Yuan Continent, which created so many years of peace of the continent.

# Chapter 1016: A Shocking Expert

---

An extremely special seal locked up the pathway between the World of Forsaken Saints and the Tian Yuan Continent. Streaks of arm-thick white lights formed the seal. The lights criss-crossed together and sat quietly in the ground like a spiderweb. It gave off an extremely profound presence.

The seal was actually completely composed of origin energy.

A huge, pitch-black pit existed beneath the seal. It was several thousands of meters across and completely black inside. Nothing could be seen. It was like the gates of hell and gave people a spooky, hair-raising feeling.

At this moment, the space within the pit began to violently distort. A strand of extremely powerful sword Qi broke through the layers of darkness and appeared. It struck the seal with lightning speed.

Boom! The seal immediately violently shook after the huge sword Qi struck it. Powerful ripples of residual energy shook up the underground, and even affected Mercenary City above. The entire city wildly quaked and shocked countless people inside it.

The sword Qi teemed with pure origin energy. It did not disperse immediately after it collided with the seal. Instead, it charged onward at the web-like seal like an enraged bull. It caused the seal to stretch into a cone shape.

“Sob, the layer of the seal master set down all those years ago has broken now. Only this layer remains. Sob... it’s all Xiao Ling’s fault. It’s all because Xiao Ling didn’t listen to master’s orders and left Mercenary City. Otherwise, the layer wouldn’t have been broken.” Xiao Ling sobbed, as she appeared before the stretched seal. She was like a child who had done something wrong right now. Worry, fear, and deep regret filled her.

“The seal over there has been broken. This seal can’t break no matter what, or the city master built after so much effort will be gone. If the city is gone, master will definitely be angry,” Xiao Ling mumbled to herself, as she choked back her tears. She gently pressed against the remaining seal.

In that moment, the vast energy gathered below Mercenary City began to surge quickly and flowed unceasingly toward the seal like the violent tide. In the end, the seal consumed it all.

The seal immediately began to glow with a bright light after it absorbed the vast energy, which allowed it to constantly strengthen.

“Break!”

At the same time, a wispy voice rang out from the dark pit below the seal. It was impossible to tell whether it was male or female. The voice seemed to be filled with charm, as it resounded from beneath the ground.

The sword Qi stuck to the seal immediately exploded with a

dazzling light. Strands of sword Qi powerful enough to shake the world erupted from within and attacked the seal even more violently than before. It resisted the reinforced seal and actually became stuck in a stalemate.

“Oof, what a powerful person!” Xiao Ling could not help but call out. A sliver of worry flooded her face and strands of pure origin energy began to surge out from her body. It poured into seal unceasingly to repel the terrifying sword Qi.

The seal finally broke the stalemate and suppressed the sword Qi with Xiao Ling’s support of origin energy. It slowly receded to its previous location.

“Seal Breaker!”

The wispy voice rang out in the pitch-black hole once more and a 1.2 meter long sword Qi shot through the darkness with an earth-shaking presence. It struck the web-like seal with lightning speed.

The collision of the sword and the seal did not produce a great sound as expected. It gave people a the illusion that it was weaker than it seemed, as if the earth-shaking sword was only a hollow cover.

However, the dazzling white light of the seal quickly began to darken in the next moment. The final obstacle that blocked the World of Forsaken Saints showed some signs of breaking.



“My god, oh no. What is this weird power? It actually possesses a great destructive effect on master’s seal,” Xiao Ling cried out. She immediately became nervous, as she poured even more surging origin energy into the seal, which made it strengthen rapidly.

At the same time, the energy gathered underneath Mercenary City began to surge toward the seal at an even faster rate. Xiao Ling had only gathered all this energy after so many years and normally used it to support the seal. Xiao Ling could no longer bother with the consumption of the energy with the current danger.

The signs of breaking finally stabilized under Xiao Ling’s full support. It began to recover as fast as it could while it resisted the mysterious experts from the pit.

The sword Qi and sword pushed at the seal for a while more. In the end, the sword Qi completely dispersed as it ran out of energy, while the sword also turned around and disappeared back into the dark pit with a clear resonance.

Xiao Ling immediately produced a sigh of relief when she saw that the expert of the World of Forsaken Saints had finally given up on breaking through the seal. Signs of exhaustion appeared on her face; it had only been less than twenty minutes, yet it was like a death battle with an expert of the same level for three days and three nights to Xiao Ling.

Xiao Ling patted her chest and looked into the pit with some lingering fear. She mumbled, “So scary, so strong. The two attacks must have come from the same person. If I hadn’t made it in time, master’s seal definitely would not have been able to resist a single

attack from that person.”

Suddenly, the space in the pit twisted. One could vaguely see a figure inside the darkness. The blurry person possessed a presence that allowed them to look down on everything.

Xiao Ling possessed great strength, but her mind was no older than a child’s after all. She immediately clutched her mouth when she saw that and involuntarily took a few steps back. She became rather timid.

“This seal can’t stop me. The day I complete my Seal Breaker will be the day where this seal will disappear and that day isn’t far away.” A wispy voice rang out from the darkness. Although it was extremely cold and emotionless, it was filled with confidence.

The figure slowly vanished with that. The ground below Mercenary City became peaceful once again.

Xiao Ling stared at the patch of darkness blankly, as if it was the gates of hell. A while later, she began to cry painfully, “Sob... master, where are you? Come back quick, Xiao Ling is so scared...”

.....

A majestic, snow-white divine hall stood silently in the snowy land of the arctic. A person completely clad in silver-white armor currently sat in the center of a room filled with cold air. The only part of her visible were her closed eyes.

At this moment, her eyes slowly opened. A cold voice filled with surprise echoed through the quiet room.

“What a shocking genius. Not only has he reached such a high level of cultivation in eight hundred years, but he has even created that special battle skill made for breaking seals. It looks like you’ll be breaking through that seal soon...”

“I’ve observed you for eight hundred years. I wonder how great your future achievements will be. I really do look forward to it...”

“Sigh, what a group of pitiful people...”

Jian Chen, Houston, Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian remained frozen on the spot. They struggled to calm down their surging emotions.

Xiao Ling had easily forced three great Saint Emperors to flee. They felt extremely shocked from seeing someone who had surpassed Saint Emperor for the first time.

“I had never thought that there would still be those who have surpassed Saint Emperor in the present world that lacks origin energy,” Rui Jin sighed deeply a long while later. Although he had learned of the barrier spirit’s existence when he went to Mercenary City the first time with Jian Chen and Hei Yu, the two of them had always believed that the barrier spirit was only a Saint Emperor at most. They had never thought that the barrier spirit was something that had surpassed Saint Emperor.

The two of them knew that those who had surpassed Saint Emperor were invincible. Even in the ancient times, only four experts like this had appeared.

Houston floated pale-faced next to Jian Chen for a very long time without saying anything. Xiao Ling's voice that referred to Jian Chen as big brother constantly rang through his head. His heart had begun to churn long ago. He had never thought that Jian Chen was so close to the barrier spirit of Mercenary City, an existence that had surpassed Saint Emperor.

Jian Chen calmed down soon. He looked in the direction of Mercenary City and said, "Since Xiao Ling wanted to capture the path lord, the tiger king, and Kaiser, but she left with such urgency, has something great happened in Mercenary City?"

Rui Jin thought for a while with that before he said, "Why don't we go to Mercenary City and check it out? Though after the disturbance from that earthworm, the violent energy has flooded everywhere. The space still has not stabilized yet, so we can't construct a Space Gate. Let's fly over."

With that, Rui Jin carried Jian Chen as he flew, Rui Jin made his way to Mercenary City with Hong Lian, Hei Yu, Houston, and the others.

The experts of the ten protector clans and various other Saint Kings from across the continent arrived where the three Saint Emperors had fought Xiao Ling soon after they had left. All they

discovered was the mess of a place that the region had become.

“I can feel a mysteries energy here, very similar to the origin energy on the weapons of the two magical beast experts,” said Changyang Qing Yun.

“That doesn’t seem right. I can feel that the residual origin energy here is much purer than the origin energy in the weapons of the two magical beasts,” said the pavilion master of the Pure Heart Pavilion, Wu Chenzi. However, a gleam of light flickered through her eyes. Then, she looked toward Mercenary City and said, “They’ve already flown off to Mercenary City, though we can follow along and see.”

The Saint Kings from the protector clans and various other organizations continued toward Mercenary City.

Mercenary City had already been thrown into a mess. The violent shaking earlier had alarmed everyone there and people currently filled the streets. All of them pointed at the densely-packed cracks on the ground as noisy discussions flooded their ears.

All the people that had come to Mercenary City knew about the protective power over the city. The ground was countless times harder than steel, where even Saint Rulers could not leave a mark if they struck out as hard as they could. They could not believe that such thick cracks now covered the ground.

A group of people of various ages currently floated sternly in the air in the center of the city, as they surveilled the entire city with

Tian Jian at their lead. Each and every one of them possessed extremely ugly expressions.

# Chapter 1017: Deep Underground

---

The ones who floated above Mercenary City were members of the upper echelon of Mercenary City. They were all elders, and even the weakest of them was a Saint Ruler.

“Grand elder, just what has happened...”

“Our city has the protective power of the barrier, and it’s extremely tough. How has it ended up like this now...”

“Has the barrier of our city disappeared...”

...

All the elders fell into a discussion, as they stared at the city riddled with huge cracks. They felt extremely suspicious and curious about the incident that Mercenary City had suffered as well as some panic and confusion at the same time.

The grand elder sternly stared at the huge cracks that covered all the streets and alleys. He too felt confused, unsure what exactly that had happened to Mercenary City and why it was like this now.

Suddenly, Tian Jian seemed to think of something. A gleam of light flashed through his eyes, and he thought, “Has something happened to the barrier spirit?” His face immediately darkened slightly when he thought of that possibility. Mo Tianyun left the barrier spirit behind here all those years ago. Its existence was

extremely important to Mercenary City, as it was the unnamed protector god of Mercenary City. If something really happened to the barrier spirit, it would definitely be an extremely heavy hit to Mercenary City.

“It’s a pity that I can’t communicate with the barrier spirit on my own initiative. I wonder what has happened to Mercenary City. If only Jian Chen was here. Though a great battle has just erupted in the direction of the Cross Mountains. There were magical beast Saint Emperors who took part in it, so by the looks of things, the two magical beast experts by Jian Chen’s side probably fought the Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent once again. Jian Chen should also be nearby if that’s really the case,” thought Tian Jian. He had sensed the battle in the Cross Mountains earlier and wanted to go have a look. However, Mercenary City suddenly began to shake violently, so he had to stay behind.

At this moment, several tremendous presences appeared outside and rapidly approached the city with lightning speed.

Tian Jian’s gaze froze, and he quickly looked toward the direction of the presences. He could not help but smile. “Jian Chen really has come at the right time. I just happened to need him to communicate with the barrier spirit and see what just has happened to Mercenary City.”

Jian Chen, Houston, Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian flew over from afar side-by-side. All of their gazes became mixed when they saw the huge barrier above the city. A sliver of respect appeared in Houston, Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu’s eyes. It was the respect for the strong.



They all knew that barrier spirit was the little girl who had surpassed Saint Emperor.

Jian Chen never went into detail about Xiao Ling's true identity. To him, it did not matter whether Xiao Ling was a spirit of the earth or a barrier spirit. It was no longer important.

“Looks like something big really has happened here now that all the people of Mercenary City are in a panic.” Jian Chen noticed the difference in Mercenary City from afar and his brows immediately furrowed in worry.

Very soon, Jian Chen's group met up with the elders of Mercenary City. After a few greetings, they directly proceeded to the main topic.

“Senior Tian Jian, may I ask just what has happened with Mercenary City? Why has it become like this?” Jian Chen asked, as he looked at the messy Mercenary City.

“We don't know either. You can only ask the barrier spirit if you want to learn just what has happened today. Jian Chen, you have a close relationship with the barrier spirit. I hope you can communicate with the barrier spirit and ask what caused the incident with Mercenary City,” Tian Jian asked sternly.

“I'll try,” replied Jian Chen. A sliver of uneasiness appeared in his heart for some reason, because he thought about some secretive matters Mo Tianyun had told him before.

Afterward, Jian Chen softly called Xiao Ling's name a few times. However, he did not get any response this time.

Jian Chen felt even grimmer. Currently, he felt more and more certain his thoughts. He had already connected the unforeseen event of Mercenary City and Xiao Ling's loss of composure earlier to the seal beneath Mercenary City. Some problem must have happened to it.

"Senior Tian Jian, I am unable to help you this time," Jian Chen said rather dejectedly. He furrowed his brows from worry. He felt deeply anxious about Xiao Ling's safety.

"Sigh," Tian Jian exhaled deeply. He raised his head to look at the huge barrier that was still present, and he too furrowed his brows tightly. Since Mo Tianyun founded Mercenary City, it had gone through the wind and the rain, but something like this had never happened before.

The light in Jian Chen's eyes flickered for a while. He was hesitating over whether he should tell Tian Jian and the others about the seal, so that they could mentally prepare themselves.

At this moment, an invisible force suddenly surrounded Jian Chen. Before Jian Chen could even react, it bound him tightly. Then, it pulled him downward with lightning speed.

"Jian Chen!" Rui Jin cried out. He immediately turned into a blur in an attempt to grab Jian Chen.

However, Jian Chen just fell too quickly. Even with Rui jin's strength, he could not grab him. In that instant, an invisible force pulled Jian Chen to the ground. Then, he directly disappeared into the ground as everyone watched on in shock. It left behind no mark on the floor.

The expressions of Rui Jin, Hei Yu, Hong Lian, and Houston all changed when they saw that. They glanced at each other before they all descended as if they had a tacit understanding of each other. They wanted to blast open the ground to save Jian Chen.

"Please wait!" Tian Jian obstructed them and said, "There's no need to worry, everyone. Mercenary City is protected by the barrier spirit, so outsiders cannot harm Jian Chen in here at all. Since Jian Chen is close with the barrier spirit, I assume that it's extremely likely that it was the barrier spirit itself that pulled Jian Chen into the ground."

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, Hong Lian, and Houston immediately calmed down after they heard this. They returned to the skies, as they quietly waited for Jian Chen.

The mysterious force caused Jian Chen to rapidly sink and the soil parted as he moved downward. As such, he did not become stained with any silt or mud at all.

Jian Chen had already experienced this before. He knew that Xiao Ling was behind this, so he was extremely calm. He let the force surround his body and did not show any resistance.

Very soon, Jian Chen arrived in the depths underground. It was completely dark, to the point that he could not even see before him. Even with Jian Chen's eyesight, he could see nothing.

Jian Chen subconsciously expanded his presence, but he could only expand it less than a thousand meters even with its current power. A mysterious power suppressed his presence.

However, through the senses of his presence, Jian Chen could tell that he was in a huge space underground.

"The energy here has become much thinner than the last time I came here," Jian Chen thought in surprise. He could still remember clearly that when Xiao Ling had taken him here for the first time, the energy was so thick that it had almost become liquid. Only a few years had passed since then, yet the energy had already become this thin. It was being consumed at a shocking rate.

At this moment, a ball of white light suddenly appeared in the pitch-black world. It illuminated everything.

"Xiao Ling!" Jian Chen immediately cried out when he saw the ball of light.

The ball of light was from Xiao Ling. Her body seemed extremely illusionary, as if she was a figure constructed from light.

Xiao Ling was no longer as energetic as before. Two clear streaks of tears ran down her cute, innocent face as fear clouded it completely. Something seemed to be frightening her.

Jian Chen felt pained when he saw Xiao Ling like that. He asked in concern, “Xiao Ling, what has happened to you? What has happened?”

“Wah...” Suddenly, Xiao Ling began to cry. She threw herself at Jian Chen’s chest, as she cried loudly, hugging Jian Chen tightly.

“Don’t cry Xiao Ling, come on. Tell big brother what has happened.” Jian Chen hugged Xiao Ling back, as he comforted her. Although Xiao Ling’s body was formed from energy, the energy had basically corporealized. As such, there were almost no differences to hugging a person with flesh and blood, except for the fact that Xiao Ling did not give off any heat.

“Big brother... big brother... Xiao Ling is so scared... Xiao Ling is so scared. Master, master where are you? Come back quickly, Xiao Ling really is so scared,” Xiao Ling sobbed in Jian Chen’s bosom. She was quite frightened.

Jian Chen felt sympathetic, as he looked at Xiao Ling’s weeping expression. He comforted softly, “Don’t be scared, Xiao Ling. Isn’t big brother here? Don’t worry, big brother will protect you.”

Jian Chen comforted Xiao Ling for a very long time before she finally calmed down. Afterward, he asked, “Xiao Ling, tell me honestly. Has something happened to the seal?”

Xiao Ling dried her tears and nodded her head firmly. She said, “Yeah, big brother, something ran out from the se-” Xiao Ling suddenly stopped and immediately covered her mouth with her hand. She said with a muffled voice, “No, Xiao Ling can’t say it. Master said that Xiao Ling can’t say it to anyone.”

Jian Chen smiled and said, “Xiao Ling, big brother saw your master a few years ago. Your master told big brother about everything here. There’s a seal deep beneath Mercenary City, which seals up the entrance to the World of Forsaken Saints. Is big brother right?”

Xiao Ling unblinkingly stared at Jian Chen with her bright and innocent eyes, before nodding firmly twice. She had basically affirmed Jian Chen’s words.

“Xiao Ling, even your master has told everything to big brother. You shouldn’t hide it from big brother any longer. Be good, tell big brother what has happened here, okay?” Jian Chen said.

“Okay. But big brother isn’t allowed to tell anyone else. Master didn’t let me to tell anyone all those years ago,” Xiao Ling said seriously.

Jian Chen nodded silently.

Afterward, Xiao Ling described everything that had happened to Jian Chen. She hid nothing. Jian Chen immediately revealed an extremely ugly expression when he learned that a peerless expert

of the World of Forsaken Saints had been attacking the seal.

“Xiao Ling, just how powerful is that expert from the World of Forsaken Saints who attacked the seal? Can you defeat him?” Jian Chen asked nervously. At this moment, he was so uneasy that his heart was beating heavily.

Xiao Ling shook her head without any hesitation and said, “Big brother, that person is very strong. Master previously set down two seals all those years ago, one on the other side and one here. That person used a single attack to break through master’s seal on the other side, and the seal here probably would’ve been broken as well if Xiao Ling didn’t use everything she had to support it. Not only did Xiao Ling use up all the energy that she had accumulated over many years to keep up the seal, but she even consumed a lot of her power. Xiao Ling definitely wouldn’t be able to bear with it if that person comes and attacks a few more times.”

# Chapter 1018: The Three Levels of the Origin Realm

---

Xiao Ling's words shocked Jian Chen. Xiao Ling herself was a supreme expert who had surpassed Saint Emperor. She had to use her own strength, the seal Mo Tianyun left behind all those years ago, as well as the vast quantities of energy accumulated over countless years beneath Mercenary City to block the attack of the expert from the World of Forsaken Saints. So, just how terrifyingly powerful was this person's strength?

Jian Chen immediately became filled with anxiety after learning what had happened to Mercenary City. He was almost certain that the person who had attacked the seal had surpassed Saint Emperor, which made Jian Chen feel extremely grim.

The World of Forsaken Saints had already given birth to people who had surpassed Saint Emperor and there must have been quite a few of them. There would also be quite a lot of Saint Emperors.

On the other hand, within this world, the war god of the Hundred Races, Aergyns, had already died in battle out of the four supreme champions. The strongest human, Mo Tianyun, had already disappeared with the Winged Tiger God, with only the sea goddess still alive. However, only her soul remained, so her strength was nowhere near her prime.

Even with the three other great races in perspective, there were only a few Saint Emperors. How could they possibly repel the invasion of the terrifying World of Forsaken Saints with just this much?



“Xiao Ling, if you were to face up against the person who attacked the seal, would you be able to beat him?” Jian Chen stared fixedly at Xiao Ling. There was only Xiao Ling in the current world who possessed strength beyond Saint Emperor.

Xiao Ling shook her head without any hesitation and said, “Big brother, Xiao Ling definitely can’t defeat that person. Xiao Ling assumes that person is at least at late Returnance, or even at Reciprocity.”

“Returnance? Reciprocity?” Jian Chen stared blankly when he heard these two unfamiliar words for the first time. He asked seriously, “Xiao Ling, are the Returnance and Reciprocity you speak of realms beyond Saint Emperor?”

“Yeah. These are all things that master once told me. Master said that the Saint Rulers, Saint Kings, and Saint Emperors on the Tian Yuan Continent are all part of Sainthood, while the realm beyond that is the Origin realm. However, the Origin realm is split into three smaller realms, which are Receival, Returnance, and Reciprocity. Each smaller realm has another three levels,” said Xiao Ling.

“So above Saint Emperors is the Origin realm.” Jian Chen came to an understanding. Afterward, his face twitched, and he asked Xiao Ling, “Xiao Ling, what level of cultivation are you up to right now?”

“Big brother, Xiao Ling is only at early Returnance right now.

Xiao Ling can't defeat that person," Xiao Ling said pitifully. She seemed like she had been wronged.

Jian Chen was silent. With Xiao Ling's explanations, he had gained an even clearer understanding toward the strength of the World of Forsaken Saints. Those who had surpassed Saint Emperor should be at Receival, while those who had even surpassed that should be at Returnance. Meanwhile, the person who attacked the seal was extremely likely to be at Reciprocity, which shocked him deeply.

In the ancient times when Mo Tianyun had entered the World of Forsaken Saints all by himself, he killed over twenty people that had surpassed Saint Emperor, at Receival, and another three beyond that, at Returnance. According to his estimations, it was extremely likely that Mo Tianyun was at Returnance or Reciprocity. Yet now, Jian Chen felt extremely pressured as the World of Forsaken Saints had given birth to an expert as great as Mo Tianyun.

After he bid Xiao Ling farewell, Jian Chen heavy-heartedly returned to the surface. Tian Jian, Rui Jin, and the others remained floating high up in the sky. The various Saint Kings from the protector clans and other organizations had gathered as well. Kaiser's presence had alarmed all of them and drawn them over.

The group of elders behind Tian Jian had decreased substantially. Many of the elders at Saint Ruler had all been sent off to stabilize the situation of the city, as well as create a reason for the phenomenon.

“Look, Jian Chen’s back!”

They immediately discovered Jian Chen as soon as he appeared on the surface, and they all descended to his side.

“Jian Chen, are you fine?” Rui Jin was the first one to speak. He was filled with concern. Although he had only met Jian Chen a while ago, Jian Chen was directly related to his chances of meeting his clansmen again. As a result, it could be said that Rui Jin and Hong Lian cared for Jian Chen’s life the most after Tian Jian and Houston.

“Jian Chen, what did the barrier spirit say to you? Did you understand why the phenomenon earlier had occurred?” Tian Jian asked impatiently.

All the people from the ten protector clans were slightly startled by Tian Jian’s questions. Their gazes toward Jian Chen immediately began to flicker with light. If Changyang Xiangtian of the Changyang clan had some connection to the barrier spirit of Mercenary City, it would be an extremely bad piece of news to them.

After some thought, the great elders of the protector Changyang clan all began to smile slightly at the same time. Their gazes toward Jian Chen carried some pride.

Jian Chen did not immediately answer Tian Jian. He hesitated with a sunken expression; he pondered whether he should tell them all about the matter or not.

A while later, Jian Chen finally made up his mind. He said, “Senior Tian Jian, the matter is important, so can we find a place where we can talk alone?”

Tian Jian also understood the severity of the matter when he saw Jian Chen’s sternness. He did not dare to hesitate at all and immediately brought Jian Chen into an independent space within Mercenary City.

Afterward, Jian Chen told Tian Jian everything about the World of Forsaken Saints and Xiao Ling’s situation over there, including when he met a fragment of Mo Tianyun’s soul. He only hid the matter concerning the Yinyang Saint Rock.

When Tian Jian learned about the World of Forsaken Saints from Jian Chen, he became stunned. He did not return to his senses even after a very long time. The existence of such a world shocked Tian Yuan, where he struggled to stay calm even with his mental fortitude. He was speechless.

Only after an extremely long time did Tian Jian finally return to his senses. He sucked in a deep breath and slowly suppressed his shock. He stared at Jian Chen with interest and asked him with a slightly trembling voice, “Jian Chen, is that all true? Is there really a tunnel to the World of Forsaken Saints hidden beneath Mercenary City? The sudden trembling of Mercenary City was also because an expert from that world who has surpassed Saint Emperor was attacking the seal?”

“I’m absolutely certain,” Jian Chen replied sternly. He had really wanted to continue to hide the matter of the World of Forsaken Saints. This was to prevent panic on the Tian Yuan Continent after the new broke out. However, he could no longer afford to choose this course of action now that the matter had developed to such a state.

Tian Jian’s complexion changed very quickly and it became extremely ugly. He said hoarsely, “We need to tell the ten protector clans about this immediately so that we can come up with a plan of counterattack. Jian Chen, come with me as well.” Tian Jian left hurriedly with Jian Chen.

Tian Jian immediately found the people of the protector clans and members of the other organizations after he left the independent space. Then, he sternly invited them to a meeting in Mercenary City. He even invited Rui Jin, Hong Lian, Hei Yu, and Houston.

Houston and Hong Lian did not follow along due to their injuries. Instead, the elders of Mercenary City gave them a place to recuperate. Only Rui Jin and Hei Yu followed along.

Several elders of Mercenary at Saint King gathered with several dozen experts from the protector clans and other organizations in a majestic hall.

Throughout the entire process, Tian Jian maintained an extremely sunken expression. No one understood the reason for this other than Jian Chen. They had no idea what had happened that would make the grand elder of Mercenary City behave like

this.

Tian Jian cut right to the chase and told everyone present about the news regarding the World of Forsaken Saints that he had learned from Jian Chen. He went into particularly great detail about their strength.

All of them became dumbstruck after learning about the World of Forsaken Saints. Disbelief flooded their faces. The news from Tian Jian was doubtlessly like a bolt from the blue; it stunned them all.

“Grand elder, what did you say? There’s a seal beneath Mercenary City that seals the entrance to another world?”

“Grand elder, is that true? Does the World of Forsaken Saints really exist? Are they really that powerful?”

“Grand elder, that’s a little too exaggerated. Let’s not talk about whether that world exists or not first. Just over twenty experts who had surpassed Saint Emperor and three people even beyond that is shocking enough, yet all of them actually died to Mo Tianyun. We find that extremely difficult to believe.”

“Grand elder, may I ask where you obtained this information...”

...

An uproar broke out after a lull of silence. All the people present,

regardless of being from the protector clans or other organizations, spoke their doubts. What Tian Jian had said was just a little too out of hand, to the point where no one present believed it.

“Everyone be quiet please!” Tian Jian raised his hand to stop all their discussions. Afterward, he pointed to Jian Chen and said, “I heard all this information regarding the World of Forsaken Saints from my friend here, Jian Chen. Jian Chen’s understanding is much greater than mine. If everyone has any further doubts, you are welcome to ask Jian Chen.”

“What? You heard this information from Jian Chen? Hahahaha! Grand elder, aren’t you a little too naive? You’d even believe such an outrageous thing,” said a ruddy old man, as he laughed aloud. He did not believe the information at all.

Jian Chen glanced at the old man. He recognized him. It was a great elder of the Yiyuan sect.

“Yeah, grand elder. How can you just believe something so outrageous? It must be fake, no doubt. Otherwise, why would there be no record of something so great within the protector clans at all?” Another great elder of a protector clan added.

The pavilion master of the Pure Heart Pavilion clasped her hands at Jian Chen and said, “My friend here shouldn’t be someone who likes to tell lies, but the matter regarding the World of Forsaken Saints is just too outrageous. May I ask if you have any evidence for the other world’s existence? Or maybe you could lead us to the seal underneath Mercenary City? We wish to hear the truth regarding this.”

The protector clans were all founded in the ancient times and had survived since then. They were even older than Mo Tianyun, so all of the people from the protector clans felt extremely confident. Any major matter that had occurred in this world would possess records in their archives, while the World of Forsaken Saints—a huge matter itself—was not present at all. This was why they did not believe in its existence.

Also, such important news came from Jian Chen, who was a junior, which made it even harder for them to believe.



## Chapter 1019: Jian Chen's Desire

---

“Right. Brother Jian Chen, why don't you take us to below Mercenary City? That way, you can show us the seal, and we can confirm whether this is real or not. Otherwise, it really is hard for us to believe your words,” said a striking middle-aged man. He did not belong to the protector clans and was actually an ancestor of an ancient clan. He was extremely powerful and his name was well known, even among the protector clans.

Jian Chen stood calmly beside Tian Jian. Their doubts did not surprise him at all, as it was all in his expectations.

Indeed, this news was just too shocking. No news regarding the World of Forsaken Saints had ever appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent either, so anyone who suddenly heard about it would find it hard to believe as well.

If the person who had told Jian Chen the news was not Mo Tianyun, but a child far younger than him, Jian Chen would not have believed it either. He would just treat it all as a joke.

Jian Chen calmly glanced passed everyone. He did not see any seriousness among them even after they learned about the World of Forsaken Saints. Instead, they were all apathetic. Some of them even smiled sarcastically. None of them cared about the matter.

Jian Chen could not help but sigh gently inside. He shook his head, “Apologies, but I cannot take you underground to inspect the seal. Anyway, I have told you all everything I know about the

World of Forsaken Saints. Whether you believe it or not will be up to you.”

The region below Mercenary City was Xiao Ling’s territory. Without Xiao Ling’s permission, even Saint Emperors would not be able to enter there. Jian Chen knew without even thinking that it would be impossible to get Xiao Ling to take them all down to the seal.

“Hmph. The matters regarding the World of Forsaken Saints really are a bunch of lies. Jian Chen, weaving such an outrageous story to trick us, just what are you trying to do?” said a great elder of the Yiyuan sect with a rather aggressive tone.

Jian Chen had some disagreements with the Yiyuan sect, so he naturally did not respond politely. He stared coldly at the great elder and said, “You will naturally know in the future if the matters regarding the World of Forsaken Saints are a bunch of lies from me or not.”

The meeting broke up very quickly. All the people from the protector clans returned to their respective clans. The battle with the magical beast Saint Emperor had initially drawn them over, but no one was in the mood to pay attention to it after what had happened to Mercenary City. In the end, Jian Chen’s make-believe story regarding the World of Forsaken Saints had affected them in particular, disturbing their thoughts.

Although none of them believed the foreign world’s existence, they firmly memorized its name. The fact that the foreign world once had over twenty experts that had exceeded Saint Emperor had

shocked them in particular.

None of them believed Jian Chen's words, but over twenty people that had surpassed Saint Emperor was a huge deterrence force by itself.

Jian Chen settled down in a room Tian Jian organized to recuperate, while Tian Jian and the various Saint Kings of Mercenary City all gathered in the floating divine hall.

“Grand elder, do you really believe what Jian Chen has said? Is there really a huge seal deep underground Mercenary City?”

“If the World of Forsaken Saints really does exist and the tunnel to it has been sealed up underneath Mercenary City, the city lord should have left behind some information as well, so that people in the future can keep watch. Why would he hide it?”

All the elders spoke their suspicions. They also struggled to believe the World of Forsaken Saints and the matters around it.

Tian Jian paced around the center of the hall with his arms crossed. He tightly furrowed his brows and said in thought, “It really is hard to accept such an important matter to spring up so suddenly. However, if that's not the case, how would the trembling of Mercenary City be explained?”

“And it's not like Jian Chen is a person who lies. He is so close with the barrier spirit as well, so I think the World of Forsaken

Saints is more likely to be true than false.”

The elders immediately became stern after they heard Tian Jian’s analysis. One of them said with a deep voice, “If this really is true, then what force will we, the Tian Yuan Continent, use to repel the invasion? According to Jian Chen’s description of the World of Forsaken Saints, we’re not their opponent even if the Tian Yuan Continent, the Beast God Continent, the Sea race, and the Hundred Races work together. After all, it’s no longer the ancient times. We don’t have the four supreme champions and the many Saint Emperors.”

“If the World of Forsaken Saints really does invade, we probably don’t have any abilities to resist at all,” said another elder. His expression was very ugly.

Tian Jian pondered, as he slowly paced around the main entrance of the divine hall. He raised his head to look at the void and mumbled, “The war god of the ancient times has reappeared on the Tian Yuan Continent, while even the Winged Tiger God is born once again. The sea goddess is still alive, while a genius has appeared on our continent, Jian Chen. Perhaps they have come into existence because of this disaster? That they’re only born at the same time in order to repel the World of Forsaken Saints?”

“Only the city lord knew about the World of Forsaken Saints. The city lord had also set down a rule with the elders. If the Winged Tiger God reappears, we must support it when it has not fully matured. He also stated that we should not worry about any harm the Winged Tiger God would bring to the Tian Yuan Continent. Has the city lord foreseen all those years ago that the

seal to the World of Forsaken Saints will break when the Winged Tiger God reappears in the future?”

“If it’s really like that, the city lord’s abilities all those years ago probably would have already reached heaven-defying levels, far exceeding our level of understanding.”

Suddenly, Tian Jian turned to the elders behind him and said, “It doesn’t matter if the World of Forsaken Saints is real or not. Do not leak it out, or it’ll throw the entire continent into fear.”

...

In a cold, quiet room, milky-white light dyed the dark room snow-white. Jian Chen sat in the center as he used Radiant Saint Force to heal himself.

Although Jian Chen sustained very heavy injuries in the battle before, he only used an extremely short amount of time to fully recover under the healing of both his Chaotic Body and Radiant Saint Force.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes after making a full recovery. He immediately removed the Octoterra Divine Hall from his Space Ring. It was currently the size of a fist, but Kaiser had already reduced the majestic divine hall had to ruins. It was no longer as mighty as it was before.

Jian Chen stared at the ruined divine hall with a pained

expression. Although he had only obtained it recently, it had helped him greatly. The divine hall's existence allowed him to treat the protector clans as equals.

“The power of the divine hall has not disappeared. It should be repairing itself right now, but it's extremely slow. By this speed, it'll take at least several decades or even over a century to full repair,” Jian Chen mumbled as he stared at the divine hall, before he placed it back into his Space Ring. He knew that he would not be able to use it for a very long time in the future.

Afterward, Jian Chen pulled out the saint artifact. The artifact had endured several attacks from Kaiser. Although Kaiser failed to destroy it, clear marks were left behind. Despite this, the level of damage was insignificant compared to the divine hall. The saint artifact could also repair itself, so it would return to pristine condition without much time.

“The saint artifact really is much tougher than the Octoterra Divine Hall. If a Saint Emperor wants to destroy it, they'll need to expend quite a lot of effort. On the other hand, Kaiser smashed the Octoterra Divine Hall after just a few attacks. However, the only problem with the saint artifact is that its attacks are just too weak. If I come across a Saint Emperor, I won't be able to enter the artifact space at all, or it'll be no different than throwing myself at the jaws of death,” murmured Jian Chen. The defense of the saint artifact was startling, but it was just an item in the end. It could not flee at all before a Saint Emperor, and if it ended up in the hands of that Saint Emperor, it would be destroyed one day or another.

Jian Chen held the saint artifact, as he thought deeply. He thought, “I’ve told the ten protector clans about the World of Forsaken Saints, but they don’t believe it exists at all. They all think that I am lying, and that I’m weaving up a story to trick them. Sigh, looks like making them believe the existence of the World of Forsaken Saints is virtually impossible.”

“Though, it doesn’t matters if they don’t believe me. An expert greater than Xiao Ling has already appeared in that world, and there will definitely be people at Receival. There are probably quite a few Saint Emperors as well. They’re nothing that this world can repel. Everyone here is too weak.”

“The top priority is to increase the overall strength of this world, but the only way for them to all undergo a noteworthy increase is by refining the Yinyang Saint Rock. It’s the Yinyang Saint Rock’s existence that’s making breakthroughs much harder now. According to what senior Mo Tianyun said, once it disappears, the laws of the world will return to how they were in the ancient times. The experts currently at the Ninth Heavenly Layer or Great Perfection of Saint King will only need an extremely short amount of time to reach Saint Emperor, while more Saint Rulers and Saint Kings will appear.”

“It’s a pity that the power of the Yinyang Saint Rock is just too powerful. I can’t absorb it with my current strength. I can probably only absorb it after I reach the fifth layer of the Chaotic Body with the Heavenly Enchantress according to the Azulet swords.”

Jian Chen could not help but think of the erotic incident that had

occurred between him and the Heavenly Enchantress when he thought of her. He immediately became strewn with mixed emotions.

He still needed to cultivate with the Heavenly Enchantress in order to absorb the power of the Yinyang Saint Rock and refine the Yinyang Qi into his own power.

“The fifth layer of the Chaotic Body, the fifth layer of the Chaotic Body. I am currently at the third, so just how fast can I reach the fifth layer? I can absorb the energy of the rock once I reach the fifth layer. Moreover, according to the sword spirits, I can reach the eighth layer after I absorb all of its power, or even the ninth. At that time, I should be able to fight those at Returnance or even Reciprocity!” Jian Chen stood up, and his eyes became filled with desire.



# Chapter 1020: The Empyrean Demon Orbs Takes a Master

---

After he had completely healed himself completely, Jian Chen left the room. Rui Jin and Hei Yu were waiting outside.

Jian Chen's heart immediately warmed up when he saw how Rui Jin and Hei Yu still guarded him at all times, even in Mercenary City. He clasped his hands toward the two of them and said, "Senior Rui Jin and senior Hei Yu, I have kept you waiting."

"It's no problem. It's not like we had anything better to do here, so we just came to the location where you went into seclusion just in case some accident happens to you like before," chuckled Hei Yu.

Rui Jin stared at Jian Chen for a while and said, "Jian Chen, are the matters regarding the World of Forsaken Saints true?"

Hei Yu stopped smiling and quickly became stern with Rui Jin's sudden question.

Jian Chen nodded, "Correct. It's completely true. The seal to the World of Forsaken Saints really does exist below Mercenary City, and experts from that world attacked the seal. These attacks caused the trembles."

Rui Jin became stern. He immediately stopped talking about it and said, "Jian Chen, let's go."

Afterward, Jian Chen met up with Tie Ta once more. He spoke with him for a while before leaving the independent space with Rui Jin and Hei Yu together, returning to Mercenary City. Ming Dong was still in a crucial moment of his breakthrough, so it would be inconvenient for Jian Chen to disturb him.

When Jian Chen returned to Mercenary City with Rui Jin and Hei Yu, the city had already returned to its previous appearance. The protective power had completely mended the cracks on the ground, as if it was not the crack-ridden city from before at all.

The elders of Mercenary City announced a casual reason to explain the trembling of the city. They calmed down the panic and suspicion among the countless mercenaries.

Under Rui Jin and Hei Yu's lead, Jian Chen went to find Hong Lian and Houston, who were currently recovering in an inn. They were both in the same inn.

"I greet uncle Xiu and senior Hong Lian," Jian Chen greeted the two of them politely as soon as he met them. He quickly glanced past them and found that Houston was still injured and had a pale face. On the other hand, Hong Lian seemed fine, except for the exhaustion she struggled to hide.

Jian Chen could also sense clearly that Hong Lian's presence was much weaker than before.

Although Hong Lian was a phoenix that had lived for several

millennia, she only seemed to be in her twenties. Hong Lian immediately began to glare at Jian Chen viciously when she heard how he referred to her. Then, she said with some slight anger, “What senior? Jian Chen, do I really look that old?”

Jian Chen became stunned with that. He had never expected Hong Lian to react so violently from being referred to as senior.

Rui Jin smiled at how Hong Lian had reacted and said, “Hong Lian, since when did you become so much like a young girl? It doesn’t seem like you.”

Hong Lian used her hand to play around with her hair. After that, she turned around and sat down on her bed. She stared at Jian Chen in interest and said, “Jian Chen, I’ve paid quite a heavy price to save you. Four consecutive rebirths will lead me into forty years of weakness. Talk, what treasure will you give me to make up for my loss?” Hong Lian did not seem to be joking at all and her words were seriousness.

“I will never forget senior’s kindness for saving my life. I will definitely return the favor on fold if I get the chance in the future,” said Jian Chen, as he clasped his hands without any extra thought.

Rui Jin walked over and patted Jian Chen’s shoulder. He smiled gently and said, “Jian Chen, Hong Lian’s joking with you. Don’t treat it so seriously.”

Hong Lian seemed to have not heard Rui Jin’s words at all. She glared at Jian Chen rather unhappily and said, “I said to not call

me senior. Jian Chen, listen closely. Don't ever call me senior again. Just call me by my name, Hong Lian!"

"Okay!" Jian Chen clasped his hands at her. After some thought, he said, "Hong Lian, Uncle Xiu, you're still injured. Why don't you enter the artifact space? I can get the artifact spirit to heal all your wounds."

Houston's eyes lit up with that. He coughed twice and said rather weakly, "That works. With the help from the saint artifact of the Radiant Saint Master Union, I can recover from these injuries that would normally take several decades in a short while."

Then, Jian Chen pulled out the saint artifact and sent Houston into the artifact space. Afterward, he turned to Hong Lian and said, "Why don't you enter the artifact space as well to heal, Hong Lian?"

Hong Lian glanced at Jian Chen, and she closed her eyes to focus on her meditation. She said, "My weakness is from backlash of the Rebirth of Fire. My strength has fallen from Great Perfection to the Fifth Heavenly Layer, and the saint artifact can't heal it. I can only recover slowly. Of course, if you have any extremely valuable heavenly spiritual resources, that can reduce my time of weakness as well."

"Heavenly spirit resources? Does the Dragon's Saliva count?" Jian Chen asked urgently.

Hong Lian shook her head gently. "Dragon's Saliva is only a

heavenly resource. It's nowhere near the invaluable heavenly spiritual resources."

Jian Chen became rather dejected. He knew that Rui Jin had brought over Hong Lian as a powerful helper. If she could fully recover her strength, he would have one more powerful helper at his side.

"Master, the holy water of the spirit sea can help this little phoenix recover her strength." At this moment, the voices of the sword spirits sounded in his head. He had not heard them for quite a while.

Jian Chen became delighted. He immediately focused his attention on his sea of consciousness and saw that the two sword spirit revolve around the Multicolored Stone in the form of two balls of light. In the recent years, the sword spirits had always been absorbing the stone to recover their strength. Jian Chen could clearly feel that the Azulet sword spirit were much more powerful than before with a single glance, while the stone had also grown smaller.

"Zi Ying, Qing Suo, are you saying that the divine water of the world can help Hong Lian recover from the backlash of using the Rebirth of Fire?" Jian Chen asked. The holy water of the spirit sea that the sword spirits mentioned was the divine water of the world among the Sea race.

"Correct. We understand a few things about the Phoenix clan. They will be weakened for a period of time every time they use their innate ability, the Rebirth of Flames, resulting in a great

decrease in strength. If they use it consecutively, the period of time will be lengthened as well. It's fortunate that the little phoenix isn't powerful. Every time they use rebirth, it'll only result in ten years of weakness. In our original world, it would be thousands, tens of thousands of years or even longer every time they used a rebirth. In order to shorten the amount of time weakened, a few experts of the Phoenix clan had traveled all over the world in search of a method. In the end, they found that the holy water of the spirit sea was a liquid that could help them," explained Zi Ying.

Jian Chen's attention returned to his body. Although he knew that the divine water of the world could allow Hong Lian to recover immediately, he only had one portion, which was for forging the Azulent swords. He could not give it to Hong Lian.

"I'll immediately go looking for the water the next time I return to the Sea race," thought Jian Chen. Currently, he believed he was strong enough to enter the dangerous areas of the sea realm in search of the water.

Jian Chen entered the artifact space once more after he left Hong Lian to rest. He first visited You Yue, Xiao Bai and his mother, comforting their alarmed feelings. Then, he directly proceeded to uncle Xiu's location.

Uncle Xiu made a full recovery very quickly under the healing of the artifact spirit's Radiant Saint Force origin energy. As it was his first time witnessing the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force, he exclaimed and gasped in admiration at the power and wonder of the Radiant Saint Force origin energy.

With a flip of his hand, a book appeared in his hand. The Blood Demon Emperor had left behind this cultivation manual in the Octoterra Divine Hall. The Baleful Yin Force within had stopped attacking Jian Chen long ago with the Empyrean Demon Orb's submission.

Jian Chen passed the book to uncle Xiu and said, "Uncle Xiu, please check out this book."

As soon as Jian Chen pulled out the book, Houston began staring at it unblinkingly. He immediately accepted it without any hesitation after he heard Jian Chen's words.

"Hmm?" Houston immediately produced an interjection of surprise as soon as the book entered his hands. His old and profound gaze also lit up in wonder, and he cried out as he stared fixedly at the book, "Baleful Yin Force! It's actually Baleful Yin Force, and it's several fold more powerful than the Baleful Yin Force I control!"

Houston did not stop the Baleful Yin Force and allowed it to worm its way through his body toward his soul. As soon as it came into contact with his soul, not only did it pose no threat to Houston, it was devoured instead, becoming part of his own power.

However, the rest of the Baleful Yin Force shot off like a frightened bird as soon as Houston devoured a small part of it, receding out of his body and back into the book as fast as it could. It fell silent, no longer daring to appear again.

“Hmm? This Baleful Yin Force actually even possesses a shred of intelligence. What a surprise, what a surprise,” Houston could not help but sigh in wonder. He felt even more curious regarding the contents of the book and immediately began to flip through it.

However, his expression changed when he saw just the first page. His eyes became flooded with surprise that he struggled to conceal, and the surprise increased as he flipped through more pages. In the end, it turned into deep shock and disbelief.

“T-this is the cultivation manual of my Bloodsword sect. Jian Chen, where did you get this book from?” Houston suddenly shut the book and stared at Jian Chen in interest.

Afterward, Jian Chen told Houston about the book’s origins and everything he had learned from the memories of the Blood Demon Emperor.

Houston immediately became stunned when he found out the founder of the Bloodsword sect was actually a member of the Sea race. His heart began to churn as he struggled to accept or believe all of it.

“Uncle Xiu, this is the Empyrean Demon Orb. It should be very useful to you.” Then, Jian Chen passed over the Empyrean Demon Orb.

Uncle Xiu slowly calmed down, as he stared at the orb in Jian Chen’s hand. He reached toward it subconsciously.



However, as soon as uncle Xiu touched the orb, the Empyrean Demon Orb immediately flew up from its original state of lying quietly in Jian Chen's hands. It turned into a faint streak of red light as it shot toward uncle Xiu, before disappearing into the center of his eyebrows.

Uncle Xiu's eyes quickly dulled, and he closed them. He had directly fallen unconscious.

Jian Chen quickly caught his body, slowly laying him on the ground. He knew that nothing would happen to him, as it was only a process of the Empyrean Demon Orb taking on a master.

# Chapter 1021: Tracks of the Murderers

---

Houston silently lay on the floor with his eyes closed. He seemed to be at peace. No one knew just what would happen to him in the process of the Empyrean Demon Orb taking him as a master.

The process went for far longer than Jian Chen had anticipated. He stood by Houston's side for seven whole days and nights, until Houston finally woke up.

Jian Chen could immediately sense that Houston's gaze had become much sharper than before, as he slowly opened his eyes.

"Uncle Xiu, how is it? Is everything successful?" Jian Chen asked out of concern.

Houston rose up from the ground and firmly stood. Unconcealable delight filled his eyes, which also possessed some mixed emotions.

"Never did I think, never did I think. Never did I possibly think that the cultivation method of my Bloodsword sect was actually from this Empyrean Demon Orb..." Houston produced a long sigh of wonder.

"Only now do I know that the unique cultivation manual of my Bloodsword sect is adapted from the Empyrean Demon Arts. Not only is it incomplete, but it's far weaker than the Empyrean Demon Arts," Houston sighed emotionally after he learned the truth. Who had ever thought that the Bloodsword sect of the three

great assassination organizations hid such a startling secret.

“Uncle Xiu, the Empyrean Demon Arts is a cultivation manual that surpassed the Saint Tier. If you cultivate it, I believe you’ll be able to break through to Saint Emperor successfully without much time,” Jian Chen smiled. If Houston could become a Saint Emperor, it would be greatly beneficial for both himself and the Tian Yuan Continent.

A sliver of emotion appeared in Houston’s eyes, but it disappeared very quickly. After some thought, he said, “I only have a little more than a hundred years of life left. It’s not very long, so it’ll completely depend on the wonders of the Empyrean Demon Arts if I can break through to Saint Emperor in that time or not.”

Jian Chen’s heart tightened. He had never thought that uncle Xiu would have so little life remaining. Although over a century was a very long time, it would only be equal to going into seclusion once for people at uncle Xiu’s level.

“I hope uncle Xiu can break through to Saint Emperor as soon as possible using the Empyrean Demon Arts,” Jian Chen prayed secretly.

“The only pity is that my soul seems to be under some type of restriction from the Empyrean Demon Orb, such that I can’t transcribe the contents of the cultivation manual. Otherwise, I could complete the cultivation manual of the Bloodsword sect.” Houston found this to be unfortunate.

At that moment, Houston seemed to think of something. After hesitating slightly, he pulled out a blood-red arrow banner and said to Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, there are still two people alive out of those who murdered your parents. If you want to take revenge, take this arrow banner and go find the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect. They know where the two of them are,” said Houston, as he passed the arrow banner over.

Dense killing intent immediately began to shine in Jian Chen’s eyes. He could still remember clearly that there were a total of five people who had murdered his parents. He had killed three of them with the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect in the City of God several years ago, while the two more powerful people remained alive. They had fled using a secret technique.

Jian Chen originally thought that the four protectors had felled the two other murderers. He did not expect them to be still alive.

Jian Chen slowly extended a hand and accepted the arrow banner from Houston. He clenched it tightly in his hand, as he said icily, “I will find the two of them with the greatest speed possible and make them pay a heavy price for what they did all those years ago.”

Houston glanced at the banner arrow in Jian Chen’s hand, and he smiled profoundly. However, the expression disappeared very quickly, and he said, “Jian Chen, I’ll immediately return to Longevity Valley for secluded cultivation as soon as I leave the saint artifact. I’ll try to break through to Saint Emperor before I pass away. Jian Chen, you’ve killed quite a lot of people in your journeys in these few years. Moreover, your strength has increased

just too quickly as well. Once you deal with all your matters, bring Little Fatty with you to Longevity Valley. I hope you can stay there for ten years.”

“Uncle Xiu, I will definitely listen to you and stay there for ten years after I deal with my matters at hand,” said Jian Chen seriously. He respected uncle Xiu, and it was not only respect. He knew that uncle Xiu was thinking for him for all this time.

Houston happily nodded. The fact that Jian Chen could remain neither arrogant or rash despite his increased strength satisfied Houston.

Jian Chen left the saint artifact with You Yue, Rum Guinness, Xiao Bai, and Houston. Houston bid farewell to everyone as soon as he left the city and returned to Longevity Valley alone.

Jian Chen was impatient to find the other two murderers, so he did not stay for much longer in Mercenary City either. He directly moved off after he bid Tian Jian farewell.

“Big brother, big brother, are you leaving again?” Just as Jian Chen made his way through the giant barrier around the city, he heard Xiao Ling’s voice. She was unwilling to part with him, and she seemed like she was on the verge of tears.

Jian Chen looked around but he did not see Xiao Ling. As a result, he spoke to the thin air, “Xiao Ling, big brother still has some important matters to deal with, so big brother cannot stay behind with you. Big brother will come and see you the as soon as he has

time, okay?”

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian did not show any odd expressions this time Jian Chen seemingly spoke to himself. They looked around with a rather courteous gaze. They knew that the barrier spirit who had surpassed Saint Emperor was currently talking with Jian Chen. Additionally, she had concealed herself in this region of space. They could not find her location no matter what with their current strength.

“Big brother, Xiao Ling feels that the people of the World of Forsaken Saints will break through the seal without much time. Big brother is still too weak. Xiao Ling wants to help big brother increase his strength. Xiao Ling can invoke the mysteries of the world for big brother to comprehend.” Xiao Ling’s soft voice rang out. Her voice was no longer as energetic as Jian Chen had once heard. Instead, unhappiness, misery, and alarm filled her voice.

Jian Chen could imagine how pitiful Xiao Ling was right now, even though he could not see her. Right now, Xiao Ling was like a fragile little girl that a group of despicable bad people had frightened. Without anyone to rely on like her parents, she was filled with helplessness and fear.

“Xiao Ling, big brother really has important things to deal with, so big brother can’t comprehend the mysteries of the world that you can invoke. However, big brother has some friends. Why don’t you invoke the mysteries for them to comprehend, so that they can grow stronger faster?” Jian Chen said. However, he was internally delighted. With that, he could bring over all the Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers from the Changyang clan of

Lore City and get Xiao Ling to invoke the mysteries of the world for them to comprehend.

“As long as it’s big brother’s friends, Xiao Ling can invoke it all of them. Big brother, are your friends them? But they’re at the Great Perfection of Saint King. The mysteries of the world for breaking through to Saint Emperor are just too complicated. It’s very hard for Xiao Ling to invoke it completely, so Xiao Ling might not be able to help them.” Xiao Ling became slightly dejected as if the fact that she could not help Jian Chen left her very unhappy.

“No, of course, it’s not them...” Jian Chen quickly comforted Xiao Ling. At the same time, he introduced her to Ming Dong, who was currently trying to break through in Mercenary City. This way, Xiao Ling could help him out.

After some consideration, Jian Chen also left behind Rum Guinness, so that Xiao Ling could invoke the mysteries of the world for Rum Guinness to comprehend. That way, Rum Guinness’ strength would increase.

As for Xiao Bai, he was a Winged Tiger God so he did not need to comprehend the mysteries of the world like ordinary people thanks to his natural talent. Enough energy was the only requirement, so Jian Chen did not leave behind the white tiger.

On the other hand, Tie Ta was the war god of the Hundred Races. His path of cultivation was different from ordinary people. He did not need to comprehend the mysteries of the world. As a result, Xiao Ling did not need to invoke the mysteries for him.

Jian Chen originally wanted to leave behind You Yue as well, but she was just too weak right now. She was nowhere near the level where she needed to comprehend the mysteries of the world, so he could only drop the idea.

Xiao Ling moved very quickly. As soon as Jian Chen told her the people to invoke the mysteries to, she immediately took Rum Guinness deep underground. Ming Dong, who was currently cultivating in an independent space of Mercenary City, also disappeared. Xiao Ling had secretly him taken away. Even Tian Jian failed to notice his absence.

Jian Chen carried You Yue, as he left Mercenary City with Rui Jin, Hei Yui, and Hong Lian. They traveled toward the location of the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect under the guidance of arrow banner from Houston.

“Once I eliminate the murders of my parents from all those years ago, I’ll immediately return to the Changyang clan and bring over my great grandfathers as well as Jiede Tai. That way, Xiao Ling can invoke the mysteries of the world for them. I’ll visit the Felicity Empire of the three great empires after that. Bi Jian, you’ve devastated my Flame Mercenaries, so I will definitely not forgive you,” thought Jian Chen, as he soared in the air. These were his plans for the future.

The blood-red arrow banner flowed with a faint red light in Jian Chen’s hand, as it led the way. Since Jian Chen did not know the precise location of the four protectors, he could not get Rui Jin and the others to rip open a Space Gate and arrive there immediately.



# Chapter 1022: Luo Duo

---

The Longqi Kingdom was one of the eight great kingdoms of the Tian Yuan Continent. It stood as an equal to the Qinhuang Kingdom and possessed a history that was several tens of thousands of years long. One could not underestimate its power, while Saint Ruler stayed and protected the imperial palace.

The Longqi Kingdom was just as peaceful as it was every other day. Its majestic and dominating halls filled the imperial palace; a vast and tremendous presence filled the surroundings.

Groups of soldiers clad in armor patrolled the palace, as they moved around with their chests up high as they marched at a unison pace. They silently protected the peace of the palace.

At this moment, two figures that were so blurry that they were almost invisible entered the palace extremely quickly. They silently shot toward the depths. Then, they disappeared into a hall that had been empty for a very long time.

They had completely erased their presence, so they alerted no one with their arrival. Even the Saint Rulers protecting the palace failed to notice the arrival of these two unwelcome guests.

Two disheveled old men in tattered clothing carefully leaned against the door, as they observed the activity outside with great caution. They had completely erased their presence and had even held their breaths. They seemed extremely nervous.

The two old men finally became relieved after they discovered nothing from their observations. At the same time, they collapsed onto the icy-cold ground, as they panted heavily.

“It’s fortunate that we didn’t alert the Saint Rulers in the palace. Situ, your presence-erasing technique really is impressive. We should be able to hide here safely for the next few days,” an old man said through a communication technique. He was weary.

“It doesn’t matter how profound this presence-erasing technique is. The four protectors of the Bloodsword sect will still be able to find us. We can’t shake them off no matter what,” replied the other old man with a similar communication technique. They both behaved extremely cautiously, unwilling to even make the slightest noise just in case it would alert the Saint Rulers in the palace.

The two beggar-like Saint Rulers were old man Situ and Mateng. They had suffered from the pursuit of the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect in the past few years, as they ran for their lives.

“The Longqi Kingdom is a subsidiary of the Felicity Empire of the three great empires. Probably even the four protectors do not dare to create a disturbance here. We should be very safe here,” old man Mateng communicated.

Old man Situ nodded in agreement and replied, “You’re right. The four protectors will catch up very quickly. They know we’re hiding here. Despite this, as soon as they approach the imperial palace, the Saint Rulers from the palace will definitely stop them. A great battle might even occur. As they fight, we can keep watch and strike out suddenly to defeat a protector together. That way,

we can kill one of them.”

Old man Mateng’s eyes lit up. “That’s not a bad idea. The four of them have basically chased us through the entire continent, so it’s about time for them to pay a price.”

Two days later, four cold-faced, middle-aged men in blood-red robes arrived in the air. They directly traveled toward the imperial palace.

The four of them radiated with an invisible Baleful Yin Force. The temperature would plummet wherever the four of them passed, and it would become as cold as an ice cavern.

“The two of them are hiding in this city. The previous sect master has contacted us with a secret technique. He instructed that once we find the two of them, we must not act rashly. We need to wait for the new sect master to arrive and wait for his orders. Let’s find an inn and rest for now,” a protector said expressionlessly, before entering the city with the three others.

“Who do you think the new sect master is? I can be sure that he definitely has some hatred for the two people we’re chasing, but our Bloodsword sect has already stepped away from the continent for a thousand years. I haven’t heard about any elders in the sect that have some resentment toward them,” a protector said with a deep voice. He was filled with doubt.

“Xue San, shut up. The matter of the sect master is not something we can discuss.” A protector’s face sank, and he

immediately glared toward the speaker.

The protector referred to as Xue San immediately shut up.

As the four protectors walked through the streets, their similar appearances and their traces of Baleful Yin Force immediately became the center of attention. All the pedestrians and mercenaries gave way to them. They could already tell that it would be unwise to provoke the four of them, as they had sinister appearances.

The four protectors traveled side by side. They had recovered their usual coldness, which made them seem unapproachable.

At this moment, four pepper-haired old men in white robes appeared on the street. They also stood side by side, just happening to block the paths of the four protectors. They seemed like they had waited there for quite some time already.

The four old men all seemed extremely ordinary. None of them possessed any presences, and they seemed like ordinary people. They attracted no attention even though they stood on the street in such a fashion.

The four protectors immediately stopped, as they were blocked. They stared coldly at the four old men, but none of them said anything.

At this moment, one of the old men clasped his hands toward

them and said, “We are the four Imperial Protectors of the Longqi Kingdom. May I ask why the four experts of the Bloodsword sect has come to our Longqi Kingdom?” said the old man nonchalantly. His tone carried a sliver of coldness and an unwillingness to yield.

The Bloodsword sect had already disappeared from the Tian Yuan Continent for a thousand years, but it was still one of the three great assassination organizations. There were no experts within the kingdom that could ignore them when the four of them arrived at the same time, which was why four Saint Rulers of the Longqi Kingdom had immediately arrived to stop them.

“We are the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect. We have come in pursuit of traitors of the human race,” a protector said emotionlessly.

“This is the imperial city of our Longqi Kingdom. There are no so-called traitors. Please leave quickly,” said an Imperial Protector unyieldingly. He did not fear the infamous Bloodsword sect.

“The way the Bloodsword sect does things has never been decided by others.” All four protectors stood emotionlessly as coldness filled their eyes. Slivers of killing intent had already appeared. The traces of Baleful Yin Force on them also became denser. They were clearly in a battle-ready state.

The four Imperial Protectors were indeed very unwilling to give in, but the four protectors were even more so.

The four Imperial Protectors immediately thought of giving in

when they saw how inflexible the four protectors were. They knew that if they did not do that, a battle with the four protectors would definitely occur.

“This is our Longqi Kingdom, not your Bloodsword sect. If you forcefully want it that way, you’ll see what happens,” The four Imperial Protectors immediately left after throwing down that threatening sentence. The unique Baleful Yin Force of the Bloodsword sect was renowned throughout the entire continent. Everyone feared it, so the four Imperial Protectors did not want to fall out with them at all.

As he watched the four Imperial Protectors leave, a protector mumbled, “They seem to have very deep hatred for us.”

“In an assassination over a thousand years ago, the king and two Imperial Protectors died at the hands of our Bloodsword sect. Of course they would have resentment for us,” a protector explained emotionlessly.

The four Imperial Protectors gathered together in the imperial palace. All of them were stern.

“I never thought that the people of the Bloodsword sect would appear in our Longqi Kingdom once again. Over a thousand years ago, the Bloodsword sect claimed the lives of two of our Imperial Protectors. We have to avenge them.”

“Over three hundred years ago, Imperial Protector Luo Duo successfully broke through to Saint King. He’s currently an

Imperial Protector of the Felicity Empire, while one of the Imperial Protectors the Bloodsword sect killed was Luo Duo's younger brother. We should contact him immediately and get him to assist us."

The four Imperial Protectors immediately sent someone through a Space Gate to the Felicity Kingdom to pass on the news of what was happening here to Luo Duo.

On the other hand, the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect settled down in an inn within the Longqi Kingdom. They stayed in there meditating all day long without taking a single step out. They tried to sense the two old men's precise location, as they waited for the new sect master to arrive.

A middle-aged man in white robes sat on a huge bed within a beautifully-adorned hall in the Felicity Empire. His appearance was ordinary but firm, and he gave off an unwavering feeling. However, he did not have a head full of hair that matched his age. It was completely gray and formed a rather peculiar combination with his face.

The man was Luo Duo. He was a Saint King and currently an Imperial Protector of the Felicity Empire.

A ruddy old man stood courteously before him. He was an Imperial Protector who had hurried over from the Longqi Kingdom. Currently, he was informing Luo Duo about everything regarding the appearance of the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect.

“The Bloodsword sect!” Luo Duo slowly opened his eyes. A sharp light immediately began to flicker in his eyes, together with a surging hatred.

“Imperial Protector Luo Duo, people of the Bloodsword sect have come to our Longqi Kingdom once again. I wonder what should we do. Please instruct us, Imperial Protector Luo Duo,” said the Imperial Protector of the Longqi Kingdom. He clasped his hands, as he bowed courteously.

“What to do? Of course to kill them, to take revenge for my younger brother,” Luo Duo said without any extra thought.

“But the sect master of the Bloodsword sect...” The Imperial Protector hesitated. Very deep fear filled his eyes.

Luo Duo got off his bed and said coldly, “I’ve looked through the information regarding the sect master especially in the Felicity Empire. According to what I know, Houston does not have much more time left, so there’s no need to consider him. There is no one else within the Bloodsword sect that is worthy of the Felicity Empire’s attention other than Houston. And if Houston decides to interfere, there will naturally be someone from the Felicity Empire who will block him.”

“Houston brought the glory of the past thousand years of the Bloodsword sect. Once he disappears, the glory of the Bloodsword sect will become history.”



# Chapter 1023: The Sect Master Arrives

---

The Imperial Protector from the Longqi Kingdom immediately became overjoyed after they heard Luo Duo's words. He hurried to clasp his hands and said, "Since we don't need to fear the Bloodsword sect anymore, why stop there, Imperial Protector Luo Duo? We can directly uproot the Bloodsword sect and take revenge for what happened over a thousand years ago."

A cold light flickered immediately began to flicker in Luo Duo's eyes. He lowered his head in thought and said, "The sect master Houston is still not dead, so we can't finish them off. Otherwise, Houston will probably resist with all he has, even if it results in his death. If a Saint King at Great Perfection throws away his life to take revenge against us, it will be a disaster that can completely destroy our Felicity Kingdom. However, if we just kill the Saint Rulers who're in the Longqi Kingdom, it should be alright."

Luo Duo's entire presence suddenly changed. His eyes glowed, and he abruptly stared at the Imperial Protector, who stood to one side politely. Then, Luo Duo said seriously, "Immediately return to the Longqi Kingdom and surveil the activities of the experts from the Bloodsword sect. Just in case, I must see the other Imperial Protectors of the empire before I move against them."

"Yes sir!"

The Imperial Protector immediately returned through the Space Gate in the imperial palace of the Felicity Empire, while Luo Duo did not hesitate at all. He immediately proceeded toward the forbidden grounds deep within the palace as dense killing intent

flickered in his eyes from time to time. “Brother, it’s been over a thousand years since you died in the hands of the Bloodsword sect. Brother wasn’t able to avenge you then, but now that the opportunity has come, brother will swear that I will use the Felicity Empire to immediately wipe out the Bloodsword sect after Houston passes away. I will avenge you.”

Back then, Luo Duo had the choice of staying at the Longqi Kingdom after he had broken through to Saint King. He could have allowed the kingdom’s status to soar. However, he chose to come to the Felicity Empire as an Imperial Protector without any hesitation, with the most important reason being the Bloodsword sect. He had always wanted to use the Felicity Empire to eliminate the Bloodsword sect.

In the Longqi Kingdom, the Imperial Protector brought back Luo Duo’s orders after returning from the Felicity Kingdom. As a result, the four Imperial Protectors did not continue to create trouble for the four protectors. Instead, they stayed in the imperial palace, as they sensed the protectors’ presences. They observed their activity at all times.

However, the four of them fail to notice the two unwelcomed guests had appeared in the imperial palace and were currently hiding silently in a desolate place.

In the blink of an eye, two days passed. It was extremely peaceful during this time, and the imperial city of the Longqi Kingdom functioned as normal. People moved about daily in its bustling, noisy streets. It was very lively.

At this moment, several whooshes rang out. Several figures rapidly approached the imperial city from afar. They traveled extremely quickly and arrived in the air of the city, despite the fact that they were near the horizon a second earlier.

“They’re in this city,” said an extremely handsome young man in black robes. He seemed to be in his twenties. He held a blood-red arrow banner, while his gaze was as sharp as a drawn sword. He slowly swept past the city with his gaze.

They were Jian Chen, Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian. After several days of travel, the four of them had basically crossed a large portion of the continent and had arrived here according to the directions of the blood-red arrow banner.

Although they all flew, only Jian Chen was not at the Great Perfection of Saint King. Their comprehension of the mysteries of space was at an extremely great level. They traveled with Spatial Force. Although it was not as exaggerated as traversing millions of kilometers in a single step with a Space Gate, they were still unbelievably fast.

As a result, Jian Chen used an extremely short amount of time to travel over ten million kilometers from Mercenary City whilst Rui Jin carried him.

As soon as the four of them arrived in the air of the city, the four protectors opened their eyes at the same time and roused from their meditations. One of them said, “I can sense the presence of the Bloodsword Token. The new sect master has come. Let’s go welcome them quickly.”

With four red blurs, the four protectors all flew out of the window. They appeared in the air like phantoms and faced Jian Chen.

The four of them first gathered their attention on the blood-red banner arrow in Jian Chen's hand, before they slowly looked toward him. They became stunned when they recognized Jian Chen properly, where even their gazes became blank. They were filled with disbelief.

None of them had ever thought that the new sect master was not a member of the upper echelon in the sect, but the young Jian Chen.

Jian Chen remained as usual. He glanced past the four of them before he clasped his hands at the them. "I am Jian Chen. Thank you, protectors!"

Jian Chen was still grateful toward the four protectors. He would never forget that it was the four of them who arrived in time when the Changyang clan faced a disaster. They had prevented the clan from suffering too great of a loss. Otherwise, old man Situ and his cronies would have probably flattened the entire clan. The people they harmed would not just be Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian.

The four protectors returned to their senses very quickly. Jian Chen's polite treatment surprised the four of them. Without any hesitation, they all dropped to one knee in a single motion and called out, "The four protectors of the Bloodsword sect greets the

sect master!”

“What? Sect master?” Jian Chen also became stunned with how the four of them referred to him, but he came to an understanding very quickly. There was probably a rule in the Bloodsword sect, that the owner of the banner arrow was equivalent to the sect master. As he was currently in possession of it, the four protectors naturally took him to be the sect master.

“Please do not misunderstand, protectors. I am not your sect master. Uncle Xiu has only lent me this banner arrow. He intended to let me use it to find the four of you,” Jian Chen hurried to explain as he thought, “I guess Houston was Uncle Xiu’s original name. He was known as the sect master of the Bloodsword sect. He probably changed his surname after stepping back from the continent a thousand years ago. After all, the matter that happened a thousand years ago has affected uncle Xiu just too greatly.”

The four protectors did not rise. One of them said with their head down, “The old sect master has already contacted us using a secret technique to inform us that he is stepping down, and that the person in possession of the banner arrow is the new sect master of the Bloodsword sect. All people must absolutely obey the sect master’s decisions and commands.”

“What did you say? Uncle Xiu passed over the position as sect master?” This time, the surprised person was Jian Chen. The four protectors had described it extremely clearly, so no matter how confused Jian Chen was, he could understand that uncle Xiu had passed on the position of sect master to him.

It was just that the news had come too suddenly, which made it hard for Jian Chen to accept for some time. He had never thought that his status would undergo a huge change the moment he accepted the banner arrow from uncle Xiu. He did not know that he would unknowingly become the sect master of the Bloodsword sect.

The Bloodsword sect was one of the three great assassination organizations, which could shake up the Tian Yuan Continent. It could not be undermined. Although it could not be compared to the protector clans, it was no weaker than an ancient clan.

“The four protectors have been waiting here under the old sect master’s orders for the new sect master, as well as surveilling the two traitors carefully. Please command our next actions,” the four protectors spoke in unison, as if they were mentally connected.

Jian Chen thought in silence. The murderers of his parents were here right now, so he was not in the mood to deal with the entangling matter of sect master. As a result, he placed it aside for the time being and said, “Do you know where the two traitors are right now? Have you still yet to kill the two of them after these years of pursuit?”

“Sect master, the two of them are hiding in the imperial palace right now. The old sect master ordered a few years ago for us to chase but not kill; injure but not capture. As a result, the two of them are still alive,” said a protector.

“Is that so,” Jian Chen came to an understanding. Afterward, he looked towards the majestic imperial palace and said, “Let’s go, head to the imperial palace with me,” as he said that, Jian Chen took the lead and flew off first, while Rui Jin and the other two followed closely behind him. After them were the four protectors, who traveled side by side.

Jian Chen’s group arrived outside the imperial palace very quickly. Then, they directly flew into the space above it bravely. They directly stopped above the center of the palace, levitating several hundred meters in the air, as they looked at the many well-adorned palaces.

“Bloodsword sect, you’ve gone overboard to trespass in the skies of the imperial palace. Do you really think that my Longqi Kingdom is nothing?” A furious voice boomed from below. Although it sounded ancient, it was filled with vigor and resounded through the surroundings. It even dispersed the clouds.

Four ruddy old men flew out from the imperial palace with that. They shot into the air with lightning speed and tremendous presences, facing Jian Chen’s group from a hundred meters away.

The Imperial Protectors’ voice broke the peace of the palace, and it all became messy in that instant. A large number of guards surged out from various places of the palace, but when they discovered that the enemies were in the air, they immediately became dumbfounded. All they could do was watch anxiously.

# Chapter 1024: The New Sect Master's Strength

---

The four Imperial Protectors of the Longqi Kingdom faced Jian Chen's group from a thousand meters away. Their expressions were all ugly. The people of the Bloodsword sect had already come, yet the Imperial Protector Luo Duo they relied on the most for this matter still had not arrived. This made them feel that the situation was extremely bad.

“Although four of the eight people are hiding their presences and we can't sense their strength, they're floating in the air without the use of the energy of the world. They must be all Saint Rulers. That's eight Saint Rulers. The four of us aren't their opponent,” the four Imperial Protectors calculated themselves. They could not act rashly as their opponents outnumbered them.

“People of the Bloodsword sect, this is an important part of the imperial palace. You are not welcome here, so please leave immediately,” an Imperial Protector said nonchalantly.

Jian Chen furrowed his brows toward the cold attitude of the Imperial Protector. He glanced past the four of them and did not say anything. He immediately enveloped the imperial palace with his presence and found the two old cronies. They were hiding with their presences and had concealed themselves very quickly.

Jian Chen clasped his fist toward the Imperial Protectors and said, “Sirs, I am in pursuit of enemies. The enemy is currently hiding in the imperial palace, so please make an exception for me.”



“Hmph, the enemies you speak of as members of the Bloodsword sect are probably people that others have placed a rich remuneration on. You all act too arrogantly. Our Longqi Kingdom may not be as great as you all, but we’re not something that can be trampled on. Don’t you dare kill anyone within the imperial palace,” said an Imperial Protector in an unyielding tone. They thought Jian Chen had come to kill some important figure within the palace.

Jian Chen’s face sank slightly when he heard this, and he said, “If the four of you insists on stopping us, I can only run the risk of offense.”

The four Imperial Protectors shivered inside. They knew that conflict was unavoidable, so they immediately began to radiate with tremendous presences. At the same time, Saint Weapons appeared in their hands, and they were now ready for battle.

Jian Chen’s lips curled into a sneer. Just as he was about to take action, four blood-red blurs flashed before him. The four protectors of the Bloodsword sect had arrived before Jian Chen at the same time and blocked the four Imperial Protectors of the Longqi Kingdom. A long, blood-red spike had already appeared in each of their hands, while a thick layer of Baleful Yin Force radiated from them.

A battle was about to occur.

“Hahahaha, I never thought that after holing up for a thousand

years, the Bloodsword sect would still possess their previous spirit. Still so arrogant.” At this moment, laughter boomed in the sky. Afterward, the space nearby began to distort violently. Someone ripped the space open soon afterward and formed a Space Gate.

A middle-aged man who seemed to be roughly forty years of age emerged from inside. He possessed an ordinary appearance, except for the fact that his hair was already gray. He instantly arrived before the Imperial Protectors of the Longqi Kingdom and at the same time, a tremendous presence began to radiate from him. It almost caused the surrounding air to freeze.

The four Imperial Protectors immediately relaxed greatly when they saw the middle-aged man. They became excited, “Imperial Protector Luo Duo, you’ve finally come. If you have come one step later, the Bloodsword sect would have probably slain the four of us.”

Luo Duo’s face sank with that. Killing intent poured from his eyes without any restraint, as he looked at the four protectors and said coldly, “You people of the Bloodsword sect are getting more and more fearless, coming again and again to my Longqi Kingdom to create trouble. But it’s a pity that the current Longqi Kingdom is no longer the Longqi Kingdom of a thousand years ago. Since you’ve come today, don’t leave. Stay put forever,” Luo Duo spoke extremely arrogantly. He had anticipated long ago that the sect master of the Bloodsword sect, Houston, was reaching the end of his life. Even if he killed a few of the sect’s experts, Houston would not run such a huge risk to come and offend the Felicity Empire. If he did so, he would cause the destruction of the Bloodsword sect.

The four protectors all became stern. They could already tell from Luo Duo's presence that he was a Saint King and not something they could deal with as Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers. It would be difficult for them to survive even with their Baleful Yin Force, as the disparity in strength was just too great after all.

Jian Chen, who stood beside the four protectors, began to laugh from anger after he heard the arrogant words of Luo Duo. He growled, "To speak so arrogantly, do you think that there's no one present who is stronger than you? Before you speak, why don't you worry about yourself first? Let's see if you have the capacity to speak like that."

Luo Duo immediately focused his glare onto Jian Chen, before he quickly scanned past Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian behind Jian Chen. He could not tell their strength, but he felt no fear, as he had the support of the Felicity Empire.

"Brat, who are you? Name yourself," Luo Duo growled at Jian Chen.

"How dare you! He is the new sect master of the Bloodsword sect. You cannot be so impolite," a protector of the Bloodsword sect called out before Jian Chen could respond.

A sliver of surprise immediately flashed across Luo Duo's eyes when he learned that Jian Chen was actually the sect master. He could not help but observe him closely. He smiled gently and said, "I never thought that you'd be the new sect master of the Bloodsword sect. It has really surprised me. May I ask if senior

Houston is well?”

“Who do you think senior Houston is? Do you think he’s someone who you can ask about? However, since you said that you wanted to keep the people of the Bloodsword sect here forever, let’s see the great skills that you possess and see if you have that capacity or not,” Jian Chen said emotionlessly. Then, he passed the four protectors and arrived at the very front. He stared closely at Luo Duo.

Luo Duo’s lips curled into a sneer. A strand of killing intent flickered in the depths of his eyes, and he said with his deep voice, “Alright. Since the new sect master wants to see, I’ll follow your wishes,” as he said that, Luo Duo grabbed at the thin air. Invisible World Force immediately began to gather in Luo Duo’s hand, which he struck toward Jian Chen.

Luo Duo did not hold back with the palm strike. As soon as he struck out, it surged forth with an overwhelming might. The terrifying ripples of energy caused the surroundings to tremble violently.

Jian Chen remained perfectly composed. He had no need to use his sword against a mere Second Heavenly Layer Saint King like Luo Duo. Chaotic Force surged from his chaotic neidan and instantly condensed around his right hand. Then, he struck out directly.

Jian Chen’s attack was simple, but the force hidden within could not be underestimated. As the punch traveled through the air, the space became littered with tiny cracks.

Boom! Jian Chen's fist loudly collided head-on with Luo Duo's invisible palm strike condensed from World Force. Powerful ripples of residual energy splayed out and shook up the surroundings, which caused the space within a radius of a thousand meters to twist wildly. It became a blur.

"How is this possible? He actually broke through my palm so easily." Luo Duo was internally shocked. The strength of the new sect master had greatly exceeded his expectations.

"Luo Duo, it's time that I make you pay for your arrogance earlier," Jian Chen said coldly. He took a step in the empty air and immediately arrived before Luo Duo. He threw another similar punch toward Luo Duo's chest.

Luo Duo suddenly became grim. After witnessing Jian Chen's strength, he no longer dared to be so arrogant as before. An extremely powerful Saint Force surged wildly from within him and condensed into a huge flame-red sword of palm width in his right hand. Afterward, he stabbed toward Jian Chen's fist with lightning speed.

Jian Chen's lips curled up into a sneer. His fist did not change in its trajectory and he directly struck the tip of Luo Duo's huge sword. He actually wanted to use his body to resist the attack of a Saint Weapon from a Second Heavenly Layer Saint King.

"He's a madman. This sect master must be a madman. Does he really think that he can use his fist to defeat my Saint Weapon?"

Hmph, if he's so confident, I'll cripple his right arm," Luo Duo sneered inside, and he put some more force into the strike.

Bang! Jian Chen's fist collided with Luo Duo's sword and produced a muffled sound. A terrifying force knocked the fist and sword apart, before splaying out in all directions. It shook up the four Imperial Protectors and the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect who watched in the surroundings were helplessly knocked backward.

Luo Duo's fist had not pierced Jian Chen's fist as the former had imagined. Instead, it was unscathed, with no damage at all. Luo Duo's full-powered attack had actually failed to even pierce Jian Chen's skin.

Not only did Jian Chen's third layer of the Chaotic Body elevate his strength to the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King, but it also elevated his defense to such a level as well. Currently, he could take attacks from Third Heavenly Layer Saint Kings and come out unscathed. Only those beyond that posed a threat to him. Luo Duo could not even harm Jian Chen with his strength of the Second Heavenly Layer unless he used a Saint Tier Battle Skill.

"How is this possible? Just how is this possible? How is your fist so hard?" Luo Duo stared at Jian Chen's unscathed hand, as he was dumbstruck. Disbelief flooded his face.

Jian Chen said nothing and charged up again. He threw another similar punch at Luo Duo as dark Chaotic Force flickered gently on its surface. An aura filled with destruction flooded the space, which shocked all those present.

The punch this time was much more powerful than the two before.

A gleam of light flickered through Hong Lian's eyes, as she watched from afar. She said with a deep voice, "Just what is this power Jian Chen is using? Why have I never even heard or seen about it? There are no records regarding it in my inherited memories either."

Rui Jin and Hei Yu shook their heads at the same time. Rui Jin stared at Jian Chen unblinkingly and said, "I don't know either, but I can feel that the power he uses is very strong. It feels like it is not completely mature yet with a lot of space for improvement."

Luo Duo's face changed abruptly, as he faced up against Jian Chen's punch. He immediately lifted his sword horizontally to block.

Clang! Jian Chen's heavy fist stuck the Saint Weapon and created an earth-shaking sound. The terrifying energy immediately caused Luo Duo's sword to deform slightly, while a great force was transmitted through it. It shook Luo Duo's right arm until it numbed. Then, that hand became powerless. The huge sword struck his chest heavily from the great collision and shattered several of his ribs.

Luo Duo spurted a mouthful of blood, as he was immediately knocked backward. He became pale, no heavily injured, but a pure-white piece of jade had already appeared in his hand as he flew

backwards. He crushed it without any hesitation.



# Chapter 1025: Fighting the Imperial Protectors of the Felicity Empire

---

Luo Duo revealed a relaxed smile after the piece of jade had been shattered. Even though he was heavily injured, he had no need to worry about his life.

Before Luo Duo had come to the Longqi Kingdom, he had thought about everything that could happen, so he made plenty of preparations. He found the other Imperial Protectors of the Felicity Empire and got them to help out when he was in a crucial moment. The crushing of the jade earlier was the method to contact them.

Although the Longqi Kingdom was very distant from the Felicity Empire, the distance was a piece of cake to a Saint King. They could arrive with any Space Gate they ripped open.

Luo Duo stabilized after flying for several thousand meters. He vomited another mouthful of blood since he could not hold it in. Jian Chen's punch was equivalent to the full-powered strike of a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King. Although he had only withstood a small portion of it, it was still enough to become heavily injured.

The Imperial Protectors of the Longqi Kingdom could not help but reveal different expressions when they saw how Luo Duo had been heavily injured by Jian Chen from just a few clashes. They all revealed extremely ugly expressions.

Luo Duo was what their kingdom relied on the most. He was the

pride of the kingdom, so if even he was not their opponent, the kingdom no longer possessed any more power to contend with the people of the Bloodsword sect.

Jian Chen hovered high up in the air as he stared coldly at Luo Duo. He coldly said as well, “Sir, if you only have that much strength, you might not be able to make the people of the Bloodsword sect stay behind forever today.”

Luo Duo was shocked with Jian Chen’s strength, but he maintained a sneer, “Sect master of the Bloodsword sect, you are indeed very powerful. I am nowhere near your enemy, but the interesting parts will occur near the end.”

The space before Luo Duo began to twist violently as soon as he finished speaking, quickly forming a Space Gate. Immediately, two presences even more powerful than Luo Duo began to radiate from within. They surged out like two angered dragons, twisting and turning recklessly in the surroundings. They flooded the entire region.

Before the two powerful presences, the air stopped moving and so did the energy of the world. Even the invisible World Force calmed down.

Two white-robed, ruddy old men emerged from the Space Gate. Their eyes glowed like torches as they sharply glanced over Jian Chen before stopping on Luo Duo.

Their expressions changed at the same time when they saw the

horrible shape that Luo Duo was in. They took a step and silently appeared before him. One of them asked with a deep voice, “Luo Duo, are you fine? Who injured you like this?”

“Imperial Protector Fang Yan, Imperial Protector Ta Ji, the one who injured me is the new sect master of the Bloodsword sect. I am not his opponent, so please redeem my honor for me, Imperial Protectors.” Luo Duo’s voice was extremely hoarse.

Fang Yan patted Luo Duo’s shoulder and said, “We’re all one family, so why be so polite? Don’t worry, I’ll help you.” He then looked at Jian Chen’s group and said, “May I ask who the new sect master of the Bloodsword sect is?” Although that was what he had said, his gaze focused on Jian Chen. He had already determined that Luo Duo was injured by Jian Chen with where he was standing.

Jian Chen’s expression remained the same. He clasped his hands indifferently and said, “I am the new sect master of the Bloodsword sect. Is there any areas you have a problem with and you’d like to criticize?” Jian Chen could already tell that the two Saint Kings that had come to support Luo Duo were of the Fifth and Sixth Heavenly Layer. They did not pose a threat to him.

Fang Yan’s expression sank slightly. He said, “I am not worthy of giving criticism, but not only has the sect leader trespassed in the territory of the Felicity Empire, you’ve even injured an Imperial Protector of our empire. If you don’t give us an explanation for this matter, do we, the Felicity Empire, still have any dignity?”

Jian Chen’s eyes immediately lit up when he heard that they

were actually from the Felicity Kingdom. He said, “You’re actually from the Felicity Kingdom, perfect. Is Bi Jian a part of your empire?”

“He is indeed. Our empire just happens to have this person. May I ask about your relationship with him?” Fang Yan stared fixedly at Jian Chen.

“He’s an enemy; someone who must be killed!” Jian Chen growled. As he spoke, a powerful killing intent radiated from his body.

The two imperial protectors changed in expression when they heard what Jian Chen had said. Ta Ji took a step and advanced until he was only a hundred meters away with an extremely sharp presence. He growled, “Sect master of the Bloodsword sect, looks like you’re purposefully trying to become enemies with our Felicity Empire. If that’s the case, allow me, Ta Ji, to witness your strength and to see if you’re on Houston’s level or not, to speak in such an arrogant fashion.” Ta Ji extended a finger and the energy of the world in the surroundings immediately became abnormally energetic after it had just calmed down with their arrival. It gathered at the tip of his finger with unbelievable speed, condensing into an extremely powerful attack that shot towards Jian Chen.

Ta Ji’s strength was at the Sixth Heavenly Layer of Saint King. He was stronger than Fang Yan. Jian Chen could no longer deal with such a powerful attack as easily as he had dealt with Luo Duo. He immediately removed his Emperor Armament from his Space Ring, directly stabbing out with lightning speed.

A gray light shot from the tip of Jian Chen's Emperor Armament. It ripped the surrounding space with an aura of destruction as it shot towards Ta Ji with great speed.

The gray sword Qi advanced with no hindrance, traveling through Ta Ji's finger attack of World Force before continuing on towards Ta Ji with no reduction in force.

Ta Ji's complexion changed. He had never thought that the new sect master would be so powerful. He immediately became much more cautious. At the same time, extremely powerful Saint Force surged wildly out of his body, quickly condensing into a long sword that was three fingers wide in his right hand. Afterwards, he chopped out with lightning speed, shooting out a powerful and sharp sword Qi which collided with Jian Chen's attack.

Boom! A great sound rocked the area as the two sword Qis collided. The powerful residual energy caused the surrounding space to tremble non-stop.

Ta Ji's sword Qi disappeared mid-air, dispersing in the form of basic energy. The sword Qi condensed from Chaotic Force remained fine, continuing towards Ta Ji and arriving before him in the blink of an eye.

Ta Ji's expression abruptly changed. It was already too late for him to dodge, so all he could do was hold his sword horizontal before him.

A great boom exploded as soon as the Chaotic Force sword Qi collided with Ta Ji's Saint Weapon.

Ta Ji was knocked back uncontrollably. He flew for over ten kilometers before stabilizing himself. He was in shock, completely shocked by the strength of the new sect master of the Bloodsword sect. Even with his strength as a Saint King at the Sixth Heavenly Layer, he struggled against a single sword Qi from him, which filled him with disbelief. The new sect master was just too strong.

"Imperial Protector Ta Ji's actually been knocked back by a single sword Qi from the new sect master. This is impossible. Have I seen wrong? Imperial Protector Ta Ji is a Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint King." Luo Duo stared at Ta Ji in disbelief as his eyes bulged. His heart began to churn.

"Emperor Armament. It's actually an Emperor Armament!" Fang Yan cried out. He stared unblinkingly at the weapon in Jian Chen's hand as deep envy and shock leaked through his eyes.

Ta Ji wielded his sword with his right hand and fused with the surroundings space. He arrived beside Fang Yan over ten kilometers away with a single step and stared at Jian Chen's Emperor Armament in interest. Only after a while did he sigh in surprise, "It really is an Emperor Armament. The power of Emperor Armaments really are just too powerful. The reason the sect master can knock me back with a single attack is all because of the Emperor Armament. If you didn't have it, you definitely would not be my opponent."

Fang Yan's eyes grew cold and he said, "Ta Ji, since we're not the

sect master's opponents on our own, let's work together. We cannot let the prestige of the Felicity Empire fall here no matter what."

"Sure!" Ta Ji agreed without any extra thought. A surging presence began to radiate from him as he charged at Jian Chen with Fang Yan at the same time.

Jian Chen's gaze grew cold as well. He said, "I've held back with the previous attack, but since you have no idea what you should and shouldn't do, it's no longer my fault." Jian Chen's presence suddenly changed as soon as he finished speaking. In that moment, he seemed to have become a peerless divine sword. Extremely sharp sword Qi radiated from him all over and his arm holding the Emperor Armament suddenly shook. He chopped out mercilessly, producing a sword Qi that ripped through space as it shot at Fang Yan.

The strike was equivalent to the full-powered attack from a Saint King of the Seventh Heavenly Layer. Wherever it passed, space would rip, and from afar, it seemed like a streak of black light shooting through the sky.

After that, Jian Chen charged up with his sword. He continued towards the more powerful Ta Ji as his Emperor Armament glowed with a blinding dark light. He stabbed out three times with a devastating aura.

The three strike were extremely fast. Each and every one of them left behind a blur, and it seemed like he had struck out three times all at the same time.

Fang Yan was only a Saint King at the Fifth Heavenly Layer, so how could he resist a sword Qi from Jian Chen who was equal to a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King? He was heavily injured by the attack. The sword Qi passed through his chest, leaving behind a clear hole.

Ta Ji became extremely stern-faced as he dealt with the three strikes from Jian Chen. He used everything he had as a Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint King, pouring everything into resisting Jian Chen's three attacks. However, due to their difference in strength, Ta Ji only managed to block two of the attacks. The third strike pierced his heart, causing his entire body to be impaled by the sword.

Bam! Jian Chen kicked Ta Ji's chest along the way and knocked him far away as he vomited blood.

In the blink of an eye, all the supporting Imperial Protectors of the Felicity Kingdom had been heavily injured by Jian Chen.

"No, impossible!" Luo Duo and the four Imperial Protectors of the Longqi Kingdom all paled when they saw what had happened. Fear began to quickly rise in their hearts.



# Chapter 1026: The Great Divination Technique

---

Ta Ji and Fang Yan hovered in the air with pale faces. Residual blood remained on the corner of their lips while their snow-white robes had been dyed red with blood. They seemed to be extremely miserable.

Jian Chen did not kill Ta Ji and Fang Yan. The Tian Yuan Continent would be facing a disaster in the near future. Ta Ji and Fang Yan were Fifth and Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings, so they would be apart of the major force that would repel the invasion from the World of Forsaken Saints.

“The two of you are nowhere near my opponent. Go. You are not to interfere with any matters of the Bloodsword sect today. Otherwise, you will be taking the Bloodsword sect on as an enemy,” Jian Chen said as he put the Emperor Armament away.

Ta Ji and Fang Yan looked at each other. They were both troubled, and they glanced at Luo Duo who was also heavily injured. They produced a soft sigh and said nothing else, directly ripping open a Space Gate and leaving through it.

The both of the knew that Jian Chen possessed the ability to kill them from the battle before, but he showed mercy in the end. This was why they did not throw down any threats before leaving.

Ta Ji and Fang Yan left together, returning to the Felicity Empire. Luo Duo lost his greatest insurance with their departure,

so his face also became bleak. However, a gleam of light flickered through his eyes very quickly and without any hesitation, he ripped open the surrounding space to create a Space Gate.

However, before it had completely formed, Jian Chen suddenly appeared beside him and he punched at the gate. He caused space to shake violently, forcefully preventing the Space Gate's formation.

“You have extremely strong killing intent for the Bloodsword sect. If I let you go today, you will definitely cause great harm to the Bloodsword sect once you become powerful, so you better stay behind today.” Jian Chen's presence surged as he coldly stared at Luo Duo. Afterwards, he punched Luo Duo's chest, causing it to cave in completely. His ribs and organs turned to mush.

Mouthfuls of blood spurted from Luo Duo. He endured his injuries and icily stared at Jian Chen. He called out, “I am an Imperial Protector of the Felicity Empire! If you kill me, the Felicity Empire will definitely flatten your Bloodsword sect! Houston will be passing away soon! He cannot protect the Bloodsword sect!”

Jian Chen's face immediately sank with that. Killing intent surged in his eyes as he growled, “You're looking to die for disrespecting uncle Xiu!” Jian Chen radiated with a terrifying killing intent as he pursued Luo Duo. A faint layer of Chaotic Force covered the surface of his fist as he struck Luo Duo's head.

Luo Duo's head exploded with Jian Chen's angry punch. His soul was wiped out before it could even flee.

Luo Duo had never thought that he had sped up his own death instead of saving his life with what he had just said even as he died.

“Imperial Protector Luo Duo!” The four Imperial Protectors of the Longqi Kingdom all witnessed Luo Duo’s death. They all stared wide-eyed, torn between grief.

Jian Chen glanced at the Imperial Protectors torn between sadness and anger. Perhaps due to the fact that his increase in strength affected his mind, he did not bother to deal with the four Saint Rulers of the Longqi Kingdom. That was, of course, given that there was no irresolvable disagreements between them.

Jian Chen did not look at the Saint Rulers again as he flew towards the imperial palace. He had already locked onto old man Situ’s and Mateng’s presence.

The four protectors of the Bloodsword sect did not bother with the Imperial Protectors when they saw how Jian Chen did not try to make things difficult for them. One of them removed Luo Duo’s Space Ring from his finger, before following Jian Chen toward a desolate area within the imperial palace.

Currently, old man Situ and Mateng leaned against the door in fear, peeping through a tiny slit to see the situation outside. They gently trembled as their lips jittered. They were filled with deep fear.

The two of them had witnessed the battle in the sky as they hid.

They were naturally familiar with Jian Chen's appearance since they had chased him down in the City of God before. They had just witnessed Jian Chen heavily injure two Saint Kings consecutively, as well as kill one without any difficulties. They were deeply astounded by his strength, struggling to accept it all as true.

"S-S- Situ, d-d- do you think th-th- that he's actually Jian Chen?" Old man Mateng said through a communication technique. His teeth loudly chattered, producing an audible sound.

"We're done, we're done. We're done this time. How did Jian Chen's strength suddenly become so great? I clearly remember that he was not as strong as the two of us when we first met him in the City of God." Old man Situ's face had completely drained of blood. In that moment, deep fear had replaced all his other emotions.

Suddenly, old man Mateng's expression change. He cried out, "Sh\*t, they're heading in our direction. How did I forget? The experts of the Bloodsword sect have methods to find us. Run!" The two old men no longer bothered to conceal their presences. They shot through the roof, fleeing into the distance with their greatest speed.

Jian Chen's killing intent immediately began to explode through his attempts to suppress it when he saw the murderers of his parents. His killing intent began to permeate the surroundings, causing the temperature to plummet. He yelled out, "Do you really think you can flee before me?" Jian Chen's voice was extremely loud and clear. It suddenly shook the sky like a clap of thunder. It was deafening.

Old man Situ and Mateng froze. They immediately began to tremble from Jian Chen's voice and unconsciously stopped. They were filled with fear. Before Saint Kings, they could not even flee with their current strength.

Jian Chen ran over from afar with a dark face. A tremendous presence had already locked onto the two old men, making them feel like a mountain currently sat on them. They even struggled to breathe.

Suddenly, the two old men fell to their knees at the same time. They constantly bowed to Jian Chen as they begged, "Senior Jian Chen, please let us go. This matter really has nothing to do with us. It was all secretly organized by the tiger king of the Gilligan clan. If we didn't listen to him, he would have killed us. Senior Jian Chen, the prime culprit is not us but the tiger king. We're just a chess piece in the tiger king's hands."

"Yeah, senior Jian Chen. We're just a chess piece in the tiger king's hands. We didn't have a choice either. It's useless even if you kill us, so please forgive us as the bigger person. If you want revenge, go find the tiger king. He's your true enemy," old man Mateng copied old man Situ by loudly pleading. He acted like he was wronged. He sounded as pitiful as he needed to be.

Jian Chen coldly stared at the two old men. His killing intent increased instead of reducing, and he slowly drew the Emperor Armament from his Space Ring.

Jian Chen could not let the two murderers of his parents all those years ago die so easily.

The two old men became even more frightened when Jian Chen drew his Emperor Armament. With a flurry of hands, they pulled thing after thing out of their Space Rings.

“Senior Jian Chen, if you let us go, we will give you everything in our possession. These Class 7 Monster Cores, these vast quantities of purple coins, and this wondrous Great Divination Technique will all belong to you.”

“Yeah, yeah, yeah, yeah. Senior Jian Chen, the Great Divination Technique is an ancient, divine book. The two of us obtained it by risking our lives in an extremely dangerous place. The value of this book far exceeds the lives of us two old men. We will use it to exchange for our lives. Senior Jian Chen won’t be losing anything in this deal.”

The two old men both held part of a booklet in their hands. They raised their respective parts high above their heads in a courteous manner. The two booklets seemed to belong together but had been separated.

“Nothing you say will work. I must kill you today,” Jian Chen emphasized each syllable as he spoke. His tone was icy-cold, and as soon as he finished speaking, he immediately stabbed out. His arm shook, and the Emperor Armament turned into a wall of blurs that enveloped the two old men. He stabbed out countless times in a short instance. Each stroke moved at an unbelievable speed. The blurs stacked upon each other, filling up the space in a dense

fashion. It was impossible to tell whether a blur was actually the sword or just a fake.

“Argh!!”

The two old men miserably shrieked. Blood and flesh scattered into the space filled with the blurs, turning the air into a bloody mist which drifted through the sky. The air around them was dyed red.

The two old men constantly shrieked, growing more and more miserable as the pain became more and more agonizing. It was chilling.

A while later, Jian Chen finally stopped. Other than their heads, the two old men had reduced to red skeletons from the neck below. They had been carved alive with no flesh left. Even their organs had completely disappeared.

The Saint Weapons within their dantians had been destroyed by Jian Chen. Currently, the two of them floated in the air completely dependent on Jian Chen's ability to freeze space, or they would have fallen.

“Jian Chen, if you want to kill, then kill. Why torture us like this,” old man Situ angrily roared with his hoarse voice. He could not endure the torture. It was not something humans could endure.

“It won’t be that easy if you want me to kill you in a single stroke. I will repay the debt of blood with interest from all those years ago. I will carve you into pieces and tear you into shreds,” Jian Chen gnashed his teeth. Afterwards, his Emperor Armament began to move once more, slowly carving away their bones.

Jian Chen tortured the two old men for four whole hours. When only their heads were left, he wiped out their souls, allowing them to disperse permanently.

Jian Chen slowly put the Emperor Armament away and raised his head to look at the blue sky. After that, he deeply exhaled. Only now were all the murderers of his parents dead. He had finally completed this journey of revenge for his parents.



# Chapter 1027: A Book of a Way

---

Although the two old men had died in such a cruel fashion, it was far from enough to make up for the pain they had brought to Jian Chen when they killed his parents. Jian Chen knew that if the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect had not arrived in time, perhaps the entire clan would have been wiped out.

The strong eat the weak. This was the law of survival in this world, with nothing to be discussed or debated. Strength was the greatest decider of authority.

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian stood silently behind Jian Chen with the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect. Their expressions remained the same. The bloodshed they had once experienced was nowhere near anything Jian Chen could imagine. They had seen everything, so the scene before them could be described as just too common to them.

A long while later, Jian Chen slightly calmed down. He lowered his head to look at the ground before quickly descending to the ground.

The Great Divination Technique lay quietly on the ground since it had fallen from the hands of the two old men. Its old, yellowed pages gently flipped in the breeze, revealing a large face of tiny characters.

With a gesture, the parts of the book were immediately affected by an invisible force as they slowly flew into Jian Chen's hands.

Jian Chen examined the two booklets and discovered that they were several pages made out of an unknown material bound together by golden thread. The pages were extremely pliable yet extremely difficult to destroy. They possessed marks left behind by time, so no one knew just how long they had existed.

The two booklets really did form one book, but it had been separated by the two old men by untying the golden thread. They each carried an incomplete portion of it, and only when they were put together did they form the complete book.

“Just what is this book to be described in such a great fashion by two Saint Rulers?” Jian Chen mumbled before putting the two booklets together. He flipped to the first page and began reading.

Jian Chen’s eyes gradually lit up as he flipped through the pages. His calm heart also began to beat heavily. He became slightly excited before involuntarily sighing in shock in the end, “This really is a divine book. It’s so wondrous!”

The Great Divination Technique was not some powerful battle skill or cultivation manual, but an extremely wondrous book. The reason why it was so wondrous was because it could forecast the future and penetrate the supreme laws of the world, allowing the user to see the end. It could also help the user find the person the user was looking for, or the answer the user wanted to know.

“It’s too wondrous. It’s just too wondrous. I never thought that there would be such a wonderful book in the world. This is unbelievable,” Jian Chen praised. He was very surprised. The Great Divination Technique was basically heaven-defying. As soon

as someone mastered the technique, nothing could trap them since they knew everything. They could pierce through the multiple obstructions and illusions to see the truth. No scheme would work against someone who mastered it. They would even be able to see through a person's past and future incarnations.

The Great Divination Technique was recorded in words at the front, and towards the end, it became a mixture of simple-looking yet complicated lines and pictures. Jian Chen's soul suddenly shook when he saw the lines and pictures, and a weird feeling filled his head at that moment. The lines and images seemed to fuse with the surroundings, combining with nature. They seemed simple, yet they hid an infinite number of mysteries. They were profound.

"The Great Divination Technique is mystical, but it's extremely difficult to learn. To forecast the future would need an extremely deep comprehension of it," Jian Chen thought. He could already understand how profound it was from the text at the beginning.

"A book of a way. It's actually a book of a way!" Suddenly, the sword spirits' voices rang out in Jian Chen's head. Their voices were filled with amazement, as if something extremely unexpected had happened.

"A book of a way? Zi Ying, Qing Suo, what's a book of a way?" Jian Chen immediately communicated with the sword spirits due to his curiosity.

"Master, a book of a way is a book that describes a way. It is referred to differently in different places, and it's called the laws of

the world here,” Qing Suo explained.

“Does that mean that the lines and images recorded near the end of the book are laws?” Jian Chen was rather surprised.

“Correct, master. There are many ways out there. Different people can record different ways with different methods, such as the book in your hand. The author’s completely recorded a way using lines and images. It seems simple, but it’s extremely difficult to comprehend. However, the book is a recording of the rarely-seen Way of Divination.”

“In the world we originally came from, there were extremely few people who comprehended the Way of Divination. Even describing it as rare as a phoenix’s feather would be too much because the Way of Divination is just too hard to comprehend, and it’s not offensive in nature, so very few people take that route. The people who do take that route are extremely weak in battle. Even if they comprehend it to the utmost peak, they can’t defeat people at a cultivation level lower than them. It’s a route nowhere near the beaten path,” Zi Ying explained.

Jian Chen’s excitement immediately disappeared with that. He sank into his thoughts. All the joy he had from obtaining the technique completely disappeared.

“Zi Ying, Qing Suo, are you saying that I shouldn’t comprehend the details of the Great Divination Technique?” Jian Chen asked after some thought.

“Master, the Great Divination Technique is indeed useless to other people since comprehending the Way of Divination in a world filled with battle would just be seeking death. Once people start fighting, anyone who comprehended this way would definitely be at a disadvantage. They will die very easily to their opponents. However, master does not walk a path of cultivation similar to ordinary people, so master still needs to comprehend the Way of Divination,” said Zi Ying.

“I need to comprehend it? Why?” Jian Chen asked in confusion.

“Master, the eighteen layers of the Chaotic Body are only a way for Zi Ying and me to get you to have a deeper understanding of how the Chaotic Body is divided. Actually, the Chaotic Body is divided into four major levels in our original world: minor achievement, partial achievement, major achievement, and great perfection. The first six layers are part of the minor achievement, the seventh layer to the twelfth layer is part of the partial achievement, the thirteenth layer to the eighteen layer is part of the major achievement. Great perfection is for those who have surpassed the eighteen layers, and it is the highest level of the Chaotic Body. However, no one has reached it before.”

“Does that mean that my Chaotic Body is only half way through the minor achievement, and that I’m still quite far from the peak of minor achievement?” Jian Chen thought.

“Master, the minor achievement of the Chaotic Body only requires energy to cultivate, but once you reach partial achievement, you need to comprehend ways, or laws of the world, to continue your increase in strength. As for great perfection of the

Chaotic Body, it requires the comprehension of three thousand great ways. Only by making the three thousand great ways a source can someone reach great perfection and refine true Chaotic Force. As a result, master needs to comprehend the Way of Divination,” Zi Ying explained.

Jian Chen finally felt a little better. He mumbled inside, “Looks like I can’t benefit from the Great Divination Technique that I just obtained at all right now. The great perfection of the Chaotic Body is just too far away from me right now, so I’ll consider it in the future.”

Great perfection was a level that surpassed the eighteen layers. With Jian Chen’s current level at the third layer, he dared not to hold wild wishes for it.

After communicating with the sword spirit, Jian Chen placed the Great Divination Technique into his Space Ring. Although the fact that the technique contained the method to know everything in the world and it did tempt him, Jian Chen also knew that reaching a high level of comprehension of the technique would be extremely difficult. It would take up an extremely great amount of time, yet he had not even dealt with the matters at hand, so right now was not the time to comprehend.

# Chapter 1028: The Ancestral Emperor

---

Jian Chen calmed down and removed the Space Rings from the two old men before rejoining Rui Jin and the others in the air. He said, “Senior Rui Jin, I want to go to the Felicity Empire next. Please create a Space Gate for me.”

Rui Jin did not turn down Jian Chen’s request and instead agreed to it without any hesitation, “I just happen to have looked into the territories of the three great empires, so I know their precise locations.” With that, Rui Jin extended a finger and swung it casually. The space ripped open, quickly forming a Space Gate.

Jian Chen stared unblinkingly at Rui Jin’s ordinary and simple action. His eyes shined with interest as he seemed to be deep in thought. He already knew that he would not be able to undergo breakthroughs as easily as before once he reached partial achievement and that every layer would require the comprehension of the laws of the world. As a result, he paid close attention to how Rui Jin ripped open space.

“Not only does senior Rui Jin’s action of ripping open space contain his comprehension of the laws of space, it also possesses the control of power. Space is a law while energy also has its own way. Looks like I’ve already begun to interact with the laws when I was a Saint Ruler, except that it was just a smattering of it,” Jian Chen mumbled inside.

“Once I deal with the matters on hand, I’ll immediately go to Mercenary City and get Xiao Ling to invoke the mysteries of the world for me to comprehend. I’ll work hard on increasing my

strength.”

Jian Chen and the others, including the four protectors, immediately stepped through the Space Gate and disappeared from the air above the Longqi Kingdom as soon as it had formed. You Yue had already been sent into the artifact space when Jian Chen fought with the Saint Kings before.

The Felicity Empire was one of the three great empires of the continent. It possessed a lengthy history and had two of the seven capital cities of the continent, the City of the Heavenly Spirits and Thunder City. The City of the Heavenly Spirits was the imperial capital of the empire, where the imperial palace was located.

As the imperial capital of the Felicity Empire, the prosperity of the City of Heavenly Spirits was naturally self-evident. Countless organizations consisting of large and small clans filled every space within the city walls. Experts gathered and were as common as clouds.

However, there was one exception. There was a huge mixture of people within the city walls of the imperial capital, but it was governed very well, so there were extremely few cases of violence.

Jian Chen’s group appeared in the air above the city after passing through the Spatial Gate. They looked down at the land below them and with a rough scan, they found where the imperial palace was. They immediately flew in that direction.

Currently, the pale-faced Fang Yan and Ta Ji, who had just come



back from the Longqi Kingdom, sat on cushions as they meditated in a majestic hall within the palace. Before them sat a middle-aged man in a set of luxurious, gilded robes. His face was dark as he angrily glared at Fang Yan and Ta Ji.

The man was extremely handsome, and the presence of a ruler radiated from him. He was filled with prestige.

He was an Imperial Protector of the Felicity Empire as well, and he was stronger than Fang Yan and Ta Ji. He was at the peak of the Seventh Heavenly Layer as well as an emperor who had abdicated several years ago. He was a member of the imperial family.

“The Bloodsword sect is just too arrogant for injuring the Imperial Protectors of my Felicity Empire. How dare they! And I can feel that Imperial Protector Luo Duo’s presence has disappeared. He must have suffered a mishap. Hmph, the Bloodsword sect is going too far. Do they really think that they can trample all over the dignity of the empire just because they have Houston supporting them?” The middle-aged man growled unhappily.

The Felicity Empire was one of the three great empires of the continent, and even among ancient clans, there were not many that could rival them. As a result, they treated their dignity with more importance than anything else. The Bloodsword sect had heavily injured two of their Imperial Protectors regardless of the consequences and even killed one. It was not something that the Felicity Empire could bear with.

Saint Kings were the central force of the empire, so Luo Duo’s

death was an extremely heavy loss. Even with the entire empire in perspective, they could count the number of Saint Kings with their fingers, so Saint Kings were not something they could obtain just because they wanted to.

The middle-aged man immediately rose up from his cushion as icy-cold light flickered in his eyes. He growled, "Houston actually dares to offend my Felicity Empire like this right before he's about to pass away. Looks like he's trying to do something big before he dies. If that's the case, we'll strike first and wipe out his sect."

"Dealing with the Bloodsword sect with the strength of our empire is naturally not a problem, but how do we deal with Houston? And other than Houston, there's a new sect leader. He's extremely powerful when he wields an Emperor Armament and definitely has the capacity to fight you," Ta Ji said with a deep voice.

"I'll keep the new sect master busy. We can get the Ancestral Emperor to deal with Houston. Although the Ancestral Emperor's slightly weaker than Houston, Zaar Caiyun of the Zaar clan and Hao Wu from the Holy Empire still owe me a favor. I'll go to the Holy Empire this instance to find them, so they can assist the Ancestral Emperor. I think the three of them should be more enough to deal with Houston," the middle-aged man said. However, his eyes suddenly froze when he finished speaking, and he quickly raised his head.

Very quickly, Ta Ji and Fang Yan sensed it as well. They looked into the distance, and their expressions immediately became ugly, "It's the new sect master of the Bloodsword sect. He's actually

come to our Felicity Empire.”

With that, a sharp light flashed across the middle-aged man’s eyes and he snorted, “Perfect. New sect master, I’d like to see what you want to do today.” With that, the middle-aged man strode towards the outside.

“You cannot go!” At this moment, an old voice boomed in the hall. It was filled with an absolute prestige that could not be denied.

The middle-aged man came to a stop and turned around. He saw that a sage-like old man had appeared on the highest throne within the hall at some point.

The man’s expression slightly changed, becoming filled with respect. He bowed to the old man with Ta Ji and Fang Yan, “I greet the Ancestral Emperor!”

The old man was the Ancestral Emperor of the Felicity Empire. He was already over five thousand years of age and was the oldest member of the imperial family.

The Ancestral Emperor within the royal family of the empire did not refer to the founding emperor, but the oldest and most powerful past emperor. There would always be one, just one.

“You all stay here and go nowhere. Do not interfere with the matter outside,” the Ancestral Emperor nonchalantly commanded.

However, he was looking outside; his profound gaze seemed to be able to look through the various structures and obstructions to see Jian Chen's group.

Jian Chen and the others flew toward the imperial palace of the empire, landing on a roof of a hall.

“Who has come!? Why do you not come through the main entrance!? Do you not know the rules of the empire!?”

The four protectors of the Bloodsword sect radiated with Baleful Yin Force, so it was extremely hard for them to conceal themselves. As soon as Jian Chen's group landed, a loud call rang from the palace. Several Saint Rulers began to radiate with tremendous presences as they threateningly flew to where Jian Chen and the others were, encircling them.

At the same time, all the guards of the palaces moved, surging out in all directions like a tide. They formed a sea of people very soon, surrounding the area where Jian Chen and the others stood.

A Saint Ruler glanced past the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect and growled, “Are you from the Bloodsword sect?”

The four protectors said nothing, as if they had not heard the question at all. Jian Chen scanned the Saint Rulers coldly with an expressionless face and icily asked, “Where is Bi Jian?! Come up quickly for your death!?” Although Jian Chen spoke very softly, it resounded throughout the entire imperial palace.

Immediately, another twenty-odd Saint Ruler presences began to radiate from various places of the palace. They all quickly approached Jian Chen's group, joining the encirclement. All of them seemed to carry ill intentions.

Without a doubt, what Jian Chen had said had expressed the fact that he had come to the imperial palace of the Felicity Empire to make trouble. They were enemies.

“Who are you to come make trouble for the imperial palace? Do you think that you have lived too long so you want to die earlier?”

“Brat, you're the first one to come make trouble at the imperial palace in recent years. If you're sensible, tie yourself up and go plead for forgiveness from the emperor. He might spare your life.”

...

The Saint Rulers around Jian Chen all called out. Although they knew that Jian Chen's group was not easy to be trifled with, they were in the imperial palace of the empire. It was their territory, and they had quite a few Imperial Protectors inside.

Jian Chen's face slightly sank, “I have no intentions of becoming your enemies. I have only come with intention of killing Bi Jian. Will you be handing him over or not?”

“How dare you look down on the dignity of the empire. It doesn't matter who you are. You have committed unforgivable crimes.

Let's capture these troublemakers and pass them to the emperor for judgement," a Saint Ruler called out. He was a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler and seemed to be extremely prestigious among the group of people. The other Saint Rulers all began moving after he spoke.

"Stop!" At this moment, an old voice boomed from the depths of the imperial palace, though the owner of the voice was not present. It was filled with absolute prestige and could not be denied.

The Saint Rulers that had gathered around Jian Chen immediately stopped. They gave a deep, polite bow to the depths of the palace. They did not know who exactly the speaker was, but they were certain that it was at least an Imperial Protector.

"Brother, my Felicity Empire has no ill will with you. May I ask why have you come to make trouble?" The old voice rang out once again. It was the Ancestral Emperor.

"A prince of your empire, Bi Jian, gathered several millions of mercenaries from many mercenary groups to take my city. Say, is this ill will?" Jian Chen replied with a deep voice. He felt no fear at all.

"So brother has come for that matter. From today on, Bi Jian will no longer be a member of the Felicity Empire. His life or death will have nothing to do with the empire. I hope we can clean the slate between us like that. How do you feel about that?" The Ancestral Emperor's tone was extremely amiable and without any hostility, as if he was trying to negotiate.

# Chapter 1029: Another Visit to the City of God

---

All the Saint Rulers around Jian Chen became stupefied when they heard what the Ancestral Emperor had said. At that moment, they struggled to believe what they had heard, actually doubting whether their ears had a problem or not.

The Felicity Empire was a powerful empire that had existed on the continent for countless years. It was extremely powerful. Its dignity was almost holy and could not be impinged upon. Anyone who dared to enter the empire in an attempt to cause trouble would be dealt with mercilessly, teaching that person a severe lesson. They had never been so flexible before, which was why everyone refused to believe what they heard.

The current emperor appeared outside a beautiful palace in dragon robes and a golden-violet crown. He stared at Jian Chen's group as a large group of experts protected him.

"Your majesty, just what is with the Imperial Protector today? Why is he negotiating with a troublemaker and even dismissing prince Bi Jian of his position? He's an extremely talented Saint Ruler. Not only has he comprehended a Saint Tier Battle Skill many Saint Kings have failed to grasp, he will definitely become a Saint King in the future as well. Are we really supposed to just abandon such a genius?" A valiant golden-armored, middle-aged man asked in confusion beside the emperor. The way the empire was treating its enemy today did not seem like what it would usually do.

The emperor stared into the depths of the palace as respect filled his face. He mumbled, “It’s the voice of the Ancestral Emperor. The Ancestral Emperor must have his reasons for doing this.”

“What! It’s the Ancestral Emperor...” The armored man’s face changed and immediately became courteous as well. Even the experts around the emperor reacted in similar fashions. Respect filled their faces and even a sliver of excitement appeared for some.

The Ancestral Emperor possessed a supreme status within the Felicity Emperor. Although he had abdicated several years ago, every single sentence from him was equivalent to an imperial edict. Not only could he make any decision for the entire empire, he could even dismiss the current emperor or any official in the government.

However, the Ancestral Emperor always stayed in the forbidden grounds near the back of the palace in cultivation, almost never interfering with anything. He would rarely appear even over the span of several hundred years, and there were rarely any people who had the right to personally visit him. All the people only heard of the story of his existence, which was why so many people became so shocked when they learned that the old voice from the depths of the palace belonged to the Ancestral Emperor.

Jian Chen smiled with what the Ancestral Emperor had said. He clasped his hands to the depths and loudly said, “Senior truly is a decisive person. Since Bi Jian is no longer a member of the Felicity Empire, I naturally will have no problems with the empire. However, please hand over Bi Jian to me.”



“Brother, Bi Jian is not in the imperial palace right now. If you want to find him, you might as well go to the Holy Empire. You can find him there,” said the Ancestral Emperor.

“The Holy Empire,” Jian Chen mumbled. He had not thought that Bi Jian had actually run off to the Holy Emperor, but he immediately followed up with, “The Holy Empire is so big, finding someone would be almost impossible. May I ask senior of the precise location?”

“The Zaar family in the City of God,” replied the Ancestral Emperor.

A gleam of light immediately flashed across Jian Chen’s eyes when he heard that. He thought back to the moment when he had faced enemies from everywhere due to the Zaar family, which caused his face to slightly sink.

“Senior, I thank you for tell me. Farewell!” Jian Chen clasped his fists at the depths of the palace before leaving with Rui Jin and the others.

“Brother, our Felicity Empire wishes to be eternal friends with you. If brother has some time in the future, you are welcome to come visit the empire,” the Ancestral Emperor’s voice rang out once more. The voice traveled very far, landing clearly in Jian Chen’s ears.

Jian Chen’s group traveled far from the imperial palace before leaving through a Space Gate Rui Jin created. They directly made

their way to the Holy Empire.

A middle-aged man looked at the seated Ancestral Emperor in confusion within a beautiful hall after Jian Chen had left. He asked, “Ancestral Emperor, why must we speak in such a humble manner to them? Do we really fear the mere Bloodsword sect with our strength? As long as we work with Zaar Caiyun and Hao Wu, wiping out the Bloodsword sect would be easy.”

The Ancestral Emperor gently sighed with that, “It’s indeed possible to wipe out the Bloodsword sect with the Felicity Empire’s strength, but I never thought that it would be him who had become the sect master. It really is a surprise.” The Ancestral Emperor suddenly became stern and stared fixedly at the three people before him. He said, “Remember, the three of you, never have any conflicts with the Bloodsword sect in the future. If you come across anyone from there, you must treat them politely and you must not offend them. Do you understand?”

“Ancestral Emperor, just who is the new sect master to make someone as great as you be so cautious?” The middle-aged man was curious.

“He’s someone we can’t offend. In all of recent history, he’s the only one who dared to provoke the ten protector clans while the protector clans could not do anything to him. At the same time, he’s a person who dares to swagger recklessly throughout the entire continent after offending the only human Saint Emperor and two Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent.” With that, the Ancestral Emperor stared deeply at the three of them, “I think you should know who he is.”

The three Saint Kings in the hall became completely stunned with that. They all paled. Only now did they finally know who the person they had offended was. They had never seen Jian Chen, but his name was like a thunderclap to them.

Virtually no expert of the continent did not know the name Jian Chen. However, only a very few number of people had seen his appearance.

In the City of God, Bi Jian wore luxurious robes with gold linings as he conversed at ease with the grand elder of the Zaar family in a hall. He was smiling and possessed quite a striking demeanour.

However, no one knew that he was extremely nervous despite his composed exterior.

He had learned that Jian Chen had returned mightily several days ago and had taken back Flame City with lightning speed and claimed his father's life. He became filled with deep fear because of this. He knew Jian Chen would come looking for him, and he would not be forgiven.

Before, he had visited the Ancestral Emperor of the Felicity Emperor to request for him to deal with Jian Chen. However, he was turned down, which was why he had come to the Zaar family in the Holy Empire. He wanted to find experts to deal with Jian Chen.

“Grand elder, I’ve already stayed here for several days. May I ask

if the esteemed senior Zaar Caiyun is willing to meet with junior? Junior has important matters to inform senior of,” Bi Jian could no longer bear with it anymore, asking the grand elder again.

The grand elder was a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. He was stronger than Bi Jian and belonged to the Zaar family of the three great clans, but Bi Jian was the most talented prince, acknowledged by the public, of the nine princes in the Felicity Empire. He also knew a Saint Tier Battle Skill, so he treated Bi Jian extremely politely and courteously.

“Please do not worry, prince Bi Jian. I have already passed on your request to the ancestor. If ancestor wishes to see you, she will naturally send out the word, so please wait a few more days,” smiled the grand elder.

Bi Jian’s expression took an ugly turn. He had already waited here for several days, and if it were to continue like this, he would not be able to see the ancestor even after several months.

Suddenly, an idea flashed through Bi Jian’s head. He clasped his hands, “Grand elder, please pass this message onto senior Zaar Caiyun. Bi Jian is close with the Heavenly Enchantress and has learned of some matters of the past from her. This includes the intense love that senior Hao Wu and Zaar Caiyun once had. Junior has come this time to offer up a plan that can eliminate the estrangement between the two seniors and get the two back on good terms.”

The grand elder’s eyes froze when he heard that, and he immediately became stern. He stared fixedly at Bi Jian, “Prince Bi

Jian, is that true? If you trick the ancestor, the consequences will be extremely severe.”

“It is completely true!” Bi Jian swore.

“Bring him to me!”

The cold voice of a female rang through the hall as soon as Bi Jian finished speaking. However, it was impossible to discern its origin.

The grand elders hurriedly put down the teacup in his hand and stood up. He politely said, “Yes, ancestor.”

A hall that glimmered with violent light existed in a huge cavern below the estate of the Zaar family.

Bi Jian entered the deep underground through a tunnel under the grand elder’s lead. He directly entered a palace and stopped before a tightly-closed room of seclusion.

“Ancestor, I have brought Bi Jian under your orders,” the grand elder courteously informed her.

“Bi Jian stays. You can go!” A cold woman’s voice rang from the room. It was completely emotionless.

“Yes ancestor!” The grand elder politely replied before

immediately leaving.

“Bi Jian greets the esteemed senior Zaar Caiyun!” Bi Jian became polite as he stood outside the room, bowing deeply.

“Bi Jian, you say you have a method to mend my relationship with Hao Wu?”

“Yes. Bi Jian indeed has a method to mend the relationship. Senior Zaar Caiyun is welcome to try it,” Bi Jian cautiously answered. He was at his wits’ end.

“Speak! What is the method?” Zaar Caiyun’s voice rang out of the room again. This time, a sliver of urgency was present.

Just as Bi Jian wanted to speak, a tremendous presence suddenly appeared outside. It enveloped the entire City of God, such that even Bi Jian, who was underground, could clearly feel it.

On the surface, a Space Gate silently opened in the air. Jian Chen and the others emerged from it, levitating high up in the sky.

# Chapter 1030: Zaar Caiyun

---

Floating above the City of God, Jian Chen glanced past the slightly-familiar city. He could not help but think back to all the things that had happened when he was last here, revealing a sliver of reminiscence.

“Eight clans of the City of God, the Zaar family, I, Jian Chen, have returned. Back then, you sent all those experts to attack me, almost claiming my life. Today, I will look down on your city,” Jian Chen said with a deep voice. His eyes became icy as he spoke, and a tremendous presence began to radiate from him. It enveloped the entire city, and within it was his undisguised battle intent.

Many years ago, Jian Chen still needed to move around the City of God cautiously despite his extraordinary strength. There were many experts he could not afford to offend, but today, he could move brazenly about the city, publically challenging the authority of a capital of the continent.

Jian Chen’s presence alarmed all the people in the city. Everyone could feel it clearly, regardless of their strength, and those weaker felt like a huge boulder pressed down on their chests. They struggled to even breathe.

“What a great presence. Who is the owner of this presence? Are they challenging the city...” Various voices rang out around the city, while the empty streets became filled with people very quickly. In a moment, everyone surged out of their houses, and some people even looked at the sky as they stood on their roofs.

All the ancestors of the eight clans opened their eyes at the same time and stared outside in shock from their places of seclusion. Without the slightest hesitation, they stopped their cultivation and rose up, heading over with their greatest speed.

The president of the Radiant Saint Master Union sat on his bed in a luxurious room at the highest, most central part of the castle-like union.

Suddenly, he snapped his eyes open when the great presence surged in from outside. He immediately glanced in the direction of the presence through the window and furrowed his eyebrows. He mumbled with a deep voice, "What powerful presence. The owner must be at least a Saint King, and there's a great battle intent sandwiched in between. The battle intent's so great that very few people can be in possession of it even with the whole continent in perspective. Odd, who is this person? He's clearly challenging the Zaar family by releasing his battle intent so recklessly, but I don't seem to remember the Zaar family offending such a great expert before." Doubt filled his mind.

At this moment, the door was pushed open. The grand elder of the union sternly walked in from outside and began speaking as soon as he came in, "The person must have come to find trouble with the Zaar family. They're not weak. President, we might as well go and have a look. Let's hope they heavily injure the Zaar family and reduce the pressure the union is facing."

The president closely sensed the presence and seemed to be in deep thought. A sliver of suspicion gradually appeared on his face,



“Weird. Grand elder, why do I feel that this presence is somewhat familiar, as if I have met this person somewhere before, but out of all the impressions of Saint Kings I’ve come in contact with, there doesn’t seem to be someone who matches up to this presence. It really is odd. Just who is this person?”

The grand elder’s expression changed with that. A sliver of curiosity appeared on his face as he said, “Since you’ve mentioned it, I also feel somewhat familiar with this presence, but I can’t think of who it is. President, since we can’t tell who it is, why don’t we go together to see just who this person is?”

Afterwards, the president and grand elder left the union together with multiple Saint Rulers. They shot off in the direction of the presence with lightning-like speed.

An extremely ordinary-looking old man carefully wiped the tables and the single bookshelf in the Radiant Saint Tower of the union. Suddenly, the old man paused and a gleam of light immediately exploded in his eyes. He mumbled, “Looks like the City of God is going to get lively again. I wonder which expert the Zaar family has offended.” With that, the old man disappeared. He had turned into a faint blur, leaving the tower with lightning speed as he flew to the presence.

Jian Chen and the others floated silently several thousand meters in the air above the Zaar family. Soon afterwards, several tremendous presences appeared in the surroundings. They traveled extremely quick, arriving around Jian Chen in just a few seconds. They surrounded him a hundred meters away.

The Saint Rulers were the ancestors of the eight clans. They were all stern, staring at Jian Chen in caution. None of them dared to create a disturbance, as they could all tell that the young man before them was a Saint King from his presence alone. They could not afford to provoke him.

“May I inquire of the senior’s great name and exactly what has caused a misunderstanding with our City of God for senior to be so angry?” An ancestor clasped his hands at Jian Chen as he asked with an extremely polite tone.

Jian Chen coldly gazed past the ancestors of the eight clans. His gaze became extremely sharp, like a drawn sword. Wherever he gazed past, the people would feel like they were being stabbed, feeling a vague pain. His gaze caused them to shiver despite the warmth.

“Senior? Hahahaha, I never thought that I’d become a senior to you. People of the eight clans, have you really forgotten so quickly? Why don’t you open up your eyes and carefully look at who I am?” Jian Chen laughed. His tone was mocking.

With that, all the Saint Rulers began to examine Jian Chen. Very soon, one of them recognized him. His expression suddenly changed, becoming overwhelmed by disbelief. He cried out, “Y-you’re Yang Yutian. You’re Jian Chen.”

The other Saint Rulers’ expressions all changed as well when they heard Jian Chen’s name. Shock filled all of their eyes. They would have never connected this Saint King with a tremendous presence to that young man who had almost died in the City of God

all those years ago.

The ancestors all thought of something else other than this, which was the protector Changyang clan that supported Jian Chen. He was a member of the Changyang protector clan, so his status was incomparable to them.

At this moment, two streaks of white light tore through the air. They quickly flew over. It was the president and grand elder, arriving on clouds completely condensed from Radiant Saint Force with several experts following them.

“Yang Yutian! You’re Yang Yutian!” The president and grand elder both cried out when they recognized Jian Chen with a single glance. In that moment, they could no longer maintain their normal composure, both became shocked.

They would never have believed that the person with such a tremendous presence was the most outstanding genius in the history of the union, Yang Yutian.

Jian Chen also discovered the president and grand elder when they arrived. His gaze immediately became rather mixed with emotions, but he dismissed them very quickly. Right now was not the time for them to catch up.

“Jian Chen, have you come to my City of God to take revenge for what happened all those years ago?” A cold female voice rang out in the sky. As it reached the end, a middle-aged woman in a purple dress silently appeared in the air, standing far opposite of Jian

Chen.

“We greet senior!” All the ancestors of the eight clans bowed when they saw this woman. Their faces became filled with respect.

The woman was the ancestor of the Zaar family, Zaar Caiyun. She ignored the greetings of the eight clans and stared fixedly at Jian Chen’s group. When her gaze landed on Rui Jin and Hei Yu who stood behind Jian Chen, she immediately became extremely stern.

“You must be the ancestor of the Zaar clan. You wanted to take the Winged Tiger God from me back then and even wanted to kill me. Do you still remember?” Jian Chen coldly stared at Zaar Caiyun.

Zaar Caiyun could not help but think back to what had happened before. Her gaze towards Jian Chen became rather mixed, and she gently sighed, “Jain Chen, I never thought you’d become so powerful after just a few years. However, I had no choice in the matter before. The Winged Tiger God was on you, and the Beast God Continent wanted to invade the Tian Yuan Continent because of the Winged Tiger God. We could only try to give the Beast God Continent the Winged Tiger God to save the continent, or all life on it would have been wiped out for sure. Are you willing to see something like that happen?”

Jian Chen remained expressionless. He coldly said, “We can deal with our disagreements from years ago later. Ancestor of the Zaar family, I ask you, is the prince of the Felicity Empire, Bi Jian, with you?”

“Bi Jian is indeed with my Zaar family,” Zaar Caiyun gently replied. Her voice possessed no emotion.

“Hand over Bi Jian!” Jian Chen demanded.

# Chapter 1031: Fighting Zaar Caiyun (One)

---

As soon as Zaar Caiyun heard what Jian Chen said, her faced immediately changed. She said, “Jian Chen, I don’t care what disagreements you have with Bi Jian, but I hope you can resolve your differences in the future. I cannot hand Bi Jian to you right now.”

“Since you can’t hand over Bi Jian, I can only go and get him myself.” Jian Chen’s gaze became rather cold as great battle and killing intent surged from his body. It quickly skyrocketed while the Emperor Armament had appeared in his right hand. Destructive Chaotic Force slowly poured out, revolving around the weapon.

“Wait!” At this moment, an old voice hurriedly rang out. An old man who seemed to be in his seventies shot up from below, carrying a person in his hand. It was Bi Jian.

The Zaar family had a total of two Saint Kings. One was Zaar Caiyun while the other was the old man before them.

“Jian Chen, greetings,” the old man first greeted Jian Chen before continuing, “Jian Chen, I am Zaar Veimor. My Zaar family is willing to hand Bi Jian over to you. I hope we can dismiss any previous disagreements and enmity, and we are willing to apologize to you for what we did before. I hope the slate between us can be wiped clean and we can start anew.” The old man spoke with sincerity. He did not want Jian Chen as an opponent at all.

Bi Jian could not move since he was in Zaar Veimor's hands. When he heard the old man's words, he paled in fright. He knew exactly what would happen if he ended up in Jian Chen's hands.

"Save me, senior Caiyun, save me. If I die, senior Caiyun will never be forgiven by senior Hao Wu," Bi Jian loudly pleaded. He placed all his hopes on Zaar Caiyun.

Zaar Caiyun's eyes darkened as a sliver of determination appeared. With a slight movement, she silently appeared beside Zaar Veimos and struck at him with a handful of powerful energy. At the same time, she reached for Bi Jian with her left hand.

"Caiyun, are you crazy? What are you doing?" Zaar Veimos' expression drastically changed. He had never thought that Zaar Caiyun would suddenly attack him. He was her great-grandfather after all.

Although Zaar Caiyun had moved suddenly, Zaar Veimos was still an experienced Saint King. He reacted in the shortest amount of time. He gathered a thick layer of World Force in his hand in an instant and struck out with lightning speed.

Bam! The two palms collided, and a muffled sound immediately rang through the air. A terrifying ripple of energy radiated in all directions, knocking away all the Saint Rulers who had gathered in the surroundings to watch.

Although Zaar Veimos was Zaar Caiyun's senior and far older than her, his strength was much weaker than hers. He was

knocked far away by Zaar Caiyun's casual strike, flying several thousand kilometers before stabilizing himself.

On the other hand, Zaar Caiyun stood firmly where she was, like a mountain. Her body did not even tremble, as if her attack before was a careless strike. She had also taken Bi Jian back from Zaar Veimos, trapping him before her left hand in invisible energy.

"Get down and stay there," Zaar Caiyun coldly said before throwing Bi Jian down into the huge estate of the Zaar family.

Zaar Veimos was only shaken up by Zaar Caiyun's attack, so he was not injured. He immediately began to panic inside when he saw that Zaar Caiyun wanted to protect Bi Jian, so he flew over from afar. He pleaded, "Caiyun, do you know exactly what you are doing? Have you ever thought about what kind of disaster you would bring upon the clan with what you are doing? Have you ever thought about the clan? Caiyun, stop being silly. Bi Jian has nothing to do with our Zaar family, so just listen to your great-grandfather. Hand over Bi Jian for the clan. It's not worth it to put the entire family into jeopardy over an outsider."

Zaar Caiyun did nothing. She only coldly stared at him as a sliver of obvious resentment appeared in the depths of her eyes. She coldly said, "Do you still remember that matter all those years ago? It was because you forcefully interfered all those years ago that I separated with Hao Wu, agonizing me for my entire life. I only resent that I wasn't strong enough back then, that I could not resist the orders of you seniors, so I could only abide, but now, I am no longer the past Zaar Caiyun. You no longer have the right or power to control what I want to do today."



Zaar Veimos felt like his heart was being pierced by a needle as he listened to the cold words of Zaar Caiyun. He painfully said, "Caiyun, I know I was wrong about the matter all those years ago. It's me who cannot make it up to you. It was your great-grandfather who destroyed the happiness in your life, but you're still a member of the Zaar family. The blood of the Zaar family runs in your veins. Are you really willing to see the Zaar family fall into depravity?"

"Zaar family, Zaar family. Don't come talking to me about the Zaar family. In your eyes, there's only the Zaar family." Zaar Caiyun suddenly became agitated. She stared at Zaar Veimos with a shocking glare as pain and resentment boiled inside. She gnashed her teeth, "Since you're so afraid of me bringing trouble to the Zaar family, I, Zaar Caiyun, will be cutting all ties with your Zaar family. From today on, anything I do will have nothing to do with the Zaar family."

The experts from the Zaar family and the Saint Rulers of the eight clans all had their expressions drastically change with that statement.

"No, ancestor, you are a pillar of support for the Zaar family. You can't abandon us." The experts of the Zaar family all fell to their knees in the air and became torn with sorrow.

"No, Caiyun, you can't do that. You can't do that. Even with all the mistakes great-grandfather has made, you can't treat the clan like that. The clan cannot go on without you." Zaar Veimos' heart ached as tears streaked down his face. He was filled with regret.

The president and grand elder of the Radiant Saint Master Union looked at each other after witnessing this. This had far exceeded anything they had imagined. Before they left, they had never thought that such a great disaster would befall the Zaar family. As the most powerful ancestor, Zaar Caiyun had declared that she was leaving the clan. This was a devastating piece of news.

Zaar Caiyun closed her eyes in some pain. She had stayed in the Zaar family for a long time, so she had formed some attachments to it. However, she found that love was more important than the clan.

“In all these years, a certain estrangement has always been present between Hao Wu and me. Since Bi Jian said he can eliminate this estrangement, I am even willing to die here for to eliminate it,” thought Zaar Caiyun. She then snapped open her eyes, and in that moment, her presence underwent an overwhelming change. It was no weaker than the supreme battle intent from Jian Chen as it surged into the sky.

In that moment, sorrow had disappeared from her eyes. She became extremely determined.

“Looks like you insist on protecting Bi Jian,” snorted Jian Chen. His presence also began to skyrocket, vaguely surpassing Zaar Caiyun’s.

Zaar Caiyun coldly glared as a light-azure sword appeared in her hand. She said, “Jian Chen, if you want to kill Bi Jian, do it over

my dead body.” With that, she attacked first, stabbing out with a gentle stroke as her sword danced in her hand.

The strike seemed simple, but it possessed an overwhelming level of mysteriousness. The sword seemed to be slow, but it fused with space. It had traversed the distance between them in an instant, silently arriving before Jian Chen.

# Chapter 1032: Fighting Zaar Caiyun (Two)

---

Jian Chen's gaze suddenly turned into a glare. Although Zaar Caiyun's strike did not come with an earth-shaking disturbance, it caused Jian Chen's cautiousness to greatly increase. He felt deeply threatened. Her strength had far exceeded his own.

“Let me deal with her!” Jian Chen called out to stop Rui Jin and the others. The battle intent from him became even more powerful, and accompanying it was a surging sword Qi. Zaar Caiyun was very strong, but she was not invincible.

Strands of Chaotic Force poured from Jian Chen's dantian. They filled up every corner of his body in an instant, pushing his Chaotic Body to its limits.

Every strand of Chaotic Force was condensed from vast quantities of energy, especially since Jian Chen's Chaotic Body was at the third heavenly layer. A strand of it was equivalent to all the energy someone who had just stepped into Saint King could condense, which was why Jian Chen's Chaotic Force was used up extremely slowly when he fought. If he used it to boost his body's defense, the consumption speed would be almost negligible.

The Emperor Armament in Jian Chen's hand began to gently tremble, and with a gentle sword resonance, it struck out with an aura of destruction. He sent it up to receive Zaar Caiyun's sword without any fear.

“Jian Chen, your opponent is at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly

Layer and is about to enter the ninth. Be extra careful.” Rui Jin’s voice suddenly rang in Jian Chen’s head. He had seen through Zaar Caiyun’s strength with a single glance, which was why he warned Jian Chen.

Jian Chen became even sterner. With the Emperor Armament, he could only display the strength of a peak Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King, which was a whole level of cultivation weaker than Zaar Caiyun.

The two of them clashed several times with lightning speed. Their collisions were extremely intense, and the activity they created was impressive. Every time their swords came into contact, it was like the collision of worlds, producing great booms and annihilating the space of the surroundings. Violent energy and fragmented sword Qi would scatter in all directions, forcing all the Saint Rulers to continuously retreat to avoid being caught up in the battle.

The City of God was one of the seven capitals of the continent. It had existed for countless years and had experienced battles in the ancient times. However, it still existed, naturally due to its defense. At this moment, a tremendous barrier appeared in the sky above the city, blocking the sword Qi and residual energy that splayed out from the battle. Its defense was nowhere on par to the one at Mercenary City, but Jian Chen and Zaar Caiyun’s attacks were unable to shake it.

At this moment, all the streets and alleys regardless of size were swarming with people. Crowds of people had even gathered on top of various structures, almost causing some roofs to cave in. All the

people in the City of God stood with their heads raised to the sky as they unblinkingly observed the rare battle between shocking experts. Coupled with that was the ceaseless sound of discussions.

Jian Chen quickly retreated, slightly falling into a disadvantage. Even though Zaar Caiyun possessed the slender physique of a female, each strike from her possessed a great might, enough to destroy the surroundings.

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian stared unblinkingly at Jian Chen. They were ready to interfere at any moment. Jian Chen was their only hope for them to reunite with their clansmen, so they viewed his life with more importance than anything else.

Meanwhile, there was a quaint little wooden hut that stood on a mountain peak in an ancient mountain range several tens of thousand kilometers away from the city. Its wooden boards creaked as they were buffeted by the violent wind, as if the structure would collapse at any moment.

A valiant-looking, white-robe, middle-aged man sat in the hut with his eyes closed as he cultivated. He was like an old monk, able to sit there without moving for long periods of time.

Suddenly, the man's eyes snapped open. A visible light, shot out from his eyes, causing the space that he stared at before him to gently tremble.

The man's eyes were extremely bright as he stared in the direction of the City of God in interest. He furrowed his eyebrows

slightly and softly murmured, “There’s actually a fight in City of God. One of them is Caiyun’s presence. Just what is going on?”

The middle-aged man was the same person who had ventured to the continent of the Hundred Races to fight a Class 8 Magical Beast as well as the one who had obtained the magical beast’s blood to cure the grand elder of the Radiant Saint Master Union. He was Hao Wu.

Hao Wu sat on his wooden bed with a frown as the light in his eyes flickered. He was hesitating, struggling to come to a decision. He mumbled, “Do I go there and see or not?”

After hesitating some more, he finally made up his mind, “Whatever, I just need to look while hiding from afar to see just what is happening.” With that, Hao Wu disappeared. He made his way to the City of God silently at an unbelievable speed.

Jian Chen and Zaar Caiyun’s battle constantly moved away from the City of God, leaving it very soon. They arrived in a desolate mountain range a hundred kilometers away and continued to fight intensely there.

“Jian Chen, you’re not my opponent. If you agree to spare Bi Jian, we can stop right now. How about that?” Zaar Caiyun coldly said.

“I am naturally not your opponent in terms of strength, but that’s not necessarily the case with swordsmanship. I will be claiming Bi Jian’s life. There is no room for negotiating that,” Jian

Chen refused without any hesitation. It was impossible for him to spare Bi Jian.

Jian Chen's arm shook violently with that. The Emperor Armament became countless blurs that packed the space before him, quickly enveloping Zaar Caiyun. It was impossible to distinguish between illusion and reality with the blurs, so each blur seemed to be real. They all seemed to possess great power. This was all due to Jian Chen reaching the limits of speed.

At the same time, Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash. He moved around Zaar Caiyun like a ghost, striking out faster and faster. Each attack possessed his full strength, equivalent to the full-powered attack from a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King.

Zaar Caiyun fused with the surrounding space as she calmly dodged Jian Chen's attacks. She did not use her eyes to keep track of the sword blurs, and instead she completely relied on her senses to strike out. She just happened to block the sword blurs with every strike. She coldly said, "If that's the case, do not blame me for not showing mercy."

A vast energy surged from Zaar Caiyun, causing the surrounding space to twist. Zaar Caiyun raised her sword to the sky, and it immediately exploded with a dense azure light. Terrifying energy collapsed the surrounding space.

"Scattered Flowers of a Heavenly Maiden!" Zaar Caiyun cried out. The terrifying energy around her sword immediately exploded, turning into extremely dense sword Qi that scattered in all directions. Each sword Qi was no weaker than a casual strike



from an Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint King.

Jian Chen's expression slightly changed. He retreated quickly with the Illusory Flash, using his Emperor Armament to block the storm-like attacks of sword Qi. The powerful force from each block would shake his arm to the point where it became numb.

“Freeze, space!” A glimmer of light flickered through Zaar Caiyun's eyes. She pointed at Jian Chen with her left hand and the space there immediately froze, trapping and immobilizing Jian Chen.

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt...

With his body restrained, more than ten powerful sword Qis immediately passed through Jian Chen's body, forming the same amount of finger-sized holes. Blood immediately began to run out of the wounds.

Jian Chen roared at the sky. Chaotic Force immediately erupted from his body, and the Emperor Armament began to shine brighter with dark light. A supreme force broke through the space, allowing him to recover his freedom.

However, at this moment, Zaar Caiyun had soundlessly arrived before him. Her sword radiated a dazzling azure light as it mercilessly stabbed towards Jian Chen's throat.

A sword intent countless times more pure than before began to

radiate from Jian Chen at this moment. The wind and clouds immediately began to surge with its appearance, changing the weather. The surrounding air lost its usual peace under the influence of this sword intent, becoming extremely sharp, like it was filled with invisible swords.

# Chapter 1033: Fighting Zaar Caiyun (Three)

---

The sudden change in Jian Chen's presence immediately lead to a change in Zaar Caiyun's expression. She could not help but slightly slow down her strike heading at Jian Chen.

This was all because in that moment, Zaar Caiyun seemed to feel that Jian Chen was no longer made of flesh and blood and was instead a sharp sword that stood in the world, radiating with a shocking sword Qi. Zaar Caiyun felt like she was looking at a sword when she faced against Jian Chen, which shocked her greatly.

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian all tensed up as well. They stared at Jian Chen in surprise. Thoughts similar to what Zaar Caiyun was experiencing appeared in their heads as well. The current Jian Chen did not seem like a person to them, rather a sword, a divine sword.

"I-is this a battle skill?" Hei Yu stared unblinkingly at Jian Chen as he murmured.

The Saint Rulers of the eight clans and the people from the Radiant Saint Master Union all stared at Jian Chen in shock from afar as well. Disbelief flooded their faces; in that moment, all of them held their breaths, unwilling to inhale any of the air in the surroundings since it seemed to be filled with sharp sword Qi. Just a breath of it would cause piercing pain to their organs.

A sliver of haziness appeared in Jian Chen's eyes, but it quickly cleared up. He seemed to have understood something right now,

having obtained a grasp on something unclear. With the Emperor Armament in his hand, he slowly stabbed out according to a feeling that had sprung up from nowhere in his head.

Jian Chen's stroke seemed slow, but it was extremely fast. It was disillusioning. An extremely pure sword Qi erupted as the sword traveled, causing the surrounding space to collapse.

This was true sword Qi. It was extremely sharp and acute, much, much mightier than sword Qi condensed from power. It made people feel like it was unstoppable.

As the Emperor Armament struck the sword in Zaar Caiyun's hands, the sword Qi actually knocked her sword away while the Emperor Armament continued on with no reduction in force. It stabbed at Zaar Caiyun's chest with unstoppable momentum.

Spurt! The Emperor Armament stabbed into Zaar Caiyun's chest, impaling her. In that moment, the sharp sword Qi and destructive Chaotic Force wreaked havoc on Zaar Caiyun's organs, turning them to mush.

Zaar Caiyun groaned as she stared at the Emperor Armament in her body in disbelief. He refused to believe that she could be injured by Jian Chen with her current strength.

But the next moment, her left hand struck Jian Chen's chest with lightning speed. Terrifying Saint Force surged from her palm, breaking through the defense of Jian Chen's body with supreme power and knocking him away as he vomited blood. Meanwhile,

the sword in her chest was withdraw as Jian Chen catapulted away.

“Jian Chen, I never thought that you’d have a Saint Tier Battle Skill as well. Since I’ve seen your Saint Tier Battle Skill, it’s time for you to taste mine.” Zaar Caiyun’s power did not decrease. Despite the sliver of paleness on her face, she remained extraordinarily mighty, as if her injuries were nothing to her.

A terrifying presence began to radiate from her body, filling up the surroundings as it made the sky shake. At that moment, Zaar Caiyun seemed to have become a war god as she radiated with a tremendous presence, able to destroy her surroundings.

The surrounding air became thick as even space began to solidify bit by bit. A terrifying pressure descended. It seemed to originate from the surroundings, immediately causing mountains to collapse and the ground to sink.

Casting a Saint Tier Battle Skill with her strength at the Eighth Heavenly Layer of Saint King, possessed the power to destroy the surroundings.

Jian Chen was knocked a thousand meters away before coming to a halt. Blood ran down from the corner of his lips as a temporary sense of confusion and doubt clouded his eyes. He was still thinking about the moment when he had attacked before.

Jian Chen seemed to have entered a wondrous mental state earlier, as if he had become a sword and was no longer a human.

The attack before was also performed casually as he followed the feeling, yet the power within it far surpassed what he should have been in possession of, strong enough to injure Zaar Caiyun who was at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer.

However, he had lost that wondrous feeling now. He could not use a similar attack again.

“Way of the Tyrant’s Sword, Galaxy-devouring Sword!” At that moment, a cry rang through the sky. Zaar Caiyun had already reached an altitude of ten kilometers as she glowed with a deep azure light. Terrifying ripples of energy radiated from her body as a huge, hundred-meter-long sword condensed above her. It shot towards Jian Chen with incomparable force.

As the sword shot through the sky, the originally-bright sky began to darken. Even the energy of the world and invisible World Force that filled space itself vanished. The sword of energy seemed to have devoured all the energy and light.

Jian Chen became unprecedentedly stern. Zaar Caiyun, even without casting the Saint Tier Battle Skill, was not someone he could defeat, and with the Saint Tier Battle Skill, it made it even more impossible for victory. Just resisting would become extremely difficult.

With a thought, a golden streak of light immediately shot out from the center of his eyebrows. It quickly transformed into a hundred-meter-tall golden tower that shined with a blinding light.

The Octoterra Divine Hall had already been devastated by Kaiser, so it was unable to be used so soon. Only the saint artifact could block Zaar Caiyun's Saint Tier Battle Skill now.

Boom! A deafening sound erupted when the Saint Tier Battle Skill collided with the saint artifact. Casting a Saint Tier Battle Skill with her strength as an Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint King was already on par with the casual strike of a Saint Emperor. It was extremely terrifying, knocking the saint artifact far away.

“Way of the Tyrant's Sword, Void-annihilating Sword!” Zaar Caiyun's cold voice rang out in the sky once again. She did not stop with her attacks. Another hundred-meter-long sword condensed above her head, shooting towards Jian Chen at the speed of lightning.

The sword was filled with destructive energy, reducing the space of wherever it passed into darkness.

“Way of the Tyrant's Sword, World-obliterating Storm of Swords!”

The Way of the Tyrant's Sword was a Saint Tier Battle Skill with three attacks. As soon as the second attack was launched, Zaar Caiyun followed up with the third attack.

Immediately, a hundred, or even a thousand, swords appeared around her. All of the swords were condensed from energy, and every single one of them was ten meters long and radiated with a terrifying aura. None of them were any weaker than the first two

attacks.



# Chapter 1034: The Heavenly Enchantress?

## Mu'er?

---

Zaar Caiyun consecutively struck out with all three attacks of the Way of the Tyrant's Sword. Each attack belonged to the upper levels of Saint Tier Battle Skills, equal to a casual strike from Saint Emperors. Even Saint Kings at Great Perfection would become heavily injured if the three attacks landed on them. Only a similar Saint Tier Battle Skill could repel it.

There were also differences in power among Saint Tier Battle Skill. The Way of the Tyrant's Blade possessed a total of three attacks, and each attack was more powerful than the previous one. These factors allowed it to be ranked close to the top among all Saint Tier Battle Skills. With Zaar Caiyun's great talent, she had comprehended the mysteries of the battle skill to the limit, and she had also reached great proficiency with its use. Her strength at the peak of the Eighth Heavenly Layer combined perfectly with the Saint Tier Battle Skill allowed her to use the skill to its full potential.

Jian Chen became extremely stern. The battle skill's vast pressure tightly locked onto his entire body, which caused him to feel like he was submerged in mud. Every action felt difficult. The saint artifact had been knocked away. Although it quickly flew toward him through his mental connection, it would not be able to make it.

"Looks like I can only use the Octoterra Divine Hall," Jian Chen thought. The Octoterra Divine Hall was in ruins, but Zaar Caiyun's Saint Tier Battle Skill was only a casual strike from a Saint

Emperor. Its strength was nowhere Kaiser's punch, so the divine hall could easily block the strike despite its state.

Suddenly, figure flashed before him just as Jian Chen wanted to bring out the divine hall. Rui Jin had appeared silently before Jian Chen, while the Sacred Dragon's Sword in his hand radiated with a terrifying presence. Slivers of origin energy slowly pulsed and radiated with a profound aura.

Rui Jin stood like a steel wall before Jian Chen. As he swung out with his sword, an extremely powerful sword Qi immediately shot out toward Zaar Caiyun with a devastating might.

The second sword Qi from Zaar Caiyun collided with the sword Qi from the Sacred Dragon's Sword and immediately produced a deafening boom. The giant sword Qi seemed as fragile as tofu and dispersed without much difficulty at all.

Rui Jin's Sacred Dragon's Sword contained origin energy, so when he used it to send out a sword Qi, it would possess a sliver of origin energy as well. This was a power that surpassed Saint Emperors, something that belonged to a completely different level. Its strength was beyond suspicion, something incomparable to the powers of this world.

The attack from the Sacred Dragon's Sword tore through the other attack like a hot knife through butter. Then, it continued toward Zaar Caiyun's third attack with no reduction in force.

Zaar Caiyun's expression suddenly changed when she sensed the

power of Rui Jin's attack. She extended a finger and immediately, the countless sword Qi created from the third move changed in trajectory and formed a straight line. They all charged toward Rui Jin's sword Qi with origin energy.

With consecutive booms, Rui Jin's sword Qi charged through all the sword Qi like a wild beast with stoppable momentum. It caused the smaller sword Qi to explode as soon as they made contact. They turned it into surging energy of the world that dispersed in the surroundings.

Rui Jin's single sword Qi from the Radiant Dragon's Sword broke through two attacks from Zaar Caiyun's Saint Tier Battle Skill. In the end, it passed through her chest and disappeared into the horizon.

Zaar Caiyun's body trembled violently as agony filled her face. Her presence quickly began to decrease, and she began to fall out of the sky like a broken kite.

"Caiyun!" A cry rang out from afar. Hao Wu had shot over as a blur with lightning speed as he fused with the surrounding space. He firmly caught Zaar Caiyun. Then, he wanted to flee into the distance.

"Leave this person behind!" Jian Chen did not know Hao Wu. He immediately cried out when he saw that someone wanted to save Zaar Caiyun. As such, he used the Illusory Flash and arrived before the unknown individual in an instant. His Emperor Armament transformed into a streak of black light as it stabbed mercilessly toward Zaar Caiyun.

A three fingers wide sword immediately appeared in Hao Wu's hands. It shone with an earthen-yellow light, as it stabbed out like a lightning bolt.

“Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint King!” Jian Chen could sense Hao Wu's strength once he lashed out. It was actually at the same cultivation level as Zaar Caiyun, just slightly weaker than her as it was not at the peak.

Just as Hao Wu's sword was about to collide with the Emperor Armament, the space a thousand meters away began to twist violently. Vaguely, the rippling space seemed to form a huge zither a thousand meters long, with thirty-six clearly visible strings.

Ding! The strings began to tremble slowly and produced a gentle note of the zither. A transparent musical note that seemed to be formed from the surrounding space flew out. Then, it simultaneously collided with Jian Chen's Emperor Armament and Hao Wu's Saint Weapon with unbelievable speed.

Clang! An extremely powerful sound wave erupted when the musical note collided with the Emperor Armament and Saint Weapon. It seemed to be able to shake up one's soul, shocking people's eardrums into temporary deafness. The terrifying sound wave caused the minds of the Saint Rulers who watched from afar to blank out as if their souls were gone.

Jian Chen and Hao Wu's arms shook, and the force knocked their swords aside. The powerful force actually almost knocked the

Emperor Armament out of Jian Chen's hand. At the same time, the terrifying sound wave turned into an invisible pushing force, so powerful that none of them could resist. It separated Jian Chen and Hao Wu, stopping them from fighting.

Just a zither condensed from space could nullify the attacks of two great Saint Kings with a single note. Its power far exceeded anyone's imaginations.

Jian Chen and Hao Wu did not continue their fight. They turned around to look at the zither, as it slowly dispersed. Disbelief flooded their eyes.

"It's the Heavenly Enchantress!" Jian Chen murmured, as his heart began to churn. He recognized the zither condensed from space. It was the Heavenly Enchantress' Zither of the Demonic Cry. The appearance was the same. It had the same amount of strings and made the same sound. There was no one else in the world who could play the zither like that other than the Heavenly Enchantress. However, he had not imagined that the Heavenly Enchantress' strength would rise to such an unbelievable level after just a few years, which shocked Jian Chen greatly.

Hao Wu carried Zaar Caiyun, as he levitated in the sky. He stared blankly at the zither, and his emotions became extremely mixed. Pain was present in his gaze.

"Mu'er, Mu'er, is it you?" Hao Wu called out gently, but it resounded through a radius of several dozen kilometers. His voice trembled as it was filled with emotions.

“Mu’er?” Jian Chen immediately became shocked when he heard Hao Wu’s words, “Does he know the Heavenly Enchantress? Mu’er? Is that the Heavenly Enchantress’ name?”

The zither in the sky finally dispersed completely, but the Heavenly Enchantress never showed up. No one knew where she was. Was she still hiding or had she left long ago?”

Tears pooled up in Hao Wu’s eyes. He stared painfully at the spot that the zither had vanished from and sorrowfully said, “Mu’er, since you’ve come, why don’t you want to come out and see your dad? It has been so long. Are you still unwilling to forgive dad?”

“Dad!” Jian Chen was shocking inside when he heard that. He turned to Hao Wu suddenly and stared at him fixedly. Surprise filled his face, as he doubted what he had just heard in that moment.

“Is that middle-aged man the father of the Heavenly Enchantress?” Jian Chen was filled with disbelief, and he was unable to return to his senses. However, if that were the case, it would give an even better explanation to why the Heavenly Enchantress would secretly interfere.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and Hei Yu also stared sternly at the space where the zither had disappeared. They remained silent.

“That little girl has become so powerful. She is actually able to move around tracelessly. Even I can’t sense her presence.” A while

later, Hei Yu sighed emotionally.

“When we met her several years ago on Dragon Island, she was still a Saint Ruler. How did she become so powerful? Was she always hiding her strength before? If that’s really the case, then her ability to conceal her abilities is just too great,” Rui Jin murmured. He was still confused after much thought.

“That person is very powerful. Just a single note is enough for my soul to tremble. Do you recognize her?” Hong Lian stared fixedly on the space where the zither had vanished. She was extremely stern.

Rui Jin nodded and replied, “I’ve met her before. She was with Jian Chen at that time. She uses the zither as a weapon and uses sound to fight people. She walks an extremely rare path of cultivation, but I just never thought that she will become so powerful.”

“Hao Wu!” Zaar Caiyun stared at Hao Wu emotionally, as he carried her. She called out gently. Her purple dress had already become dyed red with blood, which made her seem extremely miserable.

Hao Wu lowered his head to look at her. His expression became mixed, “Caiyun, Caiyun, how are you? Are you heavily injured?” Hao Wu’s voice was filled with concern.

Zaar Caiyun shook her head gently, as tears ran down her cheek. Her voice was filled with tenderness and injustice. “Hao Wu, three

thousand years. After three whole thousand years, you're finally willing to come see me. Do you know how painful it has been in those years as I waited for you?"

Hao Wu painfully closed his eyes. His heart ached, and he said, "Caiyun, you're so silly. I'm not worth it for you to be like that. It's me who did not have the right to see you. It's me who can't make it up to you. I was the one who failed to live up to you..."

Zaar Caiyun shook her head gently, as she said weakly, "Hao Wu, did you know that although you've once made me suffer so much pain that I would be better off dead, I've never hated you. I knew the clan secretly organized it all. You only fell to the schemes of the seniors of my clan, suffering because of them. I only resented the seniors and only blamed them. I never blamed you."

"Hao Wu, did you know that I've always been waiting for you these years, waiting for you to apologize to me and beg for my forgiveness? It's a pity that my wish never came true. I waited painfully for you for three thousand years, yet you didn't even want to come see me."

Heartbreak filled Zaar Caiyun's voice.



## Chapter 1035: Zaar Caiyun's Feelings

---

After Zaar Caiyun buried her feelings in her heart for so long, they finally exploded without restraint. Her bone-piercing tenderness, and her unchangeable stubbornness deeply moved Hao Wu's heart and caused it to tremble.

“Caiyun, it was me who has no right to see you. I have no right to see you. I'm the one who can't make it up to you. It's me.” Hao Wu sobbed painfully with his eyes closed, as sorrow filled his face as well.

Bright blood constantly flowed from the corner of Zaar Caiyun's mouth. She slowly raised her jade-white hand and gently touched Hao Wu's weathered face. Her eyes were no longer as cold and emotionless as before. Instead, tenderness filled her eyes. She said softly, “Hao Wu, I don't blame you. I've never blamed you, nor have I been mad at you. Because back then, before my family, you had no power to resist. Even I could not avoid the arrangements of my family.”

“But it's different now. We both possess great strength now. We both have the authority to speak and make decisions before the clan. Hao Wu, did you know that I longed for you in every moment of those years, longing to be with you, to spend our days freely like before and living by the sword. Are you willing to be with me now?” Zaar Caiyun stared stubbornly at Hao Wu, as anticipation filled her.

At that moment, the sky became abnormally silent. Other than the wild wind, there was only Hao Wu and Zaar Caiyun's voice.

All the Saint Rulers from the eight clans flew over. They stood silently in the distance, as they watched everything unfold. All of their expressions were extremely mixed, while quite a few of them stared fixedly at Zaar Caiyun.

Very few of the people among them knew about Zaar Caiyun's past. They all found it extremely unbelievable that their most powerful ancestor's love for Hao Wu was so deep, and that it did not change even after several thousand years.

Zaar Veimos stood with the many Saint Rulers of the Zaar family, as they stared at the two of them with mixed emotions. Deep regret was present.

Back then, they had ignored the painful pleas of Zaar Caiyun and forcefully separated the two of them. This was because Hao Wu was just a slightly talented mercenary. He drifted through the continent without a definite residency, and did not possess any background. How could someone like that catch the eyes of the Zaar family that controlled one of the seven capitals of the city?

Meanwhile, Zaar Caiyun was the most outstanding person of the family. She was talented, clever and a devastating beauty, the previous ancestor of the clan viewed her as a treasure of the clan. They loved her dearly, but how could they let such an impressive clan member marry a mercenary that did not even have a home? As a result, a series of matters followed.

However, the Zaar family had never thought that the mercenary

who could only be considered as slightly talented would actually have such great potential. He became one of the few supreme experts of the continent after several thousand years and became an existence that the Zaar family needed to treat with importance.

However, the Zaar family had just committed too many things that could not be made up to Hao Wu. With the mistakes already committed, it was extremely difficult for them to avoid the consequences, which was why Hao Wu had always stayed in the Holy Empire. However, his relationship with the Zaar family was ambiguous, it was uncertain whether it was hostile or not.

Also, Zaar Veimos knew that with Hao Wu's connections, he possessed the power to take revenge against the Zaar family many years ago. However, he never did it, all because of Zaar Caiyun.

Jian Chen put away his Emperor Armament and hovered in the sky without any presence like an ordinary person. He stared quietly at the two of them as mixed emotions filled his eyes. The light in his eyes flickered, as he was thinking of something.

Rui Jin, Hong Lian, Hei Yu, and the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect silently stood with Jian Chen.

Hao Wu closed his eyes painfully once more, as he listened to Zaar Caiyun. He did not reply even after a very long time.

Zaar Caiyun stared at him for a very long time, before she became dejected. Tears rolled uncontrollably down her cheeks, "Hao Wu, I know you still love me. You've always loved me, right?"

Hao Wu nodded his head gently without saying anything.

“The main reason why you’re unwilling to be with me is because of your daughter, right? You’re afraid that your daughter will never forgive you, right?” asked Zaar Caiyun’s in a pained voice.

“I’m sorry, Cai Yun!” Hao Wu rubbed Cai Yun’s cheeks gently as pain filled his heart. Clearly, he had always been deeply in love with Zaar Caiyun, but he could not be with his lover due to certain reasons. He had not even met her in three whole thousand years.

Zaar Caiyun’s lips curled into a smile, as she slowly closed her eyes in a satisfied manner. She said gently, “Hao Wu, I may not be able to be with you, but I am already very satisfied to be able to feel your embrace once more.” With that, her body suddenly jolted. Immediately, blood sprayed from her mouth. She also began to pale, and her expression became horrible. She was close to death.

Hao Wu’s expression greatly changed. His eyes snapped open in that instant, as he stared at Zaar Caiyun in disbelief. He cried out, “Caiyun, Caiyun, what are you doing?! You’ve severed your meridians to your heart! Why are you so muddleheaded!?”

“Since living means pain, I might as well just die. It’ll be better than suffering every day. Hao Wu, I hope we can meet again in our future lives.” Zaar Caiyun’s face was ashen. She wanted to die now and did not desire to continue living.

Afterward, a faint ball of flames emerged from Zaar Caiyun’s

head. She was currently using a secret technique to burn her soul.

“Caiyun, don’t, don’t do this...” Hao Wu paled in fright. He became stunned as everything had occurred just too suddenly.

“Caiyun, stop!” Zaar Veimos also paled, as he cried out in a panic.

“Ancestor...” The Saint Rulers all became shocked as well, as they called out sorrowfully.

Jian Chen’s expression also changed slightly, as he stood from afar. He turned to Rui Jin and said, “Senior Rui Jin, please stop her.”

Rui Jin nodded and silently arrived before Zaar Caiyun. He directly struck toward her head with his palm.

“Don’t harm Caiyun!” Hao Wu thought that Rui Jin wanted to kill Zaar Caiyun. He immediately tried to block the attack, as he cried out.

“If you don’t want her soul wiped out, don’t interfere,” Rui Jin growled. His left hand changed between seals, and he immediately cast a secret technique of the Dragon clan to immobilize Hao Wu. His right palm continued mercilessly toward Zaar Caiyun’s head.

Rui Jin immediately extinguished the flames on her head, and her soul stopped burning. Rui Jin had forcefully obstructed her suicide attempt, but her soul was greatly injured. She became

unconscious.

Hao Wu recovered his freedom very quickly. He retreated hastily with Zaar Caiyun in his arms, and he pulled far away from Rui Jin. He stared at Zaar Caiyun in panic, as he constantly shook her.” Caiyun, Caiyun, what has happened to you? What has happened to you?”

Zaar Veimos also arrived before Hao Wu. His expression was filled with sorrow, as he stared painfully at the unconscious Zaar Caiyun. He was filled with regret over the decision he had made all those years ago.

“Her soul is currently extremely heavily injured, and she has fallen conscious. Coupled with the fact that she only wants to die, it’ll be impossible for her to wake up in a short amount of time,” Rui Jin said nonchalantly, as he stared deeply at Zaar Caiyun.

# Chapter 1036: Meeting Yang Ling Again (One)

---

“Caiyun, you’re so muddleheaded. You really are so muddleheaded. Why did you do something like this? Why?” Hao Wu was torn with grief. He touched Zaar Caiyun’s pale face with his coarse hand. His heart ached.

Zaar Veimos’ face was streaked with tears. He too was in great sorrow when he saw the pained state of his great-granddaughter since she was like this due to him. It was because of the matter all those years ago that led to the horrible relationship between him and Zaar Caiyun.

“Sigh, I regret, I regret,” Zaar Veimos said painfully. Zaar Caiyun’s state would severely affect the power of the clan.

“Caiyun, wake up. Quickly wake up. I’ll take you back home, to the home that belongs to us. We’ll live the life we once had,” Hao Wu murmured quietly since he wanted to wake her up. However, Zaar Caiyun’s eyes did not even twitch, as if she had not heard him at all.

“Hao Wu, give Caiyun to me. The Zaar family will use everything we have to save her,” Zaar Veimos said to Hao Wu.

A sharp light immediately flickered through Hao Wu’s sorrowful gaze when he heard that. He stared at Zaar Veimos in resentment and coldly said, “Zaar Veimos, think about what you did all those years ago. What dignity do you have left to take Caiyun from me?”

You don't even have that right. Zaar Veimos, if it weren't for Caiyun, did you really think that your Zaar family would have been able to be as carefree as it is now?"

Hao Wu's words were like drenching Zaar Veimos in cold water. His entire body became cold as he stood there blankly. His soul seemed to have left his body.

Then, Hao Wu looked at Jian Chen. He quickly glanced past Rui Jin and Hei Yu from the corner of his eyes. A sliver of fear appeared in the depths of his eyes as he said, "Jian Chen, Caiyun is no longer a member of the Zaar family. Now that she has fallen into such a miserable state, I hope you can wipe the slate between you and her. Any matters of the Zaar family have nothing to do with. Does that satisfy you?"

Jian Chen's expression was extremely mixed. He slowly nodded and said, "Senior Hao Wu, allow me to ask you one question. What is your relationship with the Heavenly Enchantress?" Although Jian Chen had already guessed that Hao Wu was her father, he wanted to confirm it.

Hao Wu's face immediately darkened with that. He said dejectedly, "She's my daughter, but she does not recognize me as her father." Hao Wu became filled with pain when Jian Chen mentioned the Heavenly Enchantress. His heart ached.

Although he had known it would be like this beforehand, Jian Chen still gasped inside after he learned this news from Hao Wu personally.



Jian Chen calmed down very quickly. He slowly flew to Hao Wu's side and stared at the unconscious Zaar Caiyun with mixed feelings. After hesitating slightly, Jian Chen slowly closed his eyes.

Immediately, a ball of extremely dense, milky-white light began to radiate from Jian Chen. It encased his entire body and obscured his appearance. Jian Chen seemed to have become a radiant god that was bathing in the light. His stern expression was filled with a divine awe, as if he could not be impinged upon.

“This is the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force. I never thought he had already reached the 7th Class.” The president and grand elder of the Radiant Saint Master Union both cried out when they saw this. They were astounded. Although Jian Chen had taken away the saint artifact of the union, it was not easy for a Class 6 Radiant Saint Master to become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master. It was definitely unprecedented on the continent for someone at Jian Chen's age to reach the 7th Class.

“He really is a prodigy. Though it's a pity...” The president shook his head as he sighed. Pity flooded his face.

Jian Chen had personally used the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force to heal Zaar Caiyun. His decision regarding Zaar Caiyun was displayed through this action.

Although he and the Heavenly Enchantress were not married, matters that only occurred after marriage had happened between them. The Heavenly Enchantress was Hao Wu's daughter while

Hao Wu and Zaar Caiyun were deeply in love with each other. Their deep affection had moved Jian Chen. Jian Chen had no idea just what had happened between the three of them to cause such a complicated situation, but just from their relationship on the surface, Jian Chen was certain of his choice.

If he continued his attempts on Zaar Caiyun's life, Hao Wu would definitely fight him to the death. His relationship with Hao Wu would also become one of hostility, which was not something Jian Chen wanted to see.

Also, the Heavenly Enchantress had secretly prevented the battle between the two of them just as they were about to clash. Perhaps, the Heavenly Enchantress did not want to see her father fight with Jian Chen in such a life-or-death fashion.

He had learned from Hao Wu that the Heavenly Enchantress had never recognized him as a father, but they were still father and daughter after all.

The wound from Rui Jin's Sacred Dragon's Sword was rather severe. The powerful origin energy had devoured her flesh and formed a fist-sized hole, but with the regenerative properties of Radiant Saint Force origin energy, Jian Chen only needed a single strand to completely heal Zaar Caiyun. However, she did not awaken.

Jian Chen's actions greatly moved Hao Wu, and he constantly thanked Jian Chen. He knew Jian Chen's background very well. Jian Chen was someone that even the ten protector clans were helpless against. Moreover, he was followed by two extremely

powerful experts that even human and magical beast Saint Emperors could do nothing but flee against.

However, Hao Wu had no idea about the connection between Jian Chen and his daughter even now.

“I’ve healed all her wounds with my Radiant Saint Force. Though I am helpless when it comes to the injuries of her soul.” Jian Chen gently sighed.

“I will find ways to cure Caiyun’s injuries of the soul. It’s me who can’t make it up to her as well as me who caused her to become like this. I will use the rest of my life to make it up properly to Caiyun.” Hao Wu focused his attention on Zaar Caiyun’s face. Then, he left with her in his arms. He disappeared into the horizon very quickly.

“Caiyun!” Zaar Veimos sorrowfully cried out as he stared blankly in the direction she had disappeared in. He was filled with worry and a deep unwillingness to part with her.

At this moment, more and more Saint Rulers hurried over from the surroundings. They watched from afar. They had all been drawn over by the great battle earlier.

Jian Chen casually glanced past the empty space up ahead. His soul was extremely powerful, so he could clearly feel the Saint Kings hiding there. Within them included the ancestor of the Kara clan.

Jian Chen was no longer in the mood to settle his disagreements with the eight clans and the Zaar family after what had happened with Hao Wu. He coldly said to the people of the eight clans, "I will not pursue the matter of you heavily injuring me all those years ago because of senior Hao Wu. You may have escaped death, but you have not escaped punishment."

With that, all the Saint Rulers of the eight clans relaxed. All of them revealed expressions of relief, like they had just escaped a disaster. What they feared the most was Jian Chen taking revenge for what had happened all those years ago since they would be helpless if he actually took action.

"Jian Chen, my Cheng family is filled with deep regret regarding what we did to you all those years ago. To thank you for not killing me, I will heavily injure myself as the price, to give brother Jian Chen an explanation," The Saint Ruler of the Cheng family spoke first. He then punched himself in the chest. Blood sprayed from his mouth into the air as he became heavily injured.

Afterward, the other Saint Rulers of the eight clans all heavily injured themselves as well. They were paying the price for what they did all those years ago as well as giving Jian Chen an explanation and thanking him for not killing them.

This scene caused a great discussion to break out among those who were watching. They all began to whisper to one another.

The enmity between Jian Chen and the eight clans from all those years ago could be considered to have reached a complete conclusion. Although Hao Wu and Zaar Caiyun disrupted Jian

Chen's plans and made him deviate from them, it still could be considered a perfect conclusion.

Then, Jian Chen arrived before the group of people from the Radiant Saint Master Union after he dealt with the eight clans. He clasped his hands and said with mixed emotions, "Jian Chen greets the president and the grand elder."

# Chapter 1037: Meeting Yang Ling Again (Two)

---

The president and the grand elder of the Radiant Saint Master Union both sighed deeply inside, as they looked at the person who was once the most outstanding prodigy of the union. Their emotions were greatly mixed.

Once upon a time, the two of them had treated Jian Chen as the future of the Radiant Saint Master Union. They even raised him as the successor of the president. The president had even used his own disciple, Yun Tian, to discipline Jian Chen, with the hope that he could grow quickly and become someone great that could take charge. He had hoped that Jian Chen could take up the position of developing the union.

Unfortunately, the heavens played a huge joke on them. The Yang Yutian who had joined the union as a Radiant Saint Master all those years ago was a fighter as well, and one that had become Saint Ruler.

Since ancient times, there had never been a fighter that was also a Radiant Saint Master. As a result, the saying that one could not be both a fighter and Radiant Saint Master at the same time had arisen. No one had ever broken this fact even after the countless years the saying had existed. However, the revelation of Yang Yutian's identity as a fighter broke this fact that had remained for countless years and greatly affected the union. It basically shook it to its core.

Other than that, Jian Chen's other identity also greatly shocked

the high ranking members of the union. He was actually a member of a protector clan, the Changyang clan.

The protector clans were the ultimate force of the Tian Yuan Continent. They had existed since ancient times and possessed history even lengthier than Mercenary City. Even the three great empires possessed nothing close to contending with them. They were the undebatable rulers of the continent, and the Radiant Saint Union was as weak as a child compared to them. They would crumble in the first clash if they were to ever fight.

The president and grand elder of the union looked at Jian Chen with extremely mixed emotions. They remained silent for a very long time while affection and resentment mixed within their eyes.

To them, Jian Chen was someone worthy of their affection and resentment. They loved his talent as well as the fact that he could bring a bright future to the union while they hated Jian Chen's second identity. Moreover, he took away the saint artifact all those years ago and threatened the union.

They knew that Yang Yutian, who had become the most outstanding prodigy in all of the union's history and had extremely great potential of reaching Class 8 as a Radiant Saint Master, would probably never return again.

“Sigh.” After a very long while, the grand elder exhaled deeply at the sky and said, “Jian Chen, you've finally returned to the Tian Yuan Continent. I never thought that it would take several years before we met again. Your strength has increased once again, which is unbelievable.”

“Jian Chen, come visit the headquarters of our union whenever you have the time. There are some matters I want to discuss with you,” the president spoke as well.

Jian Chen knew that the president wanted to talk about the saint artifact, so he did not decline. He agreed, “President, I’ll go with you to the union after I deal with the matters here.”

The president also began to smile from the bottom of his heart as he nodded many times.

Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash to move, and his steps became blurs. With every casual footstep, he would traverse several kilometers. Although Jian Chen did not go ahead and comprehend it purposefully, he had become more and more proficient with it after using the special movement battle skill many times. His grasp of it was currently improving unconsciously.

After around a dozen steps, Jian Chen had traversed over a hundred kilometers. He had returned to the City of God. The barrier around the city had disappeared as well. It had returned to its previous state.

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, Hong Lian, and the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect followed behind Jian Chen. Behind them were Zaar Veimos and the Saint Rulers of the eight clans, as well as the various experts who had come to watch.

Jian Chen hovered over the City of God and directly flew to the



mansion of the Zaar family. Bi Jian remained in the huge estate, standing there in the same position as before. Panic flooded his face.

Zaar Veimos had frozen Bi Jian before, which had immobilized him. Although Zaar Caiyun had snatched him away later, she did not remove the force that trapped him place, so all he could do was stand there obediently. He could not even flee even when he wanted to.

“Bi Jian, I’d like to see who will be saving you now.” Jian Chen stared icily at Bi Jian. Powerful killing intent radiated from Jian Chen without any restraint. It caused the surrounding temperature to plummet.

Bi Jian’s expression immediately changed when he saw Jian Chen return safe and sound. He became absolutely horrified, and fear flooded his face.

“Don’t kill me Jian Chen, don’t kill me. I am great friends with the Heavenly Enchantress. If you kill me, the Heavenly Enchantress will never forgive you. She will hate you for the rest of her life,” Bi Jian said with a trembling voice. He had already become pale-white since he knew he was facing the moment of his death.

“Bi Jian, if it were not for the experts of the Changyang clan arriving in time for the matter of Flame City, all my good friends probably would’ve died by your hands, and I have even heard that you were interested in my fiancée, You Yue, right?” Jian Chen’s gaze became even colder as killing intent boiled in his heart.

“No, that’s not true Jian Chen. That’s not true. It’s all a misunderstanding...” Bi Jian paled in fright. He frantically denied the accusations and wanted to explain himself.

Jian Chen was not convinced at all. He coldly said, “Don’t worry Bi Jian, I won’t kill you so easily...” With that, Jian Chen threw a vicious kick at Bi Jian’s dantian and a sliver of Chaotic Force immediately entered it. The Chaotic Force destroyed his Saint Weapon while his dantian completely collapsed. The powerful force had even crushed his organs into mush.

Bi Jian produced an extremely miserable shriek. With his Saint Weapon destroyed, he also became extremely heavily injured. Although he would not die as long as his soul was still present as a Saint Ruler, his strength plummeted.

Afterward, Jian Chen extended a finger, and a sliver of Chaotic Force shot into the center of Bi Jian’s eyebrows in the form of a sharp sword Qi. It heavily injured his soul and prevented him from being able to flee in the form of a soul.

Bi Jian immediately became haggard thanks to this soul injury. He arrived at death’s door, and he even lost the power to shriek out in pain. He was in so much agony that tiny droplets of sweat covered his forehead.

“Jian Chen, you won’t be dying an easy death,” Bi Jian cursed through his teeth, but his voice was extremely weak. He knew he was done for now that Jian Chen had destroyed his Saint Weapon,

and his soul was injured.

Jian Chen ignored Bi Jian's cursing. He did not need to get mad at someone who was about to die. Then, he sucked Bi Jian into the artifact space and left the Zaar family estate.

Jian Chen gathered in a beautifully-decorated room with the president and grand elder on the very top floor. After a short talk, Jian Chen gained an even better grasp of the current union.

A great uproar had indeed erupted in the upper echelon of the union with the loss of the saint artifact, almost causing the union to collapse. In the end, they managed to emerge safely all because of the secret assistance from the three great clans of the Holy Empire, which allowed the union to survive the disaster. The Radiant Saint Master Union was not a weak force; as long as they existed within the Holy Empire, they remained a force of the Holy Empire. This was why the three great clans did not wish to see the union collapse since experts of the union would join other organizations or the other two empires. This would strengthen their enemies.

The union and the three great clans silenced the matter regarding the loss of the saint artifact to prevent it from spreading any further. Then, they announced some other reason to cover the truth.

Jian Chen had even learned from the president and the grand elder that all the Radiant Saint Masters that placed in the top ten last time had failed to reach Class 7 other than him. This included Kara Liwei, the person known to be the greatest Class 6 Radiant

Saint Master. None of them fused with the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force successfully.

“Jian Chen, our union may have lost the saint artifact, but as long as the origin energy source in our possession doesn’t run out, our union can continue existing. According to your request many years ago, we have been devoting all our efforts in finding items that can store the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force. We’ve gathered quite a few, and they’re all in this Space Ring. I hope you can help us collect some more origin energy the next time the seal of the artifact loosens,” the president pleaded. He knew that the existence of the current union would all be up to Jian Chen. If the union lost its source of Radiant Saint Force origin energy, it would no longer have the power to gather all the high class Radiant Saint Masters of the continent.

Jian Chen accepted the Space Ring. “President, don’t worry. I will definitely store enough origin energy for you the next time the seal loosens.

“I will be able to relax if that’s the case.” The president and the grand elder both became relieved. Their thumping hearts calmed down, and they became much more at ease.

Jian Chen pondered in silence as he sat in the chair. Reminiscence filled his eyes. Scenes of when he was in the City of God as a Class 6 Radiant Saint Master flashed through his head again. At that moment, he remembered his bodyguard back then, Yang Ling. That fellow was even willing to throw his own life away to protect Jian Chen. There was also that chatterbox, Quan Youcai, who always stuck to him in an attempt to obtain the Radiant Artes.

Yang Ling loyalty had once moved Jian Chen deeply. Although he was just a bodyguard, Jian Chen had never treated him as an outsider during the time he spent with him. He treated him as a friend, even though he was just a Heaven Saint Master.

“President, grand elder, may I meet my bodyguard from back then, Yang Ling?” Jian Chen asked.

It was impossible for the president to not fulfill Jian Chen’s small request. He immediately sent people to contact Yang Ling. Then, he smiled and said, “There were two people of the top ten from last time who succeeded a little in fusing with the origin energy. One of them was the chosen daughter of the Kara clan, Kara Liwei. The other was Quan Youcai who you once knew. Quan Youcai’s talent is pretty impressive as well, possessing the potential to reach Class 7, so I assigned Yang Ling to protect him.”

## Chapter 1038: Kara Liwei

---

Jian Chen had no idea how he should react when he heard this news. They had not seen each other for so many years, yet Quan Youcai was actually with Yang Ling.

“Quan Youcai is shameless and feels unreliable sometimes. He would stick to me all the time and constantly chatter without end. While Yang Ling’s a quiet person. He’s simple and honest, so it sure would be interesting if the two of them are together,” Jian Chen thought inside.

Very soon, the burly Yang Ling was brought over by some people, and following him was the white-robed Quan Youcai who bore a detailed, blue badge on his chest.

“Oh wow, brother Yang Yutian, it really is you. When I heard the elders say that brother Yang Yutian had come back for vengeance with the eight clans, I didn’t believe it at first, but it really is you now that I’ve seen you again.” Quan Youcai’s eyes immediately lit up when he saw Jian Chen. Joy filled his face, and he shot over to Jian Chen’s side as if he had not even seen the president and grand elder. He walked around Jian Chen as he examined him, asking in disbelief, “Brother Yang Yutian, the elders can’t be right, can they? Have you really come back to find revenge with the eight clans, and that intense battle that just happened in the sky of the city can’t have been you, right?”

The president furrowed his brows when he saw how Quan Youcai behaved. He chastised with a deep voice, “Quan Youcai, do not be impolite to brother Jian Chen.”

“Ah! Teacher, grand elder, the two of you are here as well. Quan Youcai greets teacher and the grand elder.” Quan Youcai only just seemed to have noticed the presence of the president and grand elder. He immediately stopped acting in such a joking manner and greeted the two of them courteously.

After failing to fuse with the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force, he was taken on as a student of the president. However, his identity was nowhere near as great as Jian Chen and Yun Tian from before, who were disciples of the president. His relationship with the president was more akin to teacher and student.

Quan Youcai admired the president and grand elder greatly inside. He immediately became well-behaved before the two of them, standing to one side obediently and quietly. He would always stare at Jian Chen, wanting to say something but holding back while the president and grand elder were present.

Jian Chen also became cheerful when he saw his acquaintances of the past. Although Quan Youcai and Yang Ling could not be considered life-and-death comrades, they were still friends that had once accompanied him.

“Quan Youcai, let’s talk about the old days later,” Jian Chen smiled at Quan Youcai as he stood there obediently.

Quan Youcai nodded firmly. He only gave a small reply and did not say anything else as he glanced at the president and grand elder in an annoyed manner.

Jian Chen looked to Yang Ling. He examined him in detail. After being separated for ten years, Yang Ling was exactly the same as before with no changes whatsoever.

“Yang Ling, it’s been several years since we last met. How have you been in those years?” Jian Chen smiled.

Yang Ling’s gaze toward Jian Chen was slightly mixed. He then clasped his hands at Jian Chen courteously, “Yang Ling greets the esteemed master Yang Yutian. I thank master Yang Yutian for your concern. Yang Ling has been very well in the past few years.”

“Yang Ling, you can just call me Jian Chen. Jian Chen is my real name,” said Jian Chen.

“Yes, master Jian Chen,” Yang Ling clasped his hands as he replied. He was just as polite as before.

Jian Chen sat back on a large, comfy couch as he stared at Yang Ling in interest. He said steadily, “Yang Ling, have you ever hated me?” Jian Chen treated Yang Ling with great importance. Yang Ling’s status in Jian Chen’s heart had far exceeded Quan Youcai’s, or even a few ordinary friends’.

Back then on the ferry on Fragrance River, he faced the assassination attempt of the eight clans. Yang Ling was even willing to sacrifice his own life to protect Jian Chen and let him flee, which deeply touched Jian Chen.



“Yang Ling dares not!” Yang Ling completely treated himself as a servant, possessing no pride as a Heaven Saint Master. He spoke extremely politely.

“Yang Ling, do you still remember my promise back then? I once said to you that I will help you out given the chance. I will be following through with what I said now. Are you willing to follow me and become a Saint Ruler?” Jian Chen swore. He was extremely confident in allowing Yang Ling reach Saint Ruler.

Yang Ling’s eyes immediately lit up when he heard about becoming a Saint Ruler. He ravished with joy, but the light in his eyes soon darkened. He glanced at the president of the union.

The president chuckled, “Yang Ling, to be able to follow brother Jian Chen would be the greatest fortune you will ever come across in your life. Why don’t you hurry to thank brother Jian Chen? I believe you’ll be very successful in the future with brother Jian Chen’s help and become a supreme expert.”

Yang Ling behaved like he had just been pardoned from a crime. He became emotional and clasped his hands courteously to Jian Chen, “I thank master Jian Chen’s kindness very much.”

“Brother Jian Chen, we’ll give Yang Ling to you. From now on, he is your person. The union will no longer interfere with anything he does.” The president expressed his position on Jian Chen once again. With Jian Chen’s current status and strength, the union could only obediently abide even if he wanted to take

someone away from the union.

At that moment, a purple-badged elder walked into the room carrying an embroidered box. He directly made his way to the president and said, “President, I have brought you the item you want from the treasury.”

The president accepted the box from the elder and then slowly opened it. Three white, fist-sized rocks lay peacefully inside. They were all cubes and were transparent, like some type of high quality jade.

“Brother Jian Chen, these three rocks are known to us as Flaming Jadeite. It’s an extremely rare rock on the continent and cannot be found easily. Each piece is invaluable and extremely hard to find or purchase within the markets. The rock can store energy, and the power of the energy it can store depends on its quality. If a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler poured his power into it, even an ordinary person would be able to unleash a strike from a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler with the rock. This would apply to Saint Kings as well. The three Flaming Jadeites in my hand right now are of the highest quality and are completely able to store the power from a Saint King at Great Perfection. Brother Jian Chen is someone with a family, so I’d like to gift these three rocks to brother Jian Chen hoping that it can help out brother Jian Chen a little,” the president brought the box before Jian Chen before passing it to him.

Jian Chen could not help but think back to when he first took part in the competition within the artifact spirit after hearing the president’s explanations. A Class 6 Radiant Saint Master of the

Zaar family had brought in a wondrous rock from outside and used it to dish out the strike of a Saint King. By the looks of it, the rock should have been a Flaming Jadeite that the president had just told him about.

“I thank the president for his grand gift.” Jian Chen did not turn it down. He happily accepted the three rocks. The rocks could store the power of Saint Kings at Great Perfection, which meant that even ordinary people could produce a strike equal to Saint Kings at Great Perfection with the rock given that someone had poured energy into it beforehand. This was a valuable treasure to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen stayed at the union for one whole day. He spoke a lot with the president and grand elder and had even mentioned Yun Tian in their conversations. However, Jian Chen learned that Yun Tian had disappeared. Even when they used a secret technique to scour the continent, they failed to find his tracks.

By the time Jian Chen left the union, the sun had already set and darkness had descended, filling the entire world. Everything had been blanketed by the darkness of night.

“Brother Jian Chen, it’s been ten years since we last met, and who knows how long it will be until we meet again. Tonight, everything’ll be on me. I’d like to invite you to the most famous ferry of Fragrance River. Will brother give me that honor?” Quan Youcai laughed. He had returned to his jolly mood like before once he left the union.

Jian Chen did not turn down Quan Youcai’s suggestion. He took a

horse carriage to Fragrance River outside the city with Quan Youcai and the silent Yang Ling, as well as Hei Yu and Hong Lian.

Rui Jin, on the other hand, had entered the saint artifact with the Flaming Jadeites Jian Chen had obtained from the president to pour energy into them. Meanwhile, the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect had been dismissed by Jian Chen.

Jian Chen could not help but close his eyes as he sat in the rocky carriage. In that moment, his heart had become tranquil which rarely happened. He felt like he had returned to before, back to when he was an esteemed Class 6 Radiant Saint Master.

That night, Quan Youcai had paid the price. He booked the most famous ferry of Fragrance River, costing him several hundred thousand crystal coins. However, that was nothing to a Class 6 Radiant Saint Master.

The ferry rode through the wind and waves at night as gentle music played. Floating on the river, the two banks danced with lamp light as the sound of activity buzzed. This was the liveliest place every night, the place where aristocrats would gather.

On the deck, Jian Chen, Quan Youcai, and Yang Ling toasted and drank heartily. They talked about everything while even the cat-sized white tiger had been let out of the artifact spirit. It was currently tasting and eating the various delicacies on the table.

You Yue remained in the artifact space, using many low class magical beasts to increase her strength. She possessed the secret

protection of the artifact spirit, so Jian Chen did not worry about any dangers that would threaten her life.

Hei Yu and Hong Lian had followed Jian Chen along, but they had no interest in participating in something like this with their age. They sat at the rear of the ship as they rested with their eyes closed.

A white strike of light tore through the dark night sky, traveling to the ferry where Jian Chen was. Afterward, it slowly landed on the deck.

Jian Chen, Quan Youcai, and Yang Ling all looked at the uninvited person. It was an alluring beauty in a white dress who seemed to be in her twenties.

“Yang Yutian, you’ve disappeared for ten years. You’ve finally decided to come back,” the beauty smiled gracefully as she made her way elegantly up to Jian Chen.

“I never thought that it would actually be miss Kara Liwei. Even after so many years, miss Liwei is still as beautiful as before with no change through the years,” Jian Chen smiled back at the lady. She was the young lady of the Kara clan, Kara Liwei.

# Chapter 1039: The Divine Hall Hidden at the Bottom of the River

---

Kara Liwei arrived before Jian Chen with her eyes shining. She smiled, “Ten years have passed in the blink of an eye. Your temperament has undergone a huge change. It is like you’re a completely new person. Yang Yutian, ten years later, I am still the me from before, while you have stopped being your past self long ago.” Reminiscence clouded her beautiful eyes, as she seemed to recollect everything in the past.

Jian Chen smiled silently at Kara Liwei’s words, and he replied, “Miss Liwei really does like to joke. It may be ten years since we last met, but I am still my old self. Even if my status and strength differ from before.”

Quan Youcai and Yang Ling drank together. They understood what was going on, so they excluded Jian Chen and refused to talk to him. However, they would glance at Jian Chen and Kara Liwei at times, purposefully or otherwise.

“Really?” Kara Liwei smiled. She extended her slender, white fingers and poured wine into an empty cup on the table. Then, she glanced at Jian Chen and said, “Since the current Yang Yutian is still the former Yang Yutian, do you still remember that in the artifact space, I saved you once?”

“Of course, I remember. At that time, I was caught in a tight encirclement within the artifact space. It was all because miss Liwei arrived in time. You kept a portion of enemies busy, which allowed me enough time to cast Judgement’s Sword and change

the situation,” Jian Chen said with a smile.

“Then, how do you intend on paying me back for assisting you all those years ago?” Her eyes glowed with an alluring light as she stared unblinkingly at Jian Chen’s weathered face. She slightly smiled.

“When the seal of the saint artifact loosens in forty years, I will do everything I can to assist miss Liwei in breaking through. Does this satisfy miss Liwei?”

“I hope the esteemed Yang Yutian does not break his promise and upsets me,” Kara Liwei quietly responded in a delicate and touching fashion. Afterward, she raised her cup to Jian Chen and said, “Come, Yang Yutian. I want to toast you a cup for my successful breakthrough to Class 7 in forty years’ time.” Kara Liwei brought the cup of wine close to Jian Chen’s lips. She stared at him with a slight flush on her beautiful face. Jian Chen had even caught a whiff of her faint fragrance from her fingers; the smell was intoxicating. Kara Liwei was a beauty that outshined the moon. If Jian Chen did not possess a tough mental fortitude, he would have let down his guard long ago.

Jian Chen chuckled as he accepted the cup of wine from Kara Liwei. Then, he downed it completely.

“Yang Yutian, is the wine good?” Kara Liwei suddenly asked, as her eyes continued to shine.

“This wine is valuable, so of course it’s...” Jian Chen replied

subconsciously. However, before he could finish his words, Kara Liwei suddenly leaned forward. She kissed Jian Chen with her cherry-red lips.

Jian Chen was caught off-guard. He had never thought that Kara Liwei would do something like this, and he immediately became stunned. However, he returned to his senses very soon. Their lips separated, and Kara Liwei blushed. She slowly backed away with a slight smile.

Spurt! Quan Youcai suddenly spat out a mouthful of wine while he was drinking heartily with Yang Ling. All of it landed on Yang Ling's face, as he too became stunned.

Yang Ling used his clothes to wipe his face before looking at Quan Youcai in confusion. "Master Quan Youcai, why have you spat all the wine onto my face? It's such a pity for such good wine."

"Miss Liwei, you..." Jian Chen was astounded, as he stared blankly at Kara Liwei.

Kara Liwei giggled. Her smile was charming, while her blush deepened. She said, "Yang Yutian, you must always remember that you owe me the most important thing." With that, dense Radiant Saint Force suddenly began to condense into a cloud beneath Kara Liwei. She did not stick around. Instead, she stepped onto the cloud and left the ferry. She made her way to the riverbank.

"Yang Yutian, I might as well pass on a message from the ancestor of my clan. The Kara clan wishes to be eternal friends



with you.” Kara Liwei’s voice rang through the sky. As her voice subsided, she disappeared into the darkness as well.

“Jian Chen, what’re you waiting for? Go chase her! She’s about to run away!” Quan Youcai put down his cup and frantically called out to Jian Chen. He was panicking.

Jian Chen looked in the direction that Kara Liwei had disappeared. He shook his head with a forced smile and gently sighed. “Come, let’s keep drinking.”

“My god. You missed such a good opportunity. If you chased her, nothing would’ve been impossible.” Regret filled Quan Youcai.

Kara Liwei’s appearance was only a small deviation from their plans. They returned to their previous state very quickly, continuing to heartily drink and talk.

At that moment, the tight-robed You Yue stood in a grassy plain within the artifact space. Beside her lay a five-meter-long blue wolf littered with sword slashes. There had been bloodshed, and it had stopped breathing long ago.

You Yue wiped away the sweat on her forehead as she stood before the wolf’s corpse. She murmured, “Why do I suddenly feel so uneasy?” After a period of silent thought, she called out to the empty space, “Artifact spirit!”

“This one greets the mistress. What does the mistress require?”

The artifact spirit appeared beside You Yue out of nowhere. It was extremely polite, as if it was talking to Jian Chen.

“Send me out of here,” You Yue said to the artifact spirit.

“Yes, mistress,” replied the artifact spirit. He immediately contacted Jian Chen. After he gained Jian Chen’s approval, he let You Yue out.

You Yue’s appearance on the ferry naturally piqued Yang Ling and Quan Youcai’s curiosity. As a result, Jian Chen introduced You Yue to them before continuing to drink.

You Yue changed into a white dress in the ship’s hold, regaining her elegance and nobility as a princess. Afterward, she sat quietly next to Jian Chen and helped refill his cup. She did not speak a lot.

At that moment, Hong Lian and Hei Yu’s expressions changed. They sat at the rear of the ship. Both of their eyes suddenly snapped open. Then, they leaped to their feet. A gleam of light flashed in their eyes as they glared at the surface of the river.

“There’s something wrong with the river,” Hong Lian said with a deep voice. Her eyes were dyed red at that moment, as if flames rolled within them. At that moment, her eyes seemed to be able to penetrate the void and see through all illusions.

A while later, she became surprised. She said with a deep voice, “How is that possible? How can a divine hall hide at the bottom of

the river?”

“What? A divine hall?” Hei Yu was also surprised as disbelief filled his face.

Hong Lian nodded as she stared fixedly at the bottom of the river. “The divine hall has been sealed at the bottom, which concealed all of its presence. Now that the seal has eroded with time, the divine hall is currently breaking free and floating to the top.”

As soon as Hong Lian finished speaking, the peaceful surface of the river suddenly began to churn. Huge bubbles emerged like boiling water. The entire river began to rise at a visible rate, flowing onto the banks of the river very quickly.

# Chapter 1040: The Bright Moon Divine Hall

---

As the water quickly rose, the deck below Jian Chen no longer remained stable. It began to violently rock.

This sudden occurrence sort of surprised Jian Chen and the others. They immediately stopped drinking. Quan Youcai's face twitched, and he instantly sobered up.

The ferry started to rock more and more violently, which made it harder and harder to keep upright. The drinking table on the deck also began to violently tremble, as various dishes crashed onto the deck.

“What’s happening? Why is the ferry suddenly rocking so violently? Are we capsizing?” Quan Youcai called out. He looked around with interest. The current situation confused him.

Yang Ling immediately became alert, and his drunkenness vanished as well. His eyes shone as he glared around, prepared for battle at any moment.

You Yue hugged Jian Chen's arm, but she seemed calm. It was like she would be safe even if the sky collapsed as long as she was by Jian Chen's side.

Jian Chen slowly put down his wine cup as he nonchalantly stood on the deck. He expanded his presence, which quickly reached into the water.

However, Jian Chen became surprised very quickly. Disbelief flooded his face, as he said to Quan Youcai and Yang Ling, “Leave the ferry and contact the sailors of the ship. Tell them to dock to the side immediately.” With that, Jian Chen took to the sky with You Yue and flew a hundred meters into the air.

Although Quan Youcai and Yang Ling were completely clueless about the current situation, they needed to follow Jian Chen’s instructions. The two of them immediately ran below deck to contact the sailors. Then, they took to the sky as well and left the ferry.

Hei Yu and Hong Lian also took to the air and reached an altitude of a hundred meters from the rear of the ship. They gathered with Jian Chen, and looked down at the surface of the river.

The water of Fragrance River climbed higher and higher. It had already flowed over the banks and flooded into the distance. At this moment, the water levels alarmed all the people on the two sides. Some stronger people began to use their various abilities and climbed the trees around them.

The ferries in the center of the river also began to slowly tip and sank one by one. The sailors on the boats had all leaped off. They were currently swimming toward the banks in confusion and alarm.

Splash! Suddenly, a huge splash exploded, which created a huge ripple that was over a thousand meters wide. In that instant, a

silvery-white divine hall slowly broke through the water. As it flickered with light, it surged into the sky as water surged off of it. Everything unfolded on a grand scale.

“W-what is this thing?” Quan Youcai was struck dumb. He stared at the silvery-white divine hall as it rose into the air. Shock filled his face. Yang Ling, who hovered beside him, also became wide-eyed. They could not recognize the divine hall with their current level of knowledge.

The divine hall shot into the air while emitting a hazy, silver light. A sacredness permeated the hall, as it lit up the dark night sky to the point where it seemed like daytime.

The noisy banks became quiet in that instant. Everyone stared blankly at the divine hall that was growing, as it rose into the sky. No one paid any more attention to the water that had suddenly risen.

The divine hall was a thousand meters long and several hundred meters tall. The craftsmanship was exquisite and perfect. It seemed like a flawless piece of art. The divine hall rose to an altitude of ten kilometers before it stopped. It radiated with a pressure that spread out in all directions in a blanketing manner. All the energy of the world became docile before it.

This alerted all the ancestors of the eight clans, the experts of the Zaar family, and the people of the Radiant Saint Master Union. When they raised their heads and saw the thumb-sized divine hall that hovered in the air, they immediately became interested. Without any hesitation, they all shot into the air as fast as they

could and made way to the divine hall.

At the same time, many experts in various places of the continent sensed the divine hall as well. They all came out of seclusion and traveled toward the City of God.

“I never thought that there would be divine hall hidden at the bottom of Fragrance River. This is unbelievable,” Jian Chen murmured to himself as he stared at the divine hall in the air. Afterward, he charged toward it with You Yue in his arms while Hei Yu and Hong Lian followed close behind.

Quan Youcai stared at the divine hall in interest, as he said with marvel, “Looks like it’s really true that there can never be anything too strange. I never thought that a house could fly and even fly so high. This sure has broadened my horizons today. Yang Ling, let’s go up there and have a look,” Quan Youcai and Yang Ling did not fall behind either, and they tailed Jian Chen into the sky.

There were quite a few Heaven Saint Masters on the banks of the river. As such, even more Heaven Saint Masters took to the air as soon as Quan Youcai and Yang Ling followed Jian Chen. They used the energy of the world to levitate and created colorful lights that flickered in the sky. The sight was enchanting.

Jian Chen arrived at the same altitude as the divine hall with You Yue. The two of them stared fixedly at it. The four words ‘Bright Moon Divine Hall’ hung on a great big board above the main entrance.

The appearance of the divine hall had raised quite a large commotion. Figures constantly flickered through the surroundings and Saint Rulers had already arrived at the main entrance. There were a few Saint Rulers from the union and the Zaar family besides the ancestors of the eight clans. The faces of all the Saint Rulers from the eight clans were pale and haggard. Clearly, they still had not fully recovered from their self-mutilation earlier in the day.

“The Bright Moon Divine Hall. I never thought that it would actually be the Bright Moon Divine Hall,” a cry rang out from nearby. An old man in simple robes stared at the bright divine hall as all the people from the Radiant Saint Master Union gathered behind him. To no surprise, the president and grand elder were present as well.

When Jian Chen saw the old man, his eyes froze. He could not help but think back to the old man cleaning furniture. Jian Chen had initially met this man in the Radiant Saint Tower.

At that time, the old man was still a mysterious expert that Jian Chen could not see through, but now, Jian Chen could clearly see the old man’s strength. He was a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King that had just broken through.

The president sighed deeply and said, “It’s recorded that fifty thousand years ago, fairy Hao Yue was possibly the most beautiful person in the world. She also possessed unprecedented, exceptional talent. She used just two thousand years to reach the peak of Saint Emperor and was only a paper-thin margin away from surpassing Saint Emperor, but it is a pity. She failed to



overcome this margin and was stuck there for over seven thousand years. In the end, she still failed to escape the limits of life and passed away in meditation helplessly and regretfully.”

TL note: It's a cultural thing to refer to beautiful and powerful female cultivators as 仙子. It's really just a female way to say the gender-neutral immortal, except Hao Yue here isn't really immortal because she passed away. This is why I stuck with fairy, albeit a translation I dislike. Also, 'Hao Yue' means bright moon, so the divine hall actually has the same name as the person. I used an english translation for the divine hall since it's more like a title, while the Hao Yue in 'fairy Hao Yue' is likely to be her name.

“It's said that the cultivation method fairy Hao Yue used was extremely wondrous. It used the essence of moonlight. When cultivating at night, the whole process of absorption is clearly visible. It's a cultivation method that surpasses the Saint Tier, and anyone who uses it to cultivate will be able to improve at astonishing speeds,” added the grand elder.

“It's indeed mentioned in the records like that, but it's a pity that only females can use the cultivation method,” said the president.

With that, Jian Chen's eyes immediately lit up. He seemed to beam slightly.

At that moment, the surrounding space began to ripple violently. Space Gates appeared one after another as Saint Kings stepped out with tremendous presences. They all stared at the divine hall, gasping uncontrollably.

Jian Chen glances over all the Saint Kings, and he saw the people of the ten protector clans. Included was an expert from the Pure Heart Pavilion and one from the Changyang clan. However, Jian Chen did not know the name of the Changyang clan expert even though he had seen him before.

“I never thought that it would be the Bright Moon Divine Hall of the famed fairy Hao Yue from fifty thousand years ago. It’s said that the divine hall was built from some wondrous crystals from the moon and that the fairy spent a thousand years traversing to and fro collecting them. Not only is the divine hall extremely tough, it possesses Moonlight Force,” said a knowledgeable expert from the ten protector clans as they marveled in wonder.

# Chapter 1041: Saint King Killing Formation (One)

---

More and more people gathered around the Bright Moon Divine Hall. Not only did quite a few Saint Kings come, a lot of Saint Rulers arrived as well. There was also some Heaven Saint Masters and Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters, who stood on a milky-white light.

A capital city of the continent was a place where experts gathered. Fragrance River was just outside the City of God, which was why many experts were drawn over immediately when the divine hall broke its seal. A few people with certain backgrounds even used secret techniques to communicate with the experts of their family and their powerful friends, informing them of the current events here.

“So this object is called a divine hall, something a Saint Emperor crafted. No wonder it’s so wondrous and can fly to such a high place,” Quan Youcai and Yang Ling arrived behind Jian Chen, as they marveled at the divine hall that shone with hazy light.

“The material of this divine hall really is extremely special. It can actually absorb moonlight and transform it into its own power.” Hei Yu stared at the divine hall in wonder.

Jian Chen’s eyes froze when he heard that and only after a period of close observation did he notice that the divine hall had indeed absorbed a sliver of moonlight from the night sky. The moonlight was so faint. If he did not look closely, he would not be able to sense it at all.

A sliver of reminiscence appeared in Hong Lian's eyes as inherited memories flashed through her head, "They're right. This Bright Moon Divine Hall is indeed created from special materials from the moon. There are records regarding this material in my inherited memories." Hong Lian paused and raised her head up toward the moon in the sky. "This is because in the ancient times, a Saint Emperor of my Divine Phoenix clan flew off to the moon. However, she took much more time than fairy Hao Yue, taking up four thousand years for a round trip."

Jian Chen immediately became astounded when he heard these words. He subconsciously looked toward the moon in the sky and sighed emotionally. "I never thought that we would be so far away from the moon, that it would take a thousand, or even several thousand years for Saint Emperors to reach there. This is unbelievable."

"The moon is indeed a place that people rarely set foot upon. Even in the ancient times when there were the most Saint Emperors, very few people were willing to spend that much time to fly to the moon, because Space Gates cannot be created in outer space. The only way to the moon is by flying over slowly," said Hong Lian.

"The divine hall must possess the cultivation method of fairy Hao Yue. Although only females can use it, if you give it to those talented female clansmen once we take it back, their future accomplishments will be unlimited." The eyes of the experts from the protector clans and a few Saint Kings of other organizations shone, as they stared at the divine hall with obvious greed.

Even if you ignored the value of the material used to build the divine hall, just the cultivation method was enough to cause the people from the protector clans to drool.

This was a cultivation method that surpassed Saint Tier. Even the protector clans that had existed since the ancient times did not have such a great cultivation method.

At this moment, the people of the protector clans began to move before everyone else. They either flew toward the divine hall themselves or with a few Saint Ruler juniors. Only the middle-aged man from the Pure Heart Pavilion remained still, as he was the only person who the divine hall did not tempt out of everyone present.

The people of the protector clans were like flares. As soon as they began to move, the Saint Kings from ancient families or other large organizations began to move as well. They quickly approached the divine hall.

The Saint Rulers in the surroundings all hesitated, as they levitated in the air. Before the Saint Kings, they had nothing to contend against them as mere Saint Rulers. Even if they came across treasures, they would not be able to beat the Saint Kings to take it for themselves. Instead, they might even face life-threatening danger.

However, not all the Saint Rulers feared death. After a while of hesitation, someone finally gave into their expanding desires, as he

flew toward the divine hall even with the dangers ahead. However, his actions deeply influenced other people, which immediately led to more and more Saint Rulers flying toward the divine hall. Even a few Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters and Heaven Saint Masters followed behind them all.

“Quan Youcai, Yang Ling, it’ll be dangerous inside. You two should stay outside and not take part,” Jian Chen said to the two of them, before flying toward the divine hall with You Yue in his arms. Hei Yu and Hong Lian followed closely behind him.

“Sigh, looks like a fierce struggle is bound to happen. However, the new master of the divine hall seems to have already been secretly determined,” said the Saint King of the Pure Heart Pavilion. He glanced at the nearby Jian Chen. When he saw Hei Yu behind him, an obvious sliver of fear appeared in his eyes. Afterward, he ripped open a Space Gate and left. He had no plans in interfering with the matter of this divine hall.

The ancestors of the eight clans all hung in the air with their pale faces. They stared deeply at the people who flew toward the divine hall as regret filled their faces.

“We’re already heavily injured. We don’t have the ability to take part in the struggle for the divine hall at all, so let’s return,” said a Saint Ruler of the eight clans, before leaving first with a face full of regret.

The other Saint Rulers all sighed inside. Then, they left dejectedly as well. They all returned to the City of God.

Jian Chen arrived at the main entrance of the divine hall with the crowd. You Yue was still in his arms. He hid within the mass of people.

Bang! Bang! Bang...

A few muffled sounds rang out from ahead. The people from the protector clans at the very front had already opened the closed door of the divine hall. The heavy, stone door slowly opened with a series of rumbles. Immediately, a cold stream of air surged wildly from within. It was almost bone-chilling and gave off a bleak feeling, which shocked everyone present.

“This is Moonlight Force!” called out a Saint King from among the people of the protector clans.

“Moonlight Force is not Saint Force, so it indeed possesses odd characteristics. No wonder fairy Hao Yue became the most powerful Saint Emperor back then. It probably has a close connection to this unique Moonlight Force other than her own strength,” someone suggested.

All the people stepped on the floor made from the crystals of the moon, as they slowly made their way inside. After they passed through the main entrance, an extremely vast space appeared before them. In the center of the space stood a hundred-meter-tall stone tablet. There were words clearly carved into it.

“Saint Emperors and Saint Kings are forbidden from entering the

divine hall, or you will be responsible for the consequences!”

All the Saint Kings revealed rather horrible expressions when they saw this simple message. Although the warning of the tablet seemed to be filled with confidence and arrogance, where it dared to even look down on Saint Emperor, none of the Saint King present dared to not keep the warning in mind. The owner of the divine hall was the fairy Hao Yue. She had reached the peak of Saint Emperor after all, someone who was only inches away from surpassing Saint Emperor.

On the other hand, the Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters all became excited. They were all ecstatic, as they internally praised the heavens for being fair.

“I never thought that the divine hall would only allow people below Saint King to enter, barring the entry of Saint Kings and Saint Emperors. Fairy Hao Yue must’ve set up a formation to deal with Saint Kings and Saint Emperors inside,” a Saint King of an ancient clan said with an ugly expression.

“Hmph, it has been several tens of thousand years since fairy Hao Yue’s era. The formation must be far weaker than it was before. Do we really need to fear with so many people?” shouted a blue-robed old man loudly and courageously.

“Fairy Hao Yue may be the strongest Saint Emperor back then and possessed terrifying strength, but wouldn’t it become a joke if we were scared off just by some words on a tablet?” Another middle-aged man added. He showed no intentions of backing off.



# Chapter 1042: Saint King Killing Formation (Two)

---

“You’re right. If so many people are frightened to the point where we would shy away just because of a tablet, would we still have any dignity to move around on the continent? I, Ji Yuanba, will be entering the Bright Moon Divine Hall no matter what today. I’d like to see the abilities of the former strongest Saint Emperor, fairy Hao Yue and how great they are. Can she use a mere divine hall to kill a Saint King?” said a burly, scar-faced, middle-aged man.

All the Saint Kings reacted to these words. The fear in their eyes disappeared, and they became determined. They were not mindless. Since they were able to become Saint Kings, life and death situations had tempered each and every one of them. They had stepped over countless corpses and climbed out from mountains of bodies. How would they fear death? Also, Saint Kings were people who stood on the very apex of the continent, so they naturally had their pride. How could they bear with the fact that just some words scared them away?

“Looks like it’s going to be quite entertaining here.” At this moment, clear laughter rang out from behind. Another striking Saint King had entered the divine hall. He looked roughly thirty years old, and was extremely handsome. He possessed a scholarly elegance, where all his movements carried great grace. Beside him was a white-dressed, devastating beauty.

“Kara Liwei!” Jian Chen became slightly stunned when he saw her. He had not thought that Kara Liwei had actually returned and

would come back to the divine hall.

Afterward, Jian Chen glanced toward the middle-aged man who stood beside her. His gaze immediately froze. He recognized this man as well. It was the ancestor of the Kara clan that he had met in the imperial palace of the Qinhuang Kingdom back then.

“Kara Lot, I thought you wouldn’t come. I didn’t think you’d actually bring the treasure of your clan as well,” a heavy voice boomed from the crowd. An ordinary-looking, middle-aged man in tight robes spoke to the ancestor of the Kara clan.

Kara Lot laughed and said, “A divine hall has appeared. This is quite a matter on the continent, enough to make all the Saint Kings fight to the point of death for it. If I have enough luck, I can take the divine hall for myself, which will also benefit the clan greatly. Kazda Jianxiong, why would you think I wouldn’t come when there’s such a good opportunity?”

The middle-aged man was the ancestor of the Kazda clan, which was one of the three great clans of the Holy Empire.

Then, Kara Lot looked toward Jian Chen and smiled. “I never thought that brother Jian Chen would be here as well. Fantastic. If brother Jian Chen does not mind, I’m willing to travel with brother Jian Chen, as well as let Liwei broaden her knowledge in the meantime. Does brother Jian Chen mind?”

Kara Liwei had also discovered Jian Chen in the crowd. She could not help but think of what had happened earlier on the ferry,

which caused her face to blush slightly. When she had left the ferry before, she had already left the City of God with the ancestor of the clan, but she never imagined that the Bright Moon Divine Hall would break out as soon as they arrived home. The great activity alarmed Kara Lot, who forced her to come back with him.

The Qinhuang Kingdom was a subsidiary of the Kara clan, while Jian Chen was an Imperial Protector of the Qinhuang Kingdom. As a result, he stood with the Kara clan. In other words, Jian Chen had no reason to turn down Kara Lot's request. He agreed straightforwardly before beginning to talk to Kara Lot.

Kara Liwei also recovered her previous state. She arrived at Jian Chen's side with a beaming smile. Then, she chattered with You Yue, as she held her hand. They got along well very quickly and giggled from time to time.

"Xiangtian, I never thought that you're here as well. This is fantastic. We can travel together as great grandson and great grandfather, and I can use that time to introduce you to some matters of the protector clan, so that you can have some understanding." The great elder of the Changyang clan also arrived beside Jian Chen. Although he was amiable, he stressed 'great grandson and great grandfather' when he mentioned it.

Jian Chen did not become particularly joyful when he saw this 'great grandfather' whose name he did not even know. All he did was agree indifferently, before devoting his attention elsewhere. Jian Chen did not have any great impressions of the people within the protector Changyang clan besides Changyang Zu Yunxiao and his wife. Deep within, he did not even accept the fact that he was a

member of the protector clan.

The great elder from the protector clan slightly furrowed his brows when he saw Jian Chen's indifferent attitude. He revealed a sliver of displeasure, but he did not say anything more.

The people gathered within the divine hall slowly made their ways into the depths. However, some people seemed to have broadcasted the warning on the table, which caused the Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters who had initially decided not to take part to surge into the divine hall as well. The people within constantly increase.

At the same time, the news of the divine hall and the warning of the tablet spread through the continent like wildfire. It made many experts green with greed as even more Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Master used various methods to make their way to the City of God from all directions.

A great group of people was currently making their way into the depths of the divine hall in a bold fashion. A large number of Heaven Saint Masters and a few Saint Rulers would enter every room and hall they passed.

The group of people gradually dispersed. A few Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers ran off to find their own fortunes, while only the Saint Kings remained gathered together. They steadily advanced into the depth with a cautious and vigilant fashion. They ignored the surrounding rooms.

“Brother Jian Chen, the most valuable thing here is the cultivation method fairy Hao Yue left behind, but treasures like that can only be obtained from the very depths of the hall. It definitely won’t be outside,” the ancestor of the Kara clan explained to Jian Chen. He passed on the experience and knowledge he had accumulated over several thousand years to Jian Chen, while Kazda Jianxiong would add in a few things from time to time as well. Their intentions for friendship were self-explanatory.

The group of them arrived in a huge square where the ceiling was a hundred meters above. A huge sculpture stood in the center of the place; it depicted a lady who seemed to be around twenty years of age. Her white clothes made her seem sacred, while her hair was draped on her shoulders. She was extremely pretty, like a goddess from beyond the heavens. She did not seem like an existence that would be present in a mortal realm.

“This sculpture is undoubtedly fairy Hao Yue...”

“Fairy Hao Yue sure is a lady worthy of being known as a fairy. She really does look like an otherworldly fairy.”

“Fairy Hao Yue’s talent is unprecedented, reaching the peak of Saint Emperor at such a young age. She became the strongest among the Saint Emperors, though it’s a pity that she couldn’t overcome the final obstacle and break through. She passed away like that. What a pity, what a pity...”

Many of the Saint Kings stared at the sculpture with mixed emotions, as they discussed. Various emotional sighs and sounds of

regret mingled together to form a hubbub.

“Fairy Hao Yue sure is an unparalleled beauty.” Jian Chen stared at the sculpture in a daze as well, as he murmured. Fairy Hao Yue’s beauty had completely exceeded the level where it could be praised as devastating. Only the Heavenly Enchantress could be compared to her out of all the people he had met.

At this moment, something suddenly happened. An extremely dense killing intent suddenly appeared, which filled the entire divine hall. It was bone-chillingly cold and as soon as it appeared, it invaded the bodies of Saint Kings, worming its way into their bone marrow. It seemed to have frozen the center of their bones, and even Jian Chen was unable to avoid it.

All the Saint Kings present revealed extremely horrible expressions. Afterward, surging Saint Force gushed out from within their bodies in an attempt to resist the invasion of the chilling killing intent.

# Chapter 1043: Saint King Killing Formation (Three)

---

In a grand fashion, terrifying, surging energy erupted in the square within the divine hall. The energies from all the Saint Kings coiled together and immediately transformed into an extremely great force that flooded the surroundings. It knocked all the Saint Rulers and people below Saint Rulers far away. The Heaven Saint Masters and Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters were affected especially heavily. They all vomited blood, as they flew backward. They were all heavily injured, while the fragile Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters had suffered even worse injuries.

Jian Chen, Hei Yu, Hong Lian, Kara Lot, Kazda Jianxiong, and the great elder of the protector Changyang clan gathered together. They all knew You Yue and Jian Chen's relationship, so they all worked together without explicit communication to create an energy barrier around You Yue and Kara Liwei, which prevented the two of them from being harmed in any way.

"This should be a method fairy Hao Yue left behind to deal with Saint Kings in particular. Get the two of them far away from us first, so that we can move without worry. Otherwise, it'll be very hard for us to take care of them once we come across true danger," growled the great elder of the Changyang clan.

"Brother Jian Chen, what do you think?" Kara Lot looked toward Jian Chen.

"Sure." Jian Chen hesitated slightly, before directly striking the protective barrier around You Yue and Kara Liwei. He knocked the

two of them far away.

“The killing intent here is rapidly becoming stronger. If it continues like this, probably even Saint Kings at Great Perfection will struggle to resist it...”

“This killing intent is odd. It’s not purely killing intent. There seems to be something else within it. Once it invades our bodies, it’ll wreak havoc like maggots in the bone.”

“Let’s advance faster and pass through this region...”

Everyone called out. Afterward, they all used their surrounding Saint Force to resist the invasion of the killing intent. They continued toward the depths of the divine hall step by step. However, the deeper they traveled, the denser the killing intent became. Some First Heavenly Layer Saint Kings even began to struggle with resisting the killing intent.

Jian Chen did not emit energy like the everyone else. He created a protective barrier on the surface on his body to resist the killing intent and expanded the Chaotic Force within him to fill every inch. He completely utilized the advantages of the Chaotic Body, which made resistance even easier. The weird killing intent permeating the divine hall could not break through his body’s defenses at all.

Jian Chen looked around at the others, and a sliver of suspicion appeared on his face. Even Saint Kings found it rather difficult to resist this killing intent, let alone Saint Rulers. If Saint Rulers had



entered this region, they would definitely fail to resist the invasion of the killing intent and die. They would not be able to pass through the place, so why did fairy Hao Yue leave such a warning on the tablet?

“Perhaps fairy Hao Yue just didn’t want the divine hall she spent so much effort into crafting to fall into the hands of others, which was why she cast down this killing formation here to prevent the entry of Saint Kings and Saint Emperors? And that it’s not that those below Saint King can enter the divine hall safely, but their strength is just too weak, so they do not catch the fairy’s attention? Maybe that was why she did not explain it on the tablet?” Jian Chen analyzed inside. He already began to doubt whether everyone had misinterpreted the tablet. If the killing formation did not affect those below Saint King, why would he be faced with the attacks of such a powerful killing intent? After all, his comprehension remained at the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler. Only his prowess in battle reached the level of Saint Kings.

At this moment, a barrier silently appeared. It was extremely large and not a normal white. Instead, it was a silvery moonlight condensed from Moonlight Force. It filled the entire hall and enveloped Jian Chen’s group as well as the Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters behind.

Moonlight Force immediately began to surge within the barrier. It condensed into countless sword Qi that fell like rain that traveled toward all the people within the area with unbelievable speed. This included the Saint Rulers, Heaven Saint Masters, and Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters.

With this, You Yue, Kara Liwei, and the other experts all changed drastically in expression. Despair filled the eyes of many people. This was an ability from a formation a Saint Emperor cast down, so its strength was self-evident. How could they resist it?

“Crap!” Jian Chen’s expression changed drastically. He used the Illusory Flash and shot toward You Yue at his greatest speed. At the same time, the saint artifact shot out from the center of his eyebrows and transformed into a huge golden tower in the blink of an eye. It shot toward You Yue and wanted to approach her. Then, it could suck her into the artifact space.

If the saint artifact wanted to suck away someone, it needed to be within a suitable proximity. However, the Moonlight Force sword Qi were just too fast, much faster than Jian Chen and the saint artifact. Before they could even approach You Yue, the sword Qi had struck.

“Yue’er!” Jian Chen cried out. He was utterly enraged and filled with regret. If he had known earlier, he would have sucked You Yue into the artifact space long ago.

At the same time, Jian Chen shook violently. Over ten sword Qi had struck him at the same time, but they were only as strong as attacks from Saint Kings of the First Heavenly Layer. It could not break through the defense of his Chaotic Body, so they splattered apart like eggs as soon as they struck him. They recondensed into Moonlight Force and did not disperse.

Jian Chen also arrived beside You Yue. However, just when he wanted to send her into the artifact space, he suddenly became

stunned. He stared blankly at You Yue as disbelief flooded her face.

You Yue stood there with panic in her eyes, yet she was completely fine. She was unharmed.

“You Yue, you are fine?” Jian Chen asked in surprise. He had personally experienced the power of the sword Qi and every single one of them was as powerful as a strike from a First Heavenly Layer Saint King. An attack like that was extremely fatal to someone with You Yue’s level of strength.

Kara Liwei also stood there, still badly shaken. She could not help but break into laughter when she saw just how much concern Jian Chen had for You Yue. She patted her chest and said, “Yang Yutian, I never thought that you’d care for your fiancée so much. Don’t worry, we’re fine.”

You Yue warmed up inside when she saw Jian Chen’s expression. She smiled sweetly and said, “Jian Chen, don’t worry. I’m fine. The sword Qi from before doesn’t seem to be able to harm us. Remember the warning on the tablet? These attacks won’t affect anyone below Saint King.”

Jian Chen looked around and realized that everyone weaker than Saint King remained unharmed. Other than a few people injured from the eruption of energy from the Saint Kings, no one else suffered any injuries.

Jian Chen came to a realization when he saw this. The warning on the tablet was indeed true. The formations within the Bright

Moon Divine Hall indeed could not injure people below Saint King. Although he was still technically a Saint Ruler, he could display the strength of Saint Kings, which was why the formations recognized him as a Saint King.

“Jian Chen, be careful. The sword Qi has condensed again,” You Yue warned.

Jian Chen paid no attention to the sword Qi. The thirty-meter-tall saint artifact floated above him. Then, he said to the two of them, “Do you two want to enter the saint artifact?”

“Jian Chen, it’s not like we’ll be harmed if we stay here, so why don’t we stay outside? I’ve never witnessed such a major matter before.” You Yue turned down Jian Chen’s suggestion.

Jian Chen hesitated slightly on that, but he still agreed with You Yue in the end. He did not force You Yue into the artifact space, but he did hand the saint artifact over to You Yue. He secretly ordered the artifact spirit to immediately suck the two of them away once they faced danger.

The sword Qi condensed from Moonlight Force once again and shot toward everyone like a blanket. All the Saint Kings used various abilities to resist the sword Qi attacks.

As Jian Chen had the Chaotic Body, he was able to resist against attacks from Third Heavenly Layer Saint Kings. Unless they reached the Fourth Heavenly Layer, they would not be able to break through his body at all, which was why he had it the easiest

out of everyone present.

However, Jian Chen could clearly feel that the attack this time was much more powerful than before after the densely-packed sword Qi struck him.

“Argh!” Suddenly, a miserable cry rang out. Sword Qi had struck a First Heavenly Layer Saint King, and tremendous energy began to float unceasingly from within his body. All of it dispersed in the divine hall in the end.

“Sh\*t, this bloody Moonlight Force is devouring my energy,” the person cried out in horror. He began to panic.

The complexions of all the Saint Kings present changed, becoming extremely horrible.

# Chapter 1044: Saint King Killing Formation (Four)

---

The Saint Force within that First Heavenly Layer Saint King leaked out rapidly and floated out into the moonlight barrier. It was refined into Moonlight Force very quickly, which strengthened the barrier.

“This can’t continue. The more Saint Force you radiate, the stronger the barrier becomes. You need to leave here as soon as possible,” called out a great elder of a protector clan.

“If all of your Saint Force gets devoured, you won’t be able to leave even if you are a Saint King. You better leave quickly while you still have some remaining energy,” someone within the crowd tried to persuade him. If the Saint Force continued to be refined into Moonlight Force, it would be extremely detrimental to everyone.

The Saint King’s complexion had already become the color of moonlight—extremely pale. Under everyone’s insistence, he hesitated slightly before he stood up in a trembling fashion. He made his way toward the barrier with a face filled with unwillingness and regret, as he poured all his energy into suppressing the Moonlight Force within him, in an attempt to reduce the speed at that his Saint Force got devoured.

He made his way to the barrier very quickly, but just when he wanted to leave, the barrier obstructed him.

“Dah!” The Saint King immediately roared out, as he struck the barrier as hard as he could with the curved blade in his hand. However, the barrier did not even end up trembling.

The Moonlight Force in the sky began to condense once more into densely-packed sword Qi. It radiated with a great pressure that flooded the divine hall. At the same time, the odd killing intent that invaded their bodies appeared again, and it actually merged into the sword Qi strand by strand. It powered up the sword Qi.

“The Second Heavenly Layer. The attacks this time are as powerful as a Second Heavenly Layer Saint King,” a Saint King warned the crowd.

As soon as he finished his words, the sword Qi began to fall and blanketed down on everyone.

Jian Chen stood straight where he was, unmoving like a mountain. He allowed the sword Qi to strike his body, which had turned his clothes to shreds long ago. His body became littered with white marks that were all due to the sword Qi.

Another few miserable shrieks rang out. The sword Qi was just too tightly-packed, so it injured a few more weaker Saint Kings. Weird Moonlight Force was deposited into their bodies, as it began to devour their Saint Force.

From afar, a group of Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters stared at this in surprise. In their eyes, Saint Kings were supreme

existences, people who stood at the apex. They held illustrious statuses and received the admiration of everyone. Many of them found it quite difficult to believe now that so many Saint Kings had fallen into such horrible shapes.

After all, it was the first time for many of the Heaven Saint Masters and a few of the Saint Rulers who had entered the divine hall to see a Saint King.

“The sword Qi is constantly becoming stronger. If this continues, it’ll become strong to the point where we can’t resist it very soon. We can’t just sit and wait for that to happen. We need to break through the barrier as soon as possible,” called out a Saint King.

Immediately, around a dozen Saint Kings drew their Saint Weapons. Tremendous Saint Force surged wildly within the barrier, before striking the barrier at the same time.

Boom! Terrifying energy ripples pushed the Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers backward, while the fragile Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters suffered quite some heavy damage. However, You Yue and Kara Liwei did not sustain any damage, as they had the protection of the saint artifact.

After taking on the combined attack from more than ten Saint Kings, the barrier immediately began to shake violently. However, it did not shatter.

“What a powerful barrier,” a Saint King could not help but exclaim. He became much sterner.



The Saint Rulers and people below Saint Ruler backed off some more, as they almost stuck to the barrier. All the injured Heaven Saint Masters sat with their legs crossed, as they healed their wounds. Meanwhile, a milky-white light surrounded the Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters. They were using Radiant Saint Force to heal their wounds.

The Moonlight Force within the barrier immediately began to churn after the barrier resisted the combined attack from the Saint Kings. It condensed into densely-packed sword Qi in the sky once more, though there were much fewer than before. However, its power had drastically increased.

Swish! Swish! Swish...

With a series of ear-piercing sounds, the sword Qi rained upon them with unbelievable speed. Although the number had lessened, it was still like a blanket. No one could dodge it, so they were only able to forcefully resist it.

After the wave of attacks, the sword Qi struck three more Saint Kings. Although their wounds were not life-threatening, the Moonlight Force was extremely weird. The residue in their bodies began to devour their Saint Force. Regardless of how hard they tried, they could not purge it, which forced them to devote all their power into resisting it and slowing down the dissipation of their Saint Force.

“This wave of sword Qi has already reached the Third Heavenly

Layer. If it continues like this, the next wave should be at the Fourth Heavenly Layer, and then the Fifth, the Sixth and so on. It'll go on forever, until all of us die here.”

“If we let that happen, we will all die. No one will be able to survive. Everyone, do not hold back. Strike the barrier with all your strength.”

The speakers were two ancestors from ancient clans. This time, everyone decided to contribute. They gathered all their power to strike at the same time, and they sent an earth-shaking attack at the barrier.

Jian Chen had also drawn his Emperor Armament and struck the barrier as soon as he could. Resisting this wave of attacks was already the limits of his Chaotic Body. If he did not break through the barrier, the next wave would be able to pierce his body. Although he had no idea if the Moonlight Force could devour his Chaotic Force, it was not something he wanted to risk.

Boom! The combined attacks of all the Saint Kings finally broke through the extremely tough barrier, reducing it into dense strands of Moonlight Force that floated around the divine hall.

Everyone would not help but smile slightly in relief now that they had destroyed the barrier. However, before long, a cold voice boomed out in the empty space.

“Those who have not heeded the warning, take responsibility for your actions!”

With that, streaks of bright and pure moonlight suddenly appeared. It shone blindingly like sunlight as nine balls of light floated above the sculpture of fairy Hao Yue in the center of the area. Each ball of light shone with bright moonlight. From afar, it seemed like nine, small moons.

Rumble...

The divine hall began to shake violently. One of the moons that floated above the sculpture suddenly began to enlarge and shine with dazzling light. Everyone could not help but close their eyes.

When they opened their eyes once more, the scene before them had already completely changed. The familiar divine hall had disappeared and a desolate land now replaced it. There was nothing as far as the eye could see except for dry earth.

All the Saint Kings changed in expression when they saw this. They had all realized that they had fallen into another formation. Everyone had fallen into it, including the First Heavenly Layer Saint King who was injured at the very start.

It could be said that all the Saint Kings that had entered the divine hall had gathered in this formation once more.

“Is this landscape the moon?” The great elder from the Changyang clan looked around in interest, as he said with surprise and suspicion.

“It doesn’t matter if this landscape is the moon or not. We need to break out as soon as possible, as it definitely can’t be safe. And that sudden voice back then—was that fairy Hao Yue’s voice?” A great elder from the Yiyuan sect said with a sunken face. Uneasiness filled his eyes.

Many people could not but change in expression when they heard that, but someone rebuked very quickly, “Fairy Hao Yue passed away in meditation several tens of thousand years ago, so it’s impossible for her to still be alive. She must have left behind that voice back then.”

At this moment, a mysterious suction silently appeared. It gathered around the people and slowly pulled out their Saint Force.

Everyone immediately changed in expression. They all sat down quickly and poured all their strength into resisting the suction. However, they failed to stop the expansion of their Saint Force no matter how hard they tried.

Jian Chen also felt the weird, mysterious force gathering around him, as if it was drawing the Chaotic Force within him outward. His Chaotic Force also began to show signs of movement, as if it had broken free of his control and was drifting outward. However, Chaotic Force could not be compared to Saint Force in the end. Under Jian Chen’s control, the Chaotic Force immediately calmed down and did not expand outward like the Saint Force of the Saint Kings.

“What a weird formation and force. I actually can’t prevent the energy within me from expanding. Hmph, if that’s the case, let me break through this formation. I’d like to see if it can resist a strike from me.” Hei Yu raised his head and his gaze sharpened. A slivery-white machete appeared in his right hand, radiating with a chilling pressure.

It was a weapon with origin energy. Just with that weapon, Hei Yu could deal attacks as strong as Saint Emperors and fight hand-in-hand with them.

At the very top of the divine hall, there was an extremely pretty and illusory woman that currently sat on a pure-white piece of jade within a completely sealed room. Her eyes were closed but suddenly, she became surprised. Her eyes snapped open, and she cried out involuntarily, “Origin energy! This is origin energy! How is this possible? How can origin energy exist in this world? Wasn’t all the origin energy sealed up in the distant void of space? How can this energy exist here?”

The illusory woman stood up from the piece of jade, and her emotions began to churn. She was not calm in any way, and even excitement seemed to have appeared on her illusory face.

# Chapter 1045: Saint King Killing Formation (Five)

---

Hei Yu shot into the sky with his origin energy machete, and he chopped at the sky with lightning speed.

A magnificent ray appeared. It shot through the sky as if it could destroy the surroundings and immediately caused the space of the formation to violently tremble. Hei Yu's machete had not even struck the formation, yet it had suffered great disruptions and showed signs of breaking apart.

All the Saint Kings trapped in the formation stared unblinkingly at Hei Yu. Their faces burned with greed and hope. There was no one present that Hei Yu's powerful origin energy weapon did not tempt, but none of them had the courage to try and steal it.

“He has finally personally moved. How can this mere formation stop us since he's someone who can even go up against Saint Emperors?” All the Saint Kings who knew Hei Yu's strength showed expression of relief. None of them believed the formation could withstand Hei Yu's attack, as it was just too mighty. They all shivered inside just by standing to one side.

At the same time, the illusory woman's eyes immediately lit up in the sealed room at the top of the divine hall. She said, “How can you people break through the Illusory Formation of Nine Moons I personally cast down? I may not be able to use the full strength of the formation due to the limitations of my strength, but it's still not something Saint Emperors can break through. Even experts in the Origin realm will need to expend a great effort to break

through it. Nine moons as one!” The woman formed a seal with her hands, which constantly changed before her chest. Immediately, the eight other smaller moons that floated above the sculpture fused with the first moon and completely became one.

All the people below Saint King stood blankly afar, as they watched everything unfold. To them, they had completely lost sight of the Saint Kings. An extremely huge moon stood in the previous location of the Saint Kings. It seemed extremely like the moon, illuminating the entire area with moonlight.

The moon originated from the formation, which was extremely profound. The area within the formation was an independent space that trapped all the Saint Kings.

Within the formation space, Hei Yu’s machete viciously struck the barrier of the formation. However, now that the nine moons had fused as one, the formation’s power had greatly increased. It was nowhere as weak as before, so Hei Yu’s attack on the level of Saint Emperors could only cause it to tremble gently after he struck. It stabilized very soon and did not shatter.

“This is impossible!”

All of the hopeful Saint Kings changed in expression when they witness this, as they immediately cried out. Disbelief filled all of them.

This clearly stunned Hei Yu as well. He lowered his head to look at his machete as disbelief clouded his eyes.

“The formation has suddenly become much more powerful. With its current strength, probably even Saint Emperors will struggle to break through it,” Hong Lian said from beside Jian Chen. Her eyes had already become red, as if two balls of flames burned inside. She was using a secret technique to observe the formation.

“Crap. The formation has strengthened greatly, and the energy within me is leaking out at a great speed,” someone cried out. All the Saint Kings present bathed in a thick layer of Saint Force, as their energy leaked from their bodies at a rate several dozen times faster than before. Then, their Saint Force dispersed in the surroundings. The mysterious suction force present in the formation space drew it out. Hei Yu and Hong Lian were not spared from it either. No one could stop it.

Jian Chen’s complexion also became rather horrible. Now that the suction force had grown, the Chaotic Force that he had just stabilized began to lose control again. Strands of it flowed outward uncontrollably, except it was nowhere near as fast as the Saint Force in the Saint Kings.

Strands of weak, gray energy appeared around Jian Chen. An aura of destruction filled it, which was extremely different from the energies within the other Saint Kings.

All the Saint Kings naturally detected Jian Chen’s Chaotic Force, but no one paid attention to the unique Chaotic Force, as they were struggling just for themselves.



A sliver of panic appeared in Jian Chen's eyes. Chaotic Force was extremely difficult to replenish. He could not afford an over-consumption of Chaotic Force.

Suddenly, Jian Chen roared at the sky. His eyes shone, as he poured all his strength into controlling the Chaotic Force. It immediately stopped flowing outward under his control, and the Chaotic Force around him also began to approach him bit by bit. It eventually returned into his body in the end.

“Odd. Just what is this power? I can clearly feel the greatness of this power, but why have I never seen it before?” The illusory woman murmured in the room at the very top of the divine hall. She furrowed her brows in thought.

Suddenly, she seemed to think of something. Her eyes immediately lit up, and disbelief filled her face. She said, “I remember my father once mentioned a powerful energy called Chaotic Force. Why does the characteristics of this energy match up with the Chaotic Force my father mentioned? I-i- is this Chaotic Force...”

However, the woman suddenly shook her head. “Impossible. How can Chaotic Force appear in this world? Isn't this a great power that only people in that world can cultivate...”

# Chapter 1046: Fight for the Divine Hall

## (One)

---

“Xiao Bai wants to take the saint artifact in. If that was possible, it could store Jian Chen and the others into the artifact. Then, it can bring them out. It’s a pity that the saint artifact can’t enter,” You Yue murmured softly. She had understood the white tiger’s intentions very quickly.

The saint artifact spun, as it shone with a hazy golden light by the side of the formation, before returning to the air above You Yue. It needed to keep You Yue safe.

In the formation space, the white tiger opened its mouth. It knew that the saint artifact did not enter the formation with it, and it immediately growled at the formation. It seemed to be filled with frustration.

Jian Chen understood the familiar white tiger’s intentions at first thought after he saw its behavior. He said, “Xiao Bai, the formation that traps us is just too powerful. We can’t break it even when we all work together. All we can do now is wait for someone outside to gain control of the divine hall, which will allow them to control the divine hall as well. Immediately take You Yue and Kara Liwei into the depths of the divine hall, to the control center.”

The white tiger looked at Jian Chen, as he worked hard to control his Chaotic Force and worry appeared in its eyes. Afterward, it produced a deep growl, as if it had agreed to Jian Chen’s instructions.

“Xiao Bai, tell the artifact spirit after you get out to not let senior Rui Jin out no matter what. Keep him in the artifact space, until you leave the divine hall. Also, Xie Wang, who followed me in the sea realm, is still cultivating inside the artifact space. Get the artifact spirit to contact him and get him to protect you all as you venture into the depths...” Jian Chen gave a long list of orders to the white tiger. Whether the people trapped in the formation could leave would completely depend on the people outside. If they failed, all the Saint Kings inside would die.

The white tiger left the artifact space with Jian Chen’s words. It arrived outside and recounted everything that Jian Chen had said, word by word, to the artifact spirit.

Although the white tiger could not speak human tongue, the artifact spirit could understand him since he was a spirit. He immediately informed You Yue and Kara Liwei of Jian Chen’s current situation.

You Yue immediately paled when she learned that Jian Chen was currently in danger. Her face was filled with anxiety and deep worry, as she lost her normal composure.

Kara Liwei was also anxious, but she tried as hard as she could to keep her composure. She comforted You Yue, “Sister You Yue, don’t worry. Don’t we still have ways to save Jian Chen? As long as we find the control center of the divine hall, we’ll be able to save Jian Chen without him suffering any harm at all.”

You Yue tightly clenched her jade-like hands. Her palms were sweaty. Although there was still a way for them to save Jian Chen, how were they supposed to pass through the many obstacles of the divine hall to reach the control center with these brutal Saint Rulers?

The white tiger had already entered the saint artifact and told Rui Jin about what had happened outside. Rui Jin was still currently filling the three Flaming Jadeites with energy. Immediately, he stopped what he was doing when he learned about what was happening outside, and he furrowed his brows.

“Rui Jin, there’s only one way to save master, and that’s to get the mistress to gain control over the divine hall and shut down the formation. Master plans to call a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler from the Sea race to go out and assist mistress in controlling the divine hall, but I just don’t trust this person. Once he leaves the artifact space, I can’t do anything to him either. I’ve come to you especially this time to leave a restriction within that person, just in case,” the artifact spirit said to Rui Jin.

Rui Jin agreed without any extra thought, “There are many secret techniques of my Dragon clan, and there are quite a few among them for controlling people. Bring that Sea race person over.”

Xie Wang was currently in seclusion, as he practiced the Octoterra Emperor’s cultivation method. The artifact spirit forcefully roused him and sent him to Rui Jin’s side.

“Xie Wang, master has orders for you to immediately leave this

space and assist the mistress in taking this divine hall. However, to prevent you from going overboard in some areas, we need to leave a restriction within you. As long as you focus on assisting the mistress, nothing will happen to you..." The artifact summarized. He explained the task as well as the rough situation outside to Xie Wang, so that he could have some understanding.

Xie Wang's eyes immediately lit up when he heard about the Bright Moon Divine Hall. He understood the power of divine halls extremely well, and knew that once someone possessed a divine hall, they could go up against 16th Star experts. No one could threaten the owner of the divine hall in anyway given that they did not come across emperors.

Although the Bright Moon Divine Hall tempted Xie Wang, he dismissed these thoughts very quickly and calmed down. He still remembers his current situation, so he forcefully suppressed his itching desire. He said, "Don't worry. I, Xie Wang, am not a person who returns kindness with animosity. Since Jian Chen gave me the invaluable cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor without even hesitating, I will never do anything that betrays Jian Chen in this life! If I do, I am willing to suffer the punishment of utter annihilation," Xie Wang said righteously. His tone was extremely resolute.

"Just in case, I will be leaving a restriction within you. If you really do something unaccounted for, I will wipe out your soul in an instant. I will personally remove it after you've accomplished your task." Rui Jin stared at Xie Wang with bright eyes.

Although Xie Wang had never seen Rui Jin before, Rui Jin was

definitely someone that belonged on Jian Chen's side since he could appear here. He could even vaguely feel a pressure that made him shiver, which allowed him to know that the middle-aged man before him was definitely a powerful and terrifying expert.

Xie Wang did not show any resistance toward Rui Jin's intentions of planting a restriction within him. He accepted it calmly, as he had no other choice.

Afterward, Rui Jin planted a restriction on Xie Wang's soul through a secret technique of the Dragon clan. Xie Wang's life was basically in Rui Jin's hand with the restriction, as Rui Jin only needed a single thought to wipe out Xie Wang's soul if he did anything unexpected.

Xie Wang and the white tiger left the artifact space together and appeared beside You Yue. You Yue had already learned of Xie Wang's identity in detail from the artifact spirit, so she did not become surprised when she saw him. She only observed him curiously, as this was her first time meeting a member of the Sea race.

"Is this Jian Chen's woman? I never thought that her strength would be this bad." Xie Wang observed You Yue curiously as well, and he immediately felt a sliver of surprise when he saw her strength.

"You Yue greets senior Xie Wang. I shall be in your care." You Yue greeted Xie Wang politely with a bow and did not refer to him in the casual fashion that Jian Chen did.

Xie Wang gained a good impression of You Yue with how she behaved. He laughed aloud and said, “You’re Jian Chen’s woman, so you’re not an outsider any way. There’s no need for us to be so polite, so just spare the terms of seniority. Just call me Xie Wang.”

Xie Wang and You Yue spoke some more, before focusing on the main problem. Afterward, they left for the depths of the divine hall with the white tiger and Kara Liwei.

Quite a few Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters had already entered the depths before them when You Yue’s group had left. There were also some Heaven Saint Masters and Class 6 Radiant Saint Masters who had given up on that idea and directly backed out of the divine hall. They spread the news of all the trapped Saint Kings in the divine hall at the same time.

There were still quite a lot of people floating in the cool night sky outside the divine hall. This included the people from the Radiant Saint Master, such as the president and the grand elder. As Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters, they did not enter the divine hall. Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters enjoyed exalted statuses on the Tian Yuan Continent, which were in no shape or form below Saint Kings. Also, they never took part in any of the killings and battles on the continent, so the Bright Moon Divine Hall did not possess any great use to them. They did not have the need at all to risk their lives and compete for the divine hall.

“What? All the Saint Kings that entered have been trapped?” The people from the union and the other people in the crowd all changed in expressions when they heard this news. They all felt

rather perturbed, as the fear in their gazes toward the divine hall deepened.

“The formation of the divine hall only targets Saint Kings and those beyond Saint King. Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers are resistant to the attacks of the divine hall,” a Heaven Saint Master who had exited said loudly.

With that, the Saint King who had just hurried over through Space Gates and were about to enter the divine hall immediately halted. They became torn between surprise and suspicion.

Suddenly, his eyes froze and he stared fixedly at the roof of the divine hall.

A middle-aged man in white robes stood proudly at the highest point of the divine hall. No one knew exactly when he had appeared.

The man seemed to have fused with the surrounding space, becoming a part of the surroundings. No one actually discovered him, as he stood in such a brazen fashion on top of the divine hall other than the Saint King. He seemed to be transparent, which made it extremely easy for people to miss him.

“The path lord of carnal desires!” The Saint King recognized the man at first glance, and his eyes narrowed suddenly.

In that moment, the evil-looking face of the path lord was rather



pale. He stood rather haggardly on the top of the divine hall, as he mumbled to himself, “Fairy Hao Yue sure is extravagant to collect material from the moon to build such a powerful divine hall. The Moonlight Force within this divine hall is weird and powerful. Also, the toughness of the divine hall cannot be compared with any ordinary divine hall. Even if I want to break through it, it’ll be extremely difficult.”

“It’s a pity that I the origin energy injured me last time. Origin energy is just too powerful. I can’t recover in such a short amount of time, and my strength is greatly reduced. Otherwise, I’d like to see what fairy Hao Yue had prepared all those years ago in the divine hall,” the path lord said with some regret. Afterward, he vanished.

# Chapter 1047: Fight for the Divine Hall (Two)

---

As the news of how the Bright Moon Divine Hall prohibited the entry of Saint Kings broke out, all the Saint Rulers and some Heaven Saint Masters could no longer resist their teeming desires. They all excitedly charged into the divine hall. Since all the Saint Kings within the divine hall were now trapped, they were the most powerful people as Saint Rulers. This re-ignited the flames of hope within these Saint Rulers, as if the Bright Moon Divine Hall was now just right before them, waiting for them to take it.

As these people entered, the number of people within the divine hall constantly increased. There were people as powerful as the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler, and people as weak as newly-broken through Heaven Saint Masters.

Half of the Saint Rulers from the Radiant Saint Master Union had entered the divine hall as well. However, none of the Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters entered. Instead, they all remained outside and waited. They did not leave though, as they wanted to anticipate the person that the divine hall ended up with in the end.

You Yue and Kara Liwei made their way toward the depths of the divine hall under the protection of Xie Wang and the white tiger. The palm-sized saint artifact followed behind them closely and remained above You Yue's head at all times.

On the highest floor of the divine hall, the illusory woman remained seated on the pure-white piece of jade with her eyes closed. Everything that went on in the divine hall was under her

control.

The woman slowly opened her eyes. She appeared to be in thought, as she mumbled, “Originally, I wanted to attract some geniuses in here so I could take their bodies. Then, I can cultivate from the start again, but it seems like there is no need to do that at all with the look of things right now. There’s already an even better option.”

“That works as well. The origin energy in this world has been sealed up. Even if I take a body for myself, I won’t be able to break through Saint Emperor and reach the Origin realm. However, the Chaotic Body is not similarly limited...”

“However, who set down that formation in the distant outer space? Why did they seal up origin energy? It’s a pity that the formation is just too powerful. I can’t break through it at all, or how would I, Hao Yue, end up in a state like this...”

The layout of the divine hall was extremely complicated. Hallways intersected again and again, which made it extremely easy for people to get lost. It was like a maze.

You Yue and the others became lost very quickly. They traveled recklessly through the intersecting hallways and the tunnels that would appear from time to time. They hoped that they could find the correct way. They had tried leaving down marks in places where they had traveled through, but it was impossible to leave a mark anywhere within the divine hall. It all depended on luck whether they could make it out or not.

They would come across a few Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers from time to time, as they made their way through the maze-like hallways, but no conflict ensued. There would also be some Saint Rulers who wanted to join You Yue's party, but they were all turned down.

They had been trapped within here for three whole days before they finally found the correct way out. They arrived on the second floor, but did not come across any dangers during that time. It seemed like the divine hall did not possess dangers that targeted Saint Rulers and those below.

In these three days, Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Masters constantly entered the divine hall from outside. The number of people within the divine hall grew to several thousand, though most of them were Heaven Saint Masters.

The news of the trapped Saint Kings had already spread to the ten protector clans and various ancient clans, which immediately shocked them greatly. The protector clans viewed this with great importance. The Saint Kings immediately hurried from the protector clans. They stopped outside, as they discussed the methods to save them with their brows furrowed. Even Saint Kings from Mercenary City had personally come.

Within the formation space of the divine hall, the trapped Saint Kings remained seated on the floor. All of them worked hard to suppress the leakage of their energy. Hei Yu and Hong Lian both equipped their origin energy armors, which could drag it out a little even though it could not completely stop the leakage.

A few weaker Saint Kings had already begun to pale. They trembled slightly, as they sat on the ground. They were clearly suffering quite a lot. The Saint Kings that the sword Qi had struck outside in particular had already powerlessly collapsed on the ground. Their eyes were dull and filled with despair, as their bodies had already lost all their energy.

The loss of energy could not lead to them losing their level of cultivation. Even with all their energy gone, they could just replenish it outside, and they would return to how they were before without much time. However, Saint Kings without any of their energy were extremely weak. Particularly in this odd formation space, their abilities as Saint Kings had been restricted and they could not use Spatial and World Force, so it reduced them to ordinary people.

Among all the people, the only person who did not have energy leaking out was Jian Chen. The power and uniqueness of Chaotic Force were just incomparable to ordinary energy. However, Jian Chen still needed to devote all his strength into suppressing it even though that was the case.

“I hope You Yue can successfully obtain the divine hall, or all of us trapped here will just be waiting for our deaths,” Jian Chen prayed inside.

In the blink of an eye, half a month had passed. During that time, countless people entered the divine hall, and people could be seen everywhere within it. However, most of them were Heaven Saint Masters.

During that period of time, You Yue's group had already passed through eight floors of mazes and arrived on the ninth floor of the divine hall.

Undoubtedly, the surface area of the ninth floor was much smaller than the floors below. It seemed more like an extremely large hall when gazing out. There were nine, huge stone pillars with simple carvings that held up the ceiling. Vague Moonlight Force revolved around each pillar and radiated with a tremendous pressure.

The hall was beautifully decorated. All the stone tables, seats, and various ornaments were carved from the same type of jade. Every single item was extremely exquisite. It was impossible to estimate their value.

A mighty but extravagant throne hovered in the air at the end of the hall. On the throne lay a two-meter-long, exquisitely-crafted scepter that shone with a moonlight haze. It was extremely pleasant to the eye.

You Yue's party were not the first people to arrive. Before them, various Saint Rulers and a few Heaven Saint Masters had already arrived. Although the hall was not packed, there were several hundred people that had already gathered at the very least. All of them stared at the staff on the throne with bright eyes, and no one made any noise. The atmosphere was extremely weird.

Although the treasure was right before them, no one went ahead

to take it. All the people who could arrive here were very clever. They knew that the first person to go up for the treasure would be the first one to suffer from all the attacks of the people present. Even Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers would struggle greatly to leave with their lives intact.

“That staff definitely is not so simple. It might be hiding some secret. You never know. And that throne is not your ordinary, everyday object either,” Xie Wang stared unblinkingly at the throne, as he said with a soft voice.

Roar! The white tiger narrowed its eyes, as they shone with a threatening light. It immediately took a leap and turned into a blur that shot toward the throne. It viewed the several hundred Saint Rulers and Heaven Saint Master that had gathered as nothing.

Xie Wang did not charge up with him. Instead, he remained close to You Yue and Kara Liwei to protect him. He kept loyal to his task, to protect the two of them.

“That’s the Winged Tiger God...”

“The Winged Tiger God wants to take the scepter. Quick, stop it...”

“The scepter must hide the cultivation method of fairy Hao Yue. It might even be the object that can directly control the divine hall. We can’t let the Winged Tiger God obtain it...”

“Whoever gains the scepter will be the one who controls the divine hall...”

The white tiger’s actions shattered the odd atmosphere in the divine hall. At that moment, no one hesitated anymore, as they all charged toward the scepter at their top speeds. The white tiger at the very front also became the target of everyone’s attacks, where more than twenty Saint Rulers sent powerful sword Qi at it with a wave of their hands at the same time.

Before the great temptation of the divine hall and the cultivation method of fairy Hao Yue, they all lost their minds. The fact that the white tiger was the Winged Tiger God no longer bothered them.



# Chapter 1048: Fight for the Divine Hall

## (Three)

---

Over twenty sword Qi from Saint Rulers shot toward the white tiger, as they radiated with powerful ripples of energy. In order to stop the white tiger from getting close to the throne, none of the Saint Rulers held back.

The white tiger's eyes remained fixed on the scepter. It did not even look at the sword Qi behind it. When the sword Qi almost struck, the white tiger abruptly began to enlarge and turned into a ten-meter-long white tiger in an instant. It unfurled its huge, white wings, while a great energy seemed to be secretly charging up.

Whoosh! With the sound of a wild gust, the huge wings of the white tiger suddenly flapped backward. Two huge whirlwinds immediately formed and quickly collided with the sword Qi from behind.

After it enlarged, the speed of the white tiger skyrocketed. It shot toward the scepter like an arrow, several times faster than before.

The powerful sword Qi collided with the whirlwinds the white tiger produced. With a muffled boom, the sword Qi all shattered into pieces from the spinning wind, and the whirlwinds continued onward without dispersing after blocking the attacks.

The whirlwinds obstructed the Saint Rulers that pursued behind the white tiger, which allowed it to approach the huge, hovering

throne successfully. There was nothing protecting the throne, so the white tiger leaped onto it without coming across any obstructions. It gripped the scepter with its mouth, before returning along its previous route. It leaped in You Yue's direction in the form of a faint blur.

“The Winged Tiger God has taken the scepter! Quick, steal it back...”

“Fairy Hao Yue's treasure is right before our eyes. Quickly stop the Winged Tiger God! Whoever who gets the scepter will be the one who obtains a fortuitous encounter...”

With the scepter taken, all the people immediately began to churn. There were a few people who were unwilling to see the scepter taken just like that before them. So, they fanned on everyone, as they stood on the ground.

Everyone had become green with greed. In that moment, all the Saint Rulers within the hall began to move. They encircled the white tiger with extremely great teamwork and surrounded it from all directions. There were more than ten Saint Weapons that shot through the air with powerful ripples of energy, chopping toward the huge body of the tiger with lightning speed. Accompanying them was another wave of over twenty sword Qi.

The attacks formed a shapeless net in the air that sealed out all routes of escape for the white tiger, as the attacks fell down like a blanket.

The white tiger stopped mid-air awe-inspiringly. It looked around with a threatening light in its eyes, before throwing its head up. It tossed the scepter high up into the air, which allowed it to open its mouth and produce an earth-shaking roar. Immediately, visible sound waves quickly began to expand with the white tiger as the epicenter.

The sound wave possessed an unimaginable force. When it collided with the saint weapons of the Saint Kings and the sword Qi, all the sword Qi dissipated, while the Saint Weapons in the hands of the Saint Rulers trembled violently. It seemed like an invisible force was stopping their advance, which not only made it extremely difficult for them to continue onward, but also forced them backward constantly.

The sound wave expanded extremely quickly and covered the entire room very soon. It swept past everyone and immediately reduced all their clothes to shreds, forcing them into a horrible shape.

Miserable cries rang through the entire room. The white tiger's roar possessed the might of a beast god, so it possessed a penetrative characteristic. It could injure the souls of people. The Heaven Saint Masters all shrieked, as they clutched their heads painfully due to their weaker souls. Only Saint Rulers could endure it, but even for them, they showed signs of pain. It still affected their souls greatly.

The white tiger's strength was not at the peak of Class 7, but it was a Winged Tiger God after all. It possessed inherited memories and could learn powerful abilities, while its battle prowess was

shocking. Just the might of its roar was enough to shock many Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers.

The combined attacks from several dozen Saint Rulers collapsed from the roar. The white tiger did not continue to bother with them. It caught the scepter, as it fell down. Then, it bound toward You Yue.

“Leave the scepter, or you won’t be leaving today!”

The Saint Rulers recovered extremely quickly and courageously charged toward white tiger. All of them had lost their calm before the temptation. Their only desire was to obtain the scepter.

In that moment, the white tiger had become the enemy of everyone. All the Saint Rulers took part in restricting the white tiger’s movements, striking the white tiger without holding back at all. They were attempting to kill it. Afar, a few Saint Rulers even began to charge up their Saint Tier Battle Skills.

The white tiger seemed to be agitated as well. It growled deeply as dense killing intent flickered through its vicious eyes. It charged threateningly toward a few Saint Rulers that blocked its way, as it flapped its wings violently. It shot out powerful wind blades at them.

The Saint Rulers all knew how powerful the Winged Tiger God was. They faced it as a powerful enemy. They swung their Saint Weapons as fast as they could, as they chopped at the wind blades.

Boom! The wind blades and Saint Weapons collided, which immediately produced a powerful ripple of energy. The wind blades dispersed, while the powerful force of the collision and the wave of energy knocked back the Saint Rulers. They all quickly shot backward.

At this moment, around a dozen Saint Rules that shot over from the sides approached the white tiger as well. All their Saint Weapons shone with a blinding light, as they chopped through the space. They were approaching the white tiger with lightning speed.

The white tiger's fur began to glow with a hazy white light, as it blocked the full-powered attacks from the Saint Rulers with its wings. When the Saint Weapons landed on the wings, all of the Saint Rulers felt like their lightning-fast attack had landed on soft cotton. The surging Saint Force hidden within their Saint Weapons completely disappeared in that moment.

“Crap, its wings have absorbed the energy on our Saint Weapons,” a Saint Ruler cried out. He was filled with disbelief.

After absorbing the energies from more than ten Saint Weapons, the wings no longer remained so white. A few extra colors appeared. However, in the next moment, the wings suddenly jolted, and the energy absorbed from the Saint Weapons immediately poured out like a flood. It knocked all of the Saint Rulers that had approached far away.

At this moment, a pressure that seemed to originate from the world suddenly appeared. It locked tightly onto the white tiger,

which caused the space around the white tiger to thicken.

“It’s a Saint Tier Battle Skill. Move away!” Sensing the frightening pressure, all the Saint Rulers changed in expression and immediately moved far away from the white tiger.

The white tiger slowly turned around. Its eyes locked onto the three Saint Rulers who were casting Saint Tier Battle Skills. Once locked on, it was impossible to dodge or avoid the Saint Tier Battle Skill. The white tiger could only face it head-on.

# Chapter 1049: Fight for the Divine Hall

## (Four)

---

The three Saint Rulers who were casting the Saint Tier Battle Skills all originated from ancient clans and belonged to the Ninth Heavenly Layer. Their Saint Tier Battle Skills were equivalent to attacks from Saint Kings with their current strengths.

The other Saint Rules had kept the white tiger busy earlier, which provided the three Saint Rulers with enough time to charge up their battle skills. They had completed the charge up now, and the devastating power was about to erupt. A tremendous pressure that originated from the surroundings seemed to flood the entire hall, which caused everyone gathered in there to shiver. They all looked toward the three Saint Rulers with obvious fear and dread.

The white tiger revealed a stern gaze once again. With its body as a beast god, it indeed had the power to look down on all the Saint Rulers, but the battle skills it currently faced was on the level of Saint Kings. That was enough to threaten it.

It was already too late to stop the three Saint Rulers from casting the Saint Tier Battle Skills. The white tiger quickly began to swipe the space before it with its front paws. With every swipe, a tiny ripple would appear.

“Saint Tier Battle Skill! Heaven-cleaving Sword!”

“Saint Tier Battle Skill! Swing Beyond Samsara!”

“Saint Tier Battle Skill! Divine Fist of the Sixth Paths!”

With three bellows, the Saint Rulers simultaneously cast their battle skills after their long charge-up. The first person lifted his sword over his head and swung out in the air. They produced a blinding sword Qi that shot toward the white tiger with an unstoppable force.

The curved blade in the second person's hand followed an extremely profound trajectory. A vague ripple immediately appeared, and it quickly spread toward the white tiger. Wherever it passed, space would shake violently and become blurry. Although it did not really seem like anything, it possessed terrifying might.

A layer of extremely dense energy coated the third person's fist. The fist seemed to move slowly, but it was flung out with exceedingly great speed. His entire right hand disappeared, as he punched out. It was like it had completely fused with the surrounding space and entered another dimension. However, in the next moment, six huge fists, completely condensed from energy, appeared above the white tiger's head. They all spun and revolved in a circle with one another, as each fist radiated with a terrifying aura.

The paws of the white tiger swiped faster and faster. Slowly, it drew an extremely complicated image in the air. It was blurry, but it radiated with a profound aura. Each line and image seemed to contain the laws of the world.



This was a defensive technique that originated from the white tiger's inherited memories. This was its first time it had used it.

As soon as the formation appeared, it expanded before the white tiger.

Boom!

The Heaven-cleaving Sword struck the formation viciously and caused it to violently shake. The formation began to flicker, and terrifying energy ripples rammed into the surrounding walls, producing pattering sounds.

The sword Qi became locked in a stalemate with the formation in mid-air. The energy of both the formation and the sword Qi quickly began to leak away, but it failed to break through the formation before completely dispersing. The defensive formation also darkened after it blocked the battle skill equivalent to a Saint King's attack. Then, its lines and images began to blur. Some lines had even been severed.

When the giant sword Qi vanished, a wave of faint spatial ripples collided viciously against the formation of the white tiger as well. At the same time, one of the six revolving fists fell from above the white tiger, as it directly targeted the white tiger's head.

Roar!

The white tiger shook its head and directly tossed the scepter in

its mouth in You Yue's direction. Afterward, it produced an earth-shaking roar at the sky. A visible sound wave emerged from its mouth and spread upward to meet with the six fists.

The defensive formation in front of the white tiger was no longer as powerful as before. After the second Saint Tier Battle Skill struck it, it only lasted for a short while before shattering lowly. The odd ripples surged toward the huge white tiger like a wave of water, passing through the white tiger's body.

The white tiger trembled slightly and a faint, bloody mark had already appeared below its neck. Bright blood immediately began to pour from its body, dyeing its white fur red.

Terrifying energy ripples began to spread from above, as the white tiger's roar destroyed the first fist of the six. However, the second and third fist began to fall closely after one another soon afterward. They separately targeted the white tiger's head and back. Both of them moved extremely quickly.

The wings on the tiger's back rose up high, as they blocked the fist that targeted its back. Its front paws clawed in a flurry, as it forcefully received the punch that targeted its head.

With a boom, the two punches smashed the white tiger to the ground. The attack had injured its wings, as the snow-white feathers became red. Even its front paws became bloody.

Even as the Winged Tiger God with extremely great battle prowess, the white tiger struggled to remain unscathed when it

faced three Saint Tier Battle Skills at the same time. After all, it had not reached the peak of Class 7 yet.

Looking at the scepter that flew over, a gleam of light flashed through Xie Wang's eyes. He had always remained by You Yue's side, as he protected her. He immediately leaped up to catch the scepter, before returning to You Yue's side. He first examined it curiously, before extending his hand to give it to You Yue without any hesitation.

Currently, You Yue had focused all her attention on the white tiger. She did not even glance at the scepter that had attracted countless people. She began to worry even more after she saw that the Saint Rulers had injured the white tiger. She called out anxiously, "Xiao Bai is injured. Artifact spirit, quickly go save Xiao Bai."

"Don't worry, mistress. The Winged Tiger God won't be in much danger. It has experienced far too little battles as it grew up as well, so this is a rare opportunity for it." The artifact spirit's voice appeared in You Yue's head.

"Someone has taken the scepter!" A person cried out. Everyone immediately moved their attention from the white tiger to Xie Wang, who now held the scepter. They no longer bothered to watch the fascinating battle going on with the white tiger anymore. Instead, they all charged at Xie Wang.

Xie Wang's expression drastically changed. Although he was a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, he was nowhere near as strong as the Winged Tiger God. How could he handle so many

opponents, especially when there were quite a few people who were also at the Ninth Heavenly Layer like him?

The last three giant fists also switched their targets. They no longer attacked the white tiger, now smashing threateningly toward Xie Wang's group.

“Grab the scepter and enter the artifact space!” Xie Wang called out in a panic.

You Yue also understood the situation now. She immediately took the scepter from Xie Wang's hands and wanted to hide in the artifact space. However, she waited for quite a long time, but she remained where she was. Kara Liwei, who was beside her, had instead disappeared. She had already entered the artifact space.

“Oh no, mistress. If you're holding that scepter, you can't enter the space. The scepter is resisting,” the artifact spirit said sternly in You Yue's head.

But at this moment, the three remaining fists had already approached You Yue and Xie Wang. One of them smashed toward Xie Wang, while the other two completely locked onto You Yue who held the scepter.

## Chapter 1050: Fairy Hao Yue's Sudden Appearance (One)

---

As the fists from the Saint Tier Battle Skills switched targets, the pressure from the surroundings also collapsed viciously on Xie Wang and You Yue's bodies. Xie Wang became extremely stern. It was a Saint Tier Battle Skill after all, and every fist would be at the level of Saint Kings. It would be extremely difficult for him to block them with his strength at the Ninth Heavenly Layer.

“Argh!” Xie Wang roared at the sky. Churning blue light wildly flooded out of his body, before condensing on his finger and shooting toward the fists.

A thumb-sized force shot through space as it radiated with blue light, shooting toward the fists with an aura of destruction.

This was a powerful attack that Xie Wang had comprehended from the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor. Although it was not on the level of Saint Tier Battle Skills, it was as powerful as a Pseudo-Saint Tier Battle Skill.

Locked on by two fists, the pressure You Yue experienced was even greater. She could not withstand it at all with her strength that was below Earth Saint Master, so she immediately paled. Traces of blood began to pour from her mouth. Before the attack had even struck her, just the mere pressure was terrifying enough to injure her.

With a loud boom, Xie Wang's attack landed on the fist that flew toward him. The attack was not on the level of Saint Tier Battle Skills, so it dispersed as soon as they came in contact. The fist

continued on toward Xie Wang without any reduction in speed; though its force had decreased by quite a bit.

Bang! The weakened fist viciously struck Xie Wang's body. He was thrown back like a sandbag as blood sprayed wildly from his mouth.

A dazzling golden light appeared above You Yue's head. The saint artifact that always floated above her suddenly expanded, becoming a thirty-meter-tall golden tower, which blocked the area in front of her in a short moment. It helped You Yue resist the attacks.

Boom! Boom!

Both of the fists landed on the saint artifact with two violent booms. They did not even shake the saint artifact. Its toughness was not something that could be overcome by Saint Tier Battle Skills.

Even though You Yue was protected by the Saint Tier Battle Skill, it was not enough to put a stop to everyone's desire for the sceptre. Several dozen Saint Rulers had already begun to threateningly charge toward her from all directions. On any other day, they probably would not dare to harm You Yue due to their fear of Jian Chen, but before the great enticement present, many of them had already forgotten about living and dying.

“Mistress, quickly throw the sceptre away and enter the artifact space. That's the only way I can ensure that you stay completely

safe,” the artifact spirit’s voice rang through You Yue’s head. Although the artifact spirit was a Saint Emperor in the artifact space, it was innately restricted, so its abilities were greatly limited. The power it could use outside was extremely weak, so protecting her outside from enemies coming in all directions was extremely difficult.

You Yue looked at the sceptre hesitantly as a sliver of unwillingness appeared in her eyes. She did not covet the sceptre; it was just that the way to save Jian Chen might lie with the sceptre.

“Mistress, give up on the sceptre first and enter the artifact space. Don’t worry about the divine hall. Rui Jin still has his most powerful card up his sleeve,” the artifact spirit called out anxiously.

With that, You Yue finally made up her mind. She grit her teeth and began swinging her hand. She was about to throw away the sceptre.

“If you throw away the Moon God’s Sceptre, you will never be able to save the person you want to save. Consider it.” At this moment, a woman’s pleasant voice rang through You Yue’s head.

The sudden appearance of the voice surprised You Yue, which caused her to immediately tighten her grasp on the sceptre. She clutched it tightly and looked around in surprise, as if she wanting to find who the speaker was.

“You have not thrown away the Moon God’s Sceptre. You have made a choice. Don’t worry, you’ll be fine.” The same voice rang in You Yue’s head. It was extremely obscure, and only You Yue could hear it. However, she could not tell where it came from.

Suddenly, the sceptre in You Yue’s hand exploded with bright light. An extremely terrifying energy erupted from the sceptre, sweeping into the surroundings in the form of a storm. It flung all the Saint Rulers that charged toward her afar; even the saint artifact floating above her head was unable to avoid it. It too was knocked far away by the powerful force.

The energy from the sceptre did not distinguish between enemies and friends. Other than You Yue, everyone, including the white tiger, Xie Wang, and the saint artifact, were flung far away.

In the blink of an eye, everyone had disappeared within a radius of several hundred meters from You Yue. She seemed like the only one present as bright moonlight surrounded her.

You Yue watched everything unfold in a dumbstruck fashion. She just struggled to believe that such a powerful energy had erupted from the very peaceful sceptre. It filled her with disbelief.

Before she could return to her senses, she suddenly felt her body tighten up. She had been surrounded by a mysterious force and brought into the air. She quickly flew toward the throne at the very back of the hall.

“Quick, stop her. Once she obtains the divine hall, we will have



no more chances left...” A Saint Ruler cried out in a panic after being knocked far away. Afterward, he immediately climbed up, shooting after You Yue as fast as he could. He wanted to stop You Yue from approaching the throne.

All the other Saint Rulers paid no heed to their injured either. All of them wanted to take the divine hall for themselves, so none of them wanted to allow You Yue to take what they drooled over. They all took part in encircling and stopping You Yue.

A terrifying ripple of residual energy spread out and all the Saint Rulers struck out as hard as they could. Various powerful attacks flew in from all directions, all targeting You Yue.

You Yue had been completely coated in dense moonlight by the sceptre. When the Saint Rulers’ attacks landed on that layer of light, they all collapsed by themselves, unable to harm You Yue since she was surrounded by moonlight.

Under the protection of the moonlight, You Yue arrived near the throne without any obstruction despite being targeted by so many densely-packed attacks. Afterward, she just landed on top of it with the sceptre in hand.

As soon as she sat down, the space surrounding the throne began to violently twist. Everything blurred, obscuring everyone’s vision. When it returned back to normal, You Yue had already disappeared from the throne.

# Chapter 1051: Fairy Hao Yue's Sudden Appearance (Two)

---

“Where is she? How'd she vanish...”

Everyone exclaimed in surprise when they saw the empty throne. They all became momentarily stunned.

Suddenly, one of the Saint Rulers who had cast a Saint Tier Battle Skill earlier seemed to think of something. A gleam of light flashed across his eyes, and he immediately flew to the throne.

A white blur flashed past as soon as he approached the throne. The bloodied, white tiger had suddenly appeared before him. It opened its mouth and spat out a fist-sized ball of energy.

Bang! With a muffled sound, the ball of energy exploded on the person's chest. The ball turned his chest into a bloody mess, causing him to immediately fly back as he vomited blood.

Many of the people present saw what the Saint Ruler tried to do. With a slight thought, quite a few of them saw through his intentions. They all began to leap toward the throne without any hesitation in attempt to sit on it.

Roar! The white tiger produced a roar to the sky, guarding the throne from everyone who tried to approach it. Although it was heavily injured, its might did not decrease at all; vaguely, its presence even seemed more powerful than before.

However, there were just too many Saint Rulers who charged at the throne. There were even quite a few Heaven Saint Masters between them who wanted to try their luck, so it was impossible for the white tiger to block everyone just by itself. Three Saint Rulers had already made their way past the white tiger and arrived before the throne, elbowing their way onto the throne all at the same time.

The throne levitated ten meters in the sky as it shined with a faint layer of Moonlight Force. It was much greater than the dragon thrones used by emperors. It seemed like a bed. It was large enough for four or five people to sit on at the same time.

As the three Saint Rulers sat on the throne at the same time, joy immediately burst forth inside them. However, before they could celebrate, their expressions suddenly changed. In that short moment, all of their auras vanished, and they became extremely pale and haggard. Afterward, they fell off the throne, landing heavily on the ground. They probably could not get up anymore.

Many people witnessed what happened to the three of them. The Saint Rulers who were just about to plonk their bottoms on the throne immediately halted as they stared at the three unmoving people on the ground in surprise.

“Oh no, the throne is weird. You can’t sit on it. The Saint Force in all three of them has been completely sucked away by the throne,” a Saint Ruler said in fear. Immediately, everyone around the throne stopped moving. They stopped in the surroundings as they gazed at the throne in shock and suspicion. No one dared to

sit down on the throne now.

In the blink of an eye, the hall fell silent from the very intense battles from before. The bloody white tiger also stopped attacking, staring fixedly at the throne.

The saint artifact returned to its size of a fist and flew over. It stopped above the white tiger's head and slowly rotated. Now that You Yue had vanished from the hall, the saint artifact's target to protect switched to the white tiger.

“All of you go! Leave the Bright Moon Divine Hall!” At this moment, an obscure voice sounded through the hall. With it, a white-clothed woman suddenly appeared on the empty throne. She was illusory and not tangible, though her beauty was on par with a goddess.

“Y-y- you're fairy Hao Yue!” All the people changed in expression when they saw the illusory woman. Disbelief flooded their faces.

The woman seemed exactly the same as the sculpture they had seen earlier in the divine hall.

Fairy Hao Yue sat on the throne in a leisurely manner. Her expression was cold, like an iceberg that would not melt even after several millennia. It made people feel like she was unapproachable, and she seemed to look down on everyone within the hall. Her cold eyes only stopped on the white tiger for a split second.

“Fairy Hao Yue, y-you’re actually still alive...”

“Fairy Hao Yue’s actually still alive...”

All the Saint Rulers in the hall began to murmur. They became extremely emotional. Fairy Hao Yue was a supreme expert several tens of thousand years ago. She was known as the strongest Saint Emperor, and the strength she possessed was at a terrifying level.

Yet now, she, who was supposed to be dead, was actually still alive. It was a stirring and unexpected piece of news.

Many Saint Rulers had already dropped to their knees within the hall. They bowed courteously to the woman. Some of them even cried out that they wanted to take her to take them in as disciples.

Fairy Hao Yue furrowed her brows as a sliver of impatience appeared on her face. She coldly said, “All of you get out. From now on, the divine hall forbids the entry of all people.” Fairy Hao Yue waved her hand and a ball of powerful Moonlight Force began to radiate from the throne. It sent everyone there to the first floor.

In the blink of an eye, the top floor of the divine hall became empty. Everyone was gone, and soon afterwards, fairy Hao Yue disappeared from the throne as well.

You Yue stood in confusion as she curiously looked around the completely seal room. She mumbled, “Weird. How did I get here, and what is this place?”

“Your name is You Yue?” Suddenly, a cold voice rang out from behind her. You Yue jumped in fright since she was unprepared.

You Yue immediately turned around and saw an ethereal beauty seated on a piece of jade, staring back at her.

You Yue immediately became surprised when she saw the woman’s appearance, because she was exactly the same as the sculpture of fairy Hao Yue.

“Y-you’re fairy Hao Yue?” You Yue stared at fairy Hao Yue in surprise as she uncontrollably cried out.

“Correct. I am fairy Hao Yue.” She was extremely nonchalant. She flicked her hand at the air gently and the space began to ripple violently. It changed rapidly as the formation space where all the Saint Kings were trapped gradually appeared.

This was only an image, an image within the formation space. It was taken by fairy Hao Yue through an ability.

“Jian Chen!” You Yue immediately cried out involuntarily the instant she saw Jian Chen. Worry filled her face.

“So the person you care so much about is called Jian Chen. May I ask who he is to you?” Fairy Hao Yue stared calmly at You Yue.

“Jian Chen is my fiancée. Fairy Hao Yue, I beg of you to let Jian Chen go,” You Yue pleaded as she looked at Jian Chen. She had originally come to gain control of the divine hall so she could save Jian Chen, but her intentions had vanished accordingly now that she had found out fairy Hao Yue was still alive.

You Yue had no interest in the divine hall. Her greatest wish right now was to save Jian Chen.

“Jian Chen’s actually your fiancée,” fairy You Yue murmured softly as light flickered through her eyes. After a period of silent thought, she said to You Yue, “You Yue, if you want to save your fiancée, there is only one way. That is to take me as your master. Are you willing?”

# Chapter 1052: You Yue Takes a Master

---

You Yue became completely stunned when she heard that. She stared at fairy Hao Yue blankly as disbelief flooded her face.

You Yue had heard about the legends of fairy Hao Yue from other people long ago. Fairy Hao Yue was a prodigy, an unprecedented genius at cultivation. It took her just a little more than two thousand years to reach the peak of Saint Emperor, coming only an inch away from surpassing that. Even in ancient times, there was no one who could compare to her cultivation speed.

After reaching the peak of Saint Emperor, she had even flown to the distant moon all by herself. She set foot on the unfamiliar territory that people rarely ever went to, collecting valuable resources to build her divine hall. Her abilities were so great and her powers were so outstanding that even among all the Saint Emperors, there was rarely anyone who could match up to her.

Currently, the great fairy Hao Yue actually wanted to take her as a disciple. Great joy flooded her entire spirit in that instance, making it difficult for her to return to her senses in a short amount of time.

Taking a Saint Emperor as a master was a glorious matter, something worthy of being proud. Even with the entire continent in perspective, this was something that many people would not even consider. You Yue had never thought that she, someone who was far from being a prodigy, would actually be asked to become a disciple of a Saint Emperor.



Fairy Hao Yue remained calm throughout. She showed no emotions as she asked once more, “You Yue, are you willing to take me as your master?”

You Yue finally calmed down. She forcefully suppressed her churning emotions and asked calmly, “Fairy Hao Yue, I understand myself that my talent is nowhere near a prodigy’s level, so may I ask why fairy Hao Yue has chosen me to become your disciple? Won’t my future accomplishments sully your name?”

“You are correct. Your talent is at most one in ten thousand, nowhere close to a genius’ talent. However, do you know how wondrous the method I cultivate is? It was the cultivation method that my great father, the Moon God, used several tens of thousand years of effort to create specifically for me. It takes from the fortunes of nature. It’s so wondrous that even if its cultivated by people with ordinary talent, they will have quite the future.”

“Also, there’s the divine hall that I worked so hard to create all those years ago. I’ve sealed moon essence into it. I only need to use a portion of it to modify your body using a secret technique and have you undergo a rebirth, so that your body becomes set for cultivation,” fairy Hao Yue guaranteed.

“What? Your cultivation method was created by your father after several tens of thousand years? I’ve only heard that Saint Emperors have a life span of ten thousand years. Is your father a supreme expert who’s surpassed Saint Emperor?” You Yue stared at fairy Hao Yue in surprise.

A sliver of disdain flashed through fair Hao Yue’s eyes when she

heard about surpassing a Saint Emperor. She said, “The Origin realm’s nothing. If the origin energy in this world wasn’t sealed on the distant edge of outer space. I would’ve reached the Origin realm long ago. As for my father, you will understand after you become my disciple.”

You Yue immediately dropped to her knees and said, “I am indebted to fairy Hao Yue’s kindness. I, You Yue, am willing to become your disciple. Disciple greets master.” You Yue bowed her head nine times to fairy Hao Yue.

Fairy Hao Yue finally showed a slight smile on her illusory face. She said, “My obedient disciple, get up quickly. You are my first disciple.”

With that, an invisible force lifted You Yue up. Afterward, fairy Hao Yue continued, “The Moon God Sceptre in your hands was a sceptre I made after collecting materials according to the design of my father’s sceptre. Now, your master no longer needs it. I’ve sealed a portion of Moonlight Force into the sceptre, so carry it with you in the future. It can protect you.”

You Yue examined the sceptre. It was made out of some unknown crystal and was as light as a feather. She could not feel any weight at all. The entire sceptre was clouded by a faint layer of Moonlight Force, shining with a hazy glow. Vaguely, she could see a simple pattern on the sceptre.

“Master, disciple has some questions. Could everyone who obtained the sceptre arrive here and be taken as a disciple of master?” You Yue asked.

Fairy Hao Yue proudly smiled and said, “There’s no one in the world who has the right to become my disciple, and I had no intentions of taking one before. When the divine hall suddenly appeared, I had my own intentions. The sceptre is useless to those who would have gotten a hold of it. They can’t take it out of the hall anyway, but I changed my mind later on due to some reasons, which is why I made an exception to take you as my disciple.”

“Because of Jian Chen?” You Yue probed. She recognized the reason why fairy Hao Yue had taken her in as a disciple long ago. It was because of Jian Chen.

“Alright, don’t ask anymore, my dear disciple. All you need to understand is that master has no ill intentions toward you. Master’s original disciple and only exists in the form of a soul now. This is why master will be extremely limited in her abilities to assist you when you come across dangers in the future. However, once you cultivate my method, I will give you control of the divine hall. The divine hall is something I was proud of when I made it all those years ago, so it’s extraordinarily tough. There’s also layers upon layers of formations in the divine hall, so as long as you have it protecting you, even experts in the Origin realm will be kept busy for a while.”

“The name of the cultivation method is the Mirror of the Moon God. If it is practiced with a special constitution, the rate will be greatly increased. Allow master to assist you in rebirthing with the moon essence sealed within the divine hall. I’ll pass the cultivation method onto you after that. Then you can control the divine hall and save the person you want to save.

Although fairy You Yue was in the form of a soul, she still possessed supreme control over the divine hall. With a single thought, extremely dense moon essence gathered from the surroundings, slowly approaching You Yue in the form of the light of a rainbow. Afterward, all of it entered her body, improving her talent by modifying her constitution.

As she watched You Yue be coated by the thick layer of moon essence, fairy Hao Yue suddenly seem to fall into a trance. She thought, “Father, your daughter’s not dead. Very soon, I’ll be able to return to your side, and then I will tell you about Nan Potian’s scheme.”

“Nan Potian has wild ambitions. He wants to take your position as the leader of the Moon God Hall. Now that so many years have passed, I wonder if you’re fine? Has the Moon God Hall fallen into Nan Potian’s hands...” As she thought, her illusory face suddenly became filled with deep worry.

.....

At the same moment, the huge formation still took up the same amount space on the first floor of the divine hall just like before, filling up a large portion of the hall where the sculpture was.

A large group of people regretfully stood in the region close to where the formation lay. A few of them were even dejected, as if their souls had disappeared.

These people had all been sent down from the top floor by the divine hall's power. Now, all of them understood that the divine hall was most likely taken by You Yue, who had disappeared from the throne with the sceptre in her hand, which was why all of them were filled with deep regret and dejection.

Xie Wang and the white tiger stood together. The fist-sized saint artifact floated over the white tiger's head as it slowly spun. Currently, both of them were covered in blood, in horrible shape. Their injuries were quite deep.

"I never thought that fairy Hao Yue would still be alive. You Yue's definitely been taken away by fairy Hao Yue. She should be fine, right? Though what happens next isn't something we can control or interfere with," Xie Wang said gruffly. He was rather helpless.

The white tiger remained as awe-inspiring as before, standing with its head up high. It stared fixedly at the formation space up ahead as worry filled its eyes. No one knew if Jian Chen could make it out of the formation space now that You Yue's situation was unknown.

# Chapter 1053: New Master of the Divine Hall (One)

---

“Sigh, I never thought that we’d expend so much energy while fighting over the sceptre only for it to fall into the hands of a girl who’s not even an Earth Saint Master. This is a huge joke,” among the crowd, a bloodied, pale-faced old man made a self-depreciating statement. He was filled with heavy dejection, and vaguely, there seemed to be slivers of envy. He was envious of You Yue.

“There’s no point in continuing to stay in this divine hall. Whatever. If we have to watch that girl come out beaming with smiles while we’re filled with regret, we might as well leave now, just in case we feel even more miserable when that moment comes.” The old man stared at the ceiling of the divine hall in a daze as he mumbled to himself. He turned around and left as he did all that, leaving the divine hall in dejection.

“Hmph, isn’t this all because of the Winged Tiger God. If it weren’t for the Winged Tiger God getting in our way, the sceptre would’ve entered our hands long ago. How could it be taken by a weak girl?”

“You still don’t understand? The Winged Tiger God tried extremely hard to stop us for the lady to obtain the sceptre. Sigh, too bad she’s Jian Chen’s fiancée. With Jian Chen as her great supporter, even the extremely prideful Winged Tiger God ended up helping her out...”

“Sigh, my daughter’s roughly the same as that girl. She’s also an

alluring beauty, a woman of rare appearance. If my daughter could foster a relationship with Jian Chen, how good would that be...”

.....

A hubbub of discussion resonated in the surroundings. Many people regretfully sighed. They were unwilling to accept this outcome, because they had come across no other treasures other than the sceptre on their journey within the divine hall. They had worked hard for so long, yet in the end, they had obtained nothing. How could the people be satisfied with nothing?

Quite a few people looked at the Winged Tiger God with undisguised hatred and resentment. All of them were extremely confident in themselves and filled with confidence in their strength. All of them believed that if it were not for the Winged Tiger God, the sceptre would have been theirs long ago.

Although many people in the crowd held deep hatred for the Winged Tiger God, none of them dared to do anything to it. All of them had gained a deep understanding of the Winged Tiger God’s supreme battle prowess. It had only been somewhat heavily injured when it was facing against many Saint Rulers and three Saint Tier Battle Skills. Killing it would be even more difficult. None of them knew if the Winged Tiger God was hiding any other abilities or secret techniques.

All the people within the divine hall were sent to the same place by the power of the divine hall, so in that instance, the number of people on the first floor suddenly exploded. It became densely-packed, almost filling up all the remaining space of the divine hall.

The people who were still in the mazes before and had yet to reach the final floor learned about what had happened. They were filled with despair and regret. They all left the divine hall in low spirits after a short while.

People constantly left the divine hall, causing the number of people to rapidly fall. In the end, only around a hundred people remained, including the Winged Tiger God and Xie Wang. All of them stared at the formation where the Saint Kings were trapped in worry.

The illusory fairy Hao Yue had already left where she sat before in the sealed room. She left the piece of jade for You Yue. Currently, You Yue lay on the piece of jade and was enveloped by a thick layer of moon essence. With her eyes closed, the dense Moonlight Force around her constantly seeped into her body, rapidly improving her body.

Fairy Hao Yue stared at You Yue in mixed emotions as the moon essence enveloped her. She thought, “The Mirror of the Moon God was specifically created by my father for me. The cultivation method is extremely profound in that it takes from nature itself. My father once told me that I was the only person who could cultivate with it. Any other person who uses it will become eternally doomed. I wonder if passing this cultivation method onto You Yue was the right decision...

“Though, father also once told me that the people who try to use this cultivation method will face the drawbacks once they break through the Origin realm and attain Godhood. Meanwhile, it will



be extremely difficult for You Yue to reach Saint Emperor within her life. Even with the support of heavenly resources, her limit will only be Saint King at most. If she cultivates the Mirror of the Moon God right now and has her body modified by the moon essence, she will be able to reach Saint Emperor in the very least. If origin energy was still present, she might even be able to reach the Origin realm.

“She may never attain Godhood from today on, but at least she can live much longer. In that case, I won’t really be harming her...”

.....

It had already been half a month since the divine hall had appeared, and it had become extremely crowded outside the divine hall. The air was filled with densely-packed figures everywhere, ranging from Heaven Saint Masters to Saint Kings.

Several great elders had come from the protector clans, and even the grand elder of Mercenary City, Tian Jian, had personally come. The ancestors of many ancient clans had come as well, resulting in the gathering of many Saint Kings. All of them stared at the divine hall with furrowed brows.

The people who had just left the divine hall brought out the latest news with them, allowing everyone to learn that fairy Hao Yue was still alive and that her figure remained in the divine hall. At the same time, they learned how an extremely weak woman had obtained the sceptre and was sent to some unknown place by the throne of the divine hall.

# Chapter 1054: New Master of the Divine Hall (Two)

---

“What’s happening? Why can’t I feel the suction force? Has it stopped working on me after its realized that it can’t suck away my Chaotic Force? Or has something else happened in the divine hall,” Jian Chen thought.

“So many days have already passed. I wonder how You Yue and the others are right now. Have they successfully gained control over the divine hall...”

At the same time, a woman in blue robes currently sat within a sealed room as she cultivated a thousand meters below the surface of the earth at the Huanggu clan. She was extremely pretty, possessing beauty that could outshine the moon and few could rival. She could enchant countless men.

A faint layer of water-blue light shone in the woman’s surroundings as extremely pure, water-attributed Saint Force pulsed from her body. It caused the air in the room to become moist, while droplets of water hung from the surrounding walls.

The woman was Huang Luan, currently trapped here by the ancestor of the Huanggu clan and forced to cultivate the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower.

She had already been trapped here for many years. During that time, she had always been imprisoned in that room, never to be able to leave it. She was completely cut off from the world, only

able to cultivate and then cultivate some more.

She possessed the Water Spirit's Body, while the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower was a high tiered cultivation method extremely suitable for people with Saint Force of the water attribute. As a result, the rate at which her strength increased could be described as extremely great during the years where she worked hard in the method, reaching the Sixth Cycle of Heaven Saint Master, now only an inch away from Saint Ruler.

Although her speed was far from Jian Chen or Tie Ta's, it was equivalent to a prodigy that would only appear once every ten thousand years on the Tian Yuan Continent.

After several years, Huang Luan's temperament had undergone a great change from before as well. The most evident part was that her pride and arrogance from before were now gone. She was becoming stronger willed, even more mature, and silent.

Suddenly, the water-blue light around Huang Luan vanished. She slowly opened her eyes and within them hid a sliver of deep hatred.

"The Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower really is wondrous. After these years of cultivating with it, most of the poison left behind by that old bastard has been purged. There's only a small residue left, which can't affect me. If I continue to work hard on cultivation, I'll immediately break through that old bastard's barrier once I reach Saint Ruler. I'll charge out and fight him to death. Afterward, the clan should hear about the news very soon, so they'll definitely come help save great-grandfather," Huang

Luan calculated inside as determination flooded her face.

After being trapped for so many years, she had seen through and understood a lot of things. She knew that the Huanggu clan wanted something from her since they were holding Huang Tianba as hostage, imprisoning her there and forcing her to cultivate. As a result, she had already made up her mind about the fact that she would die. The only reason why she focused on cultivation now was so that she could burst out of the room and spread the news, so that her great-grandfather could be saved.

Suddenly, a muffled rumble rang out. The door slowly opened and a simply-dressed old man slowly walked in. He was the ancestor of the Huanggu clan.

“My dear Luan’er. Why haven’t you been cultivating? You must work hard on cultivation and reach Saint Ruler as soon as possible. Once you reach Saint Ruler, I’ll let your great-grandfather go,” the ancestor smiled at Huang Luan. However, it seemed rather sinister in the dimly-lit room.

“How is my great-grandfather right now?” Huang Luan suppressed her intense hatred inside and asked in a composed fashion. She was not an opponent of the ancestor right now.

“Don’t worry. Your great-grandfather is fantastic right now. I haven’t mistreated him one bit at all,” the Huanggu clan ancestor smiled as he observed Huang Luan. He sighed inside, “The Water Spirit’s Body sure can cultivate at an unbelievable speed once it finds a suitable cultivation method. I never thought that this girl would reach Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master so soon.”

The ancestor slowly made his way to Huang Luan's side. He bit his index finger and squeezed out a droplet of blood. It hung in the air, and then he used it to draw an image with his index finger.

"What are you trying to do?" Huang Luan's face changed slightly when she saw what the old man was doing. She felt an ill omen, and immediately began to back off cautiously.

A while later, a complicated and indecipherable inscription was drawn by the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. It glowed with a demonic red light and seemed to be filled with malevolence.

The old man looked at Huang Luan and sniggered, "My dear disciple, don't worry. You're master's beloved disciple after all. Master would never harm you. Come, come to your master's side," the old man slowly drew closer and closer to Huang Luan.

The room was not big at all, so Huang Luan hit a wall very soon. Although the door was wide open, a barrier was present outside, so she could not flee at all. Even though she did not have an escape route, she did not show any fear at all. She knew that any attempt of resistance against the Huanggu clan ancestor, who had reached Saint Ruler many years ago, was futile. After some thought, she closed her eyes and began to silently accept this situation.

The old man arrived before Huang Luan and sinisterly smiled. He slowly guided the inscription at the tip of his finger to the region between Huang Luan's eyebrows

As soon as the blood-red imprint came in contact with her skin, it disappeared into her head. Huang Luan suddenly began to show signs of pain, and she moaned in uncontrollable agony. She felt her head ache with extreme pain, as if her soul was being ripped apart.

The old man's smile became even more sinister after the formation had successfully entered Huang Luan's head.

A long while later, the pain in her head finally began to slowly recede. She stared at the old man with a rather pale face and coldly asked, "What was that before? What did you do to me?"

"This is called the Blood Servant's Imprint. I learned it recently from an ancient scripture. The Blood Servant's Imprint won't cause you any harm. All it does is connect our fate. If I die, you die too." the ancestor slowly explained as he sighed a breath of relief inside, "Now it'll be easy. I've planted the imprint in the girl, so I'll be safe even if Jian Chen or the ten protector clans come knocking on the door. I hope this girl can reach Saint Ruler a little after. Once she reaches Saint Ruler, the potential of the Water Spirit's Body will be completely activated as well. At that time, if I absorb all her hidden potential and strength as a human cauldron, I'll reach Saint King immediately. I might even be able to reach Saint Emperor in the future."

# Chapter 1055: New Master of the Divine Hall (Three)

---

The ancestor of the Huanggu clan left, and the heavy door slowly slammed shut. Only Huang Luan was left in the dim room.

Huang Luan did not show any panic or fear even though she was now bound by the Blood Servant's Imprint. She was extremely calm. She had already accepted her death long ago, so she did not care at all that her life was in someone else's hands.

Huang Luan returned to the center of the room and sat down. She was dazed as memories filled her eyes. She mumbled, "Jian Chen, I wonder where you are. How have you been in these years? Have you ever thought about me or missed me?"

"Jian Chen, every moment when we were together as well as every little matter that occurred between us will be deeply embedded in my head. I will never forget you. All that can be blamed is fate. I cannot be with you forever. In the future, we may never meet again..."

"I never thought that my last time seeing you was when we separated all those years ago..."

Huang Luan suddenly became sorrowful. Two clear streaks of tears flowed uncontrollably down her cheeks. They landed on the cold floor and splashed apart.

Deep sorrow filled the room. The fallen tears were like Huang Luan's heart—completely shattered and split into countless pieces.

...

In the blink of an eye, another half a month passed. All the Saint Kings from the protector clans and ancient clans, as well as the Saint Rulers, stood scattered in the air around the divine hall.

During that half a month, no one had left. They remained where they were, while the people of the protector clans and Mercenary City all tried to think of ways to save their people trapped inside. The remaining Saint Rulers all remained there to watch it all unfold and also to find out who the divine hall would belong to in the end.

During that time, the people from the protector clans used countless methods and had attempted countless times, but it all resulted in failure. The divine hall's toughness was incomparable to other ordinary divine halls. They could not open the divine hall even when all of them tried as hard as they could—they even struggled to leave a mark on it.

“So many days have passed already and they still haven't come out. There's no news of You Yue either. I wonder what the situation is like inside. If it keeps dragging out, it will be detrimental to the people trapped inside,” growled a great elder from the Shenxiao sect. He was extremely stern.

“We've called from outside for so many days, and even attacked



the divine hall, but the divine hall does not respond at all. All it does is float here and absorb Moonlight Force. I think fairy Hao Yue's dead. If this continues, the people inside will definitely face life-threatening danger. This is why I would say that why don't we, the ten clans, use our clan treasures, the Emperor Armaments, and smash through the entrance of the divine hall in one stroke?" A burly, middle-aged man in black robes also spoke his mind. He was a great elder from the Yangji sect.

All the great elders of the protector clans changed slightly in expression when they heard about using the Emperor Armaments. They became hesitant. The Emperor Armaments of the protector clans were not any old Emperor Armament. They were weapons formed and strengthened from the fusion of dozens or even a hundred Emperor Armaments through a secret technique over countless years. It combined all their power, so it possessed extremely great might. Using it would result in extremely great backlash to all of them, and they would all be injured.

The Saint Kings trapped within the formation space of the divine hall had all lost their powers and collapsed on the ground including Hei Yu and Hong Lian. Only Jian Chen was perfectly fine. Many of them were ashen as despair filled their hearts. They had lost all hope, as if they had already been prepared to be trapped there for all their lives.

At this moment, the formation space suddenly began to violently shake. The surrounding landscape began to quickly change and distort, gradually blurring.

The change in the formation space alerted all the powerless Saint

Kings. All of them immediately struggled to sit up, staring at the space in suspicion and surprise.

“What’s happening? Has the formation begun to change, turning into a true killing formation to slaughter all of us here?” A Saint King questioned weakly. His complexion was horrible.

The faces of all the other people immediately sank when they heard that. Their complexions also became horrible, but they all continued to stare fixedly at the changing landscape.

Very soon, the wasteland conjured by the formation vanished. It became rather dark for everyone, and when they could see their surroundings once more, they discovered that they had actually returned to the divine hall where the sculpture of fairy Hao Yue stood nearby.

“The formation’s vanished. The formation’s vanished. We’ve returned to where we were before...”

“The formation must have run out of energy and dispersed. We’re finally free. We’ve finally broken out of the damned formation space...”

Everyone became extremely emotional when they discovered that they had been freed. All of them uncontrollably cried out with joy. The Saint Kings who had already accepted their fate became even more emotional, becoming speechless.

“I will give you five seconds. Leave the divine hall immediately, or you won’t be able to leave ever again.” At this moment, a cold female’s voice rang out. Fairy Hao Yue’s illusionary form currently floated above the sculpture in the center of the room. Her white clothes were like snow, and she seemed otherworldly, having transcended from mortal affairs. She seemed like a goddess.

“It’s fairy Hao Yue!” All the Saint Kings immediately cried out when they saw her. They became filled with disbelief.

“No, she’s a soul. It’s fairy Hao Yue’s soul. Her soul is actually still alive...” The Saint Kings possessed great senses, much greater senses than Saint Rulers. They could tell that it was fairy Hao Yue’s soul with a single glance, but even though that was the case, it still shocked them all.

Saint Emperors had a life space of ten thousand years. Once that time was up, their bodies would begin to fall apart and their souls would disperse. It was impossible for them to live much longer after those ten thousand years, yet fairy Hao Yue was someone who had lived several tens of thousand years ago, and her soul actually still remained. It was unheard of to them.

“Two seconds have passed; you have three left,” fairy Hao Yue said as she stared coldly at the Saint Kings.

All of the people no longer bothered with her matters with that. They did not doubt her abilities to trap them for all of eternity—after all, the formation just before was more than enough evidence. They immediately charged out as fast as they could, but as they had all lost their powers, they could not fly. They ran like

ordinary people.

## Chapter 1056: You Yue Emerges

---

Jian Chen revealed a sliver of hesitation as he watched all the Saint Kings hurriedly run out. He did not leave immediately, and he looked around instead. He found that the entire place was rather empty and that there was no other people present other than those who had been trapped in the formation.

“Esteemed fairy Hao Yue, may I inquire about the situation for the other people who entered the divine hall?” Jian Chen clasped his hands at fairy Hao Yue’s soul. Currently, the person he worried most for was You Yue.

Fairy Hao Yue’s gaze landed on Jian chen and an undetectable sliver of surprise appeared in her cold eyes. However, she spoke just as coldly as before, “They’ve all left here!”

Jian Chen finally felt relieved when he heard that. Without saying anything more, he left with Hei Yu and Hong Lian. Jian Chen gave up on the idea of taking the divine hall since fairy Hao Yue was still alive. She had been reduced to only a soul now, but Jian Chen dared not underestimate her.

Jian Chen, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian left with Kara Lot and Kazda Jianxiong. The great elder from the Changyang clan had left long ago.

With everyone’s departure, the divine hall recovered its peace from before. Only fairy Hao Yue’s soul remained above the sculpture in the slightly-dim room.

“I really do want to know where they got their armor and weapon with origin energy, but if I ask them now, it’s unlikely that they will tell me. They might even weave some lies to trick me. Seeing how their relationship with Jian Chen is decent, I definitely will come in contact with them quite often in the future. At that time, I can just ask my dear disciple, You Yue, about the origin energy. It’ll definitely be much easier.

“So many years have passed anyway. I wouldn’t mind waiting a few more days at all...

“Jian Chen definitely cultivates Chaotic Force. He walks a cultivation path that is out of the ordinary. He will not need origin energy to increase his strength at all, so I really do hope he reaches the Origin realm quickly. That way, I can return home through him...

“I hope nothing happens to the Moon God Hall. Father, you have to wait until your daughter returns and then ruins Nan Potian’s scheme...”

...

Outside the divine hall, the great elders from the protector clans continued to waver over to use the Emperor Armaments or not. The door of the divine hall suddenly swung open at that moment, and the Saint Kings that had been trapped in the formation stood at the doorway. All of them excitedly looked at the outside world, as if they had just survived a disaster.

“They’ve come out!” The people from the protector clans and a few ancient clans all became excited as well. They all flew toward the divine hall, taking back the Saint Kings who had lost their powers.

Rui Jin, Xie Wang, and the Winged Tiger God also arrived before the main entrance. When they saw how Hei Yu and Hong Lian had both lost all their power, Rui Jin’s face immediately changed, “I never thought that your strengths would fall to such a level. Looks like the danger of the divine hall far exceeded anything I expected. You two better return to the artifact space first and recover.”

Afterward, Hei Yu and Hong Lian both entered the artifact space to recover their depleted energy.

“Brother Jian Chen, my energy is depleted, so it’s just too inconvenient for me to return. I was wondering if I could spend a few days in the artifact space to recover,” Kara Lot said to Jian Chen.

“Of course!” Jian Chen agreed without any hesitation. He knew quite well that the Kara clan had many enemies. It would be difficult to even run away if Kara Lot faced them in his current situation.

Kazda Jianxiong also requested out of his own accord to enter the artifact space to recover his strength after Kara Lot had been taken away. In the end, he was sent into the artifact space as well.

Kazda Jianxiong was the same as Kara Lot; they had both lost their powers and dared not to return hastily.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao supported the great elder who had entered with them and arrived before Jian Chen. He asked for Jian Chen's well-being out of concern before hurriedly leaving with the great elder.

A few other Saint Rulers from the ancient clans all went up to support their ancestors, leaving the divine hall as well. A portion of them immediately began to return to their clans, while others stayed behind. They wanted to see who the divine hall would belong to in the end.

Among the ten protector clans, the Yiyuan sect, the Changyang clan, and the Pure Heart Pavilion chose to leave. The seven other protector clans chose to stay behind, while the people from Mercenary City stayed behind as well. Many of them still cared about the divine hall very much.

Jian Chen had already dismissed all his thoughts regarding the divine hall. He said to Rui Jin, "Is You Yue fine, senior Rui Jin?"

Rui Jin shook his head in response, "You Yue still hasn't come out."

"What? You Yue hasn't left the divine hall?" Jian Chen became surprised with that and immediately began to worry.



A powerful ripple of energy appeared from behind him at this moment. He immediately turned around to look when he sensed the abnormality. He found that the divine hall had stopped absorbing Moonlight Force and was rapidly shrinking, becoming the size of a fist in just a few mere seconds. It was becoming a small, white but exquisitely crafted divine hall.

Without the obstruction of the divine hall, a purple-dressed, elegant woman appeared before everyone.

“Yue’er!” Jian Chen could not help but call out in joy when he saw the person, as it was You Yue.

You Yue gestured with her hand, and the divine hall immediately flew obediently into her hand. It enveloped her entire body with hazy Moonlight Force, allowing her to become resistant to the unique environment of outer space.

You Yue saw Jian Chen, and her face immediately stirred, “Jian Chen, you’ve finally returned safely. I haven’t let you down. I’ve successfully gained control of the divine hall and saved you from it.”

Jian Chen took a single step and appeared beside her, directly traversing several hundred meters. He felt pleasantly surprised as he stared at the Bright Moon Divine Hall in her hand and asked in disbelief, “Yue’er, what did you just say? You’ve successfully gained control of the divine hall?”

You Yue immediately felt pleased with herself when she saw Jian

Chen's surprise. She nodded firmly.

"Then fairy Hao Yue..." Jian Chen paused. He felt confused inside. Fairy Hao Yue was clearly still alive, so how did the divine hall end up in someone else's hands?

"Jian Chen, fairy Hao Yue has accepted me as her disciple. She's my master now," You Yue said rather proudly. She smiled sweetly as she was extremely happy.

Jian Chen was stunned with that, but he soon became overjoyed as well. It was even rarer than the divine hall for You Yue to become a disciple of fairy Hao Yue.

The surrounding Saint Rulers and Saint Kings heard their conversation clearly. When they learned that You Yue had indeed obtained the divine hall and even become a disciple of fairy Hao Yue, the Saint Rulers who had fought over the sceptre were greatly affected, deepening the regret and unwillingness within them.

The Saint Kings looked at You Yue with deep envy, coupled with a sliver of extremely well and deeply hidden jealousy. However, they all knew about the relationship between You Yue and Jian Chen, which is why they dared not let the thought of taking it cross their minds before Jian Chen.

On the other hand, the people of the protector clans seemed very calm. Divine halls may be extremely precious to ancient clans, but they seemed common and ordinary to the ancient protector clans. Even if the amount of divine halls that were inherited from their

predecessors was ignored, just the quantity that they obtained from other sources was plentiful. What truly made the protector clans drool over was fairy Hao Yue's cultivation method.

You Yue's talent for cultivation also underwent an overwhelming change under the transformation of Moonlight Essence. She was enough to be called a great genius now. Her strength had passed through Great Saint Master and Earth Saint Master, reaching Heaven Saint Master.

# Chapter 1057: Infant

---

You Yue roughly explained her encounter in the divine hall to Jian Chen, so Jian Chen gained an understanding as well. He felt happy for You Yue fortuitous encounter.

You Yue was only a Heaven Saint Master now, but there were extremely few people who could become Heaven Saint Masters at her age even with the entire Tian Yuan Continent in perspective. You Yue's cultivation talent had also undergone an overwhelming change, so her speed at cultivation greatly increased.

Many of the experts from ancient and hermit clans who stayed behind went up to the two of them to congratulate them. They smiled amicably and congratulations constantly rang out. Their attempts to get on Jian Chen's good side were obvious, and even two experts from protector clans had gone up to congratulate them, wanting to pull Jian Chen to their side vaguely enough.

Although the ten protector clans were envious of the Winged Tiger God that followed Jian Chen and wanted to take it for themselves, Jian Chen was no longer the weakling from before. He was strong enough where even they themselves needed to be wary and powerful enough where they dared not provoke him easily. The Winged Tiger God following Jian Chen had already become a matter set in stone, so they obviously had no wish of lingering on Jian Chen's bad side.

Jian Chen was rather mannerly. He would thank the people who came up to congratulate him politely regardless of actually being acquaintances. You Yue, on the other hand, was once a princess, so

she behaved in a very refined manner as well. She thanked them with a faint smile.

Now that the Bright Moon Divine Hall had a master, the disruptions caused by the divine hall finally came to an end. All the experts gathered in outer space dispersed with mixed emotions. Tian Jian spoke a few words to Jian Chen out of courtesy before leaving immediately. Soon after that, only Jian Chen's group remained in the same place.

"Yue'er, let's go back first," Jian Chen said to You Yue, before extending his hand around You Yue's thin waist. The white tiger and Xie Wang had already entered the artifact space to heal.

You Yue did not stop Jian Chen. She smiled happily as she was embraced around the waist, leaning gently on Jian Chen's shoulder. The divine hall had already disappeared silently into her hand.

Jian Chen left outer space with You Yue and Rui Jin, returning to the Tian Yuan Continent. They directly descended to the air above Fragrance River. Although over a month had passed since the divine hall had appeared, its effects still lingered on all the people. Many people had stayed by the river and some people had even set up tents on the two riverbanks. They stared at the sky days on end, wanting to know who the divine hall ended up with in the end.

Jian Chen did not tarry when he returned to the City of God. He found Quan Youcai and Yang Ling, bidding farewell after just a short conversation. He left with Yang Ling.

Hong Lian and Hei Yu remained in the artifact space to recover their strength, so only Rui Jin accompanied them on the way back. He ripped open a Space Gate, going back to the Changyang clan in Lore City.

Zaar Veimos stood on the roof of the Zaar family estate, staring deeply in the direction where Jian Chen had disappeared off to, “Kara Lot of the Kara clan and Kazda Jianxiong of the Kazda clan have both lost all their strength. They’re extremely weak, and without the two of them, the Kara clan and Kazda clan are extremely fragile. How good of an opportunity, too bad Caiyun... Sigh, I sure do regret the past, I sure do regret the past.” Zaar Veimos was filled with regret.

...

Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue currently sat on a huge rock on the mountain of the distant Three Saint Island. They faced the vast ocean where the sea blended with the sky, quietly playing their zithers.

Their abilities at the zither were nowhere near the Heavenly Enchantress’, but they possessed an extremely great achievement nonetheless. Not only were their zither tunes graceful and able to calm people, they also possessed a natural beauty.

A white-robed woman sat behind the two of them. She was the young lady of the Tianqin clan, Qin Qin.

She was not playing the zither. Instead, she sat on the cliff with her eyes closed, carefully listening to the music played by Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue. Her zither, modelled from the Zither of the Demonic Cry, was placed firmly on her legs.

Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue finally stopped playing a long while later. They slowly put their zithers away and stood up, calmly staring at Qin Qin. A while later, Xiao Yue said, “Junior Qin Qin, have you sensed the existence of the Heavenly Melody?”

Qin Qin slowly opened her eyes and a sliver of confusion flashed through. She shook her head, “Seniors, I’ve heard you mention this Heavenly Melody many times, but just what is it?”

“We can’t explain it clearly either, because it was what our master told us back then. All we know is that it’s a feeling. It’s an odd feeling; a feeling of tone. Only by sensing the Heavenly Melody can you be considered to have grasped the basics of the way of the zither,” said Xiao Yue as reminiscence appeared in her eyes.

“Looks like our comprehension of the way of the zither is not enough; we don’t have the power to let junior sense the Heavenly Melody just by ourselves. Maybe it’ll only work if master personally plays. It’s a pity that master’s been in seclusion for many years already. I wonder when she’ll come out,” Xiao Qian said rather regretfully.

Suddenly, Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue’s eyes froze. They suddenly turned their heads to look into the distance, where the sky and sea joined as one. A streak of violet light rapidly enlarged, approaching Three Saint Island at an unbelievable speed. It was still at the

horizon, yet it had arrived on the island a second later. It was only ten meters away from Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue now; its speed was shocking.

Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue grew solemn. They immediately became cautious when such a great expert suddenly visited the island, but they saw who the violet figure was very soon. They stared blankly as they became extremely shocked, calling out in unison, “Master!”

The violet figure was the mistress of the island, the Heavenly Enchantress.

In violet robes, the Heavenly Enchantress stood honorably and coldly. She stood with her back from Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue as her black hair fell naturally from her shoulders like a fountain.

“Master, it’s you. Weren’t you in seclusion? Why have you suddenly appeared outside?” Xiao Qian was filled with shock. She had never sensed the Heavenly Enchantress leave in the past few years, always believing that she remained in seclusion.

“In my seclusion, I just happened to go out for a journey. I’ve only just returned. Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, has anything happened on Three Saint Island during these recent years?” The Heavenly Enchantress ignored the question and replied icily. Her voice was emotionless.

Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue immediately understood the Heavenly Enchantress’ explanation. Xiao Yue replied, “Master, all because of you, Three Saint Island has remained as peaceful as before.



Nothing big has happened.” Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue walked toward the Heavenly Enchantress happily as they spoke.

Although they were disciples of the Heavenly Enchantress on the surface, they were actually more like sisters.

When Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue arrived by her side, they discovered that she was currently carrying an infant wrapped in a cotton cloth. They immediately became astonished.

“Hmm? Master, whose child is this?” Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue said together. They immediately leaned over, curiously staring at the infant.

A sliver of mixed emotions appeared in the Heavenly Enchantress’ eyes. She lowered her head to look at the sleeping infant and said, “There was war in a small kingdom on the continent. The child was lying among mountains of corpses and pools of blood. His parents both passed away, so I took pity on him and brought him back.”

## Chapter 1058: Xiao Bao

---

“Oh, master, this child is so pitiful. He’s lost his parents soon after being born. That’s just too pitiful.” The kind Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue immediately became deeply sympathetic when they learned about the miserable life of the infant. Their gazes toward the child also underwent changes, becoming filled with love.

“Master, let’s let this pitiful child live on Three Saint Island in the future,” Xiao Qian touched the child’s cheek with a jade-like finger as she pleaded.

“Yeah, master, let’s just let the child stay with us on Three Saint Mountain. The mountain’s this big and there’s only the four of us. An additional person would bring an additional portion of liveliness,” Xiao Yue also insisted. She liked the chubby, white infant in the Heavenly Enchantress’ arms very much and felt even more sympathetic.

The Heavenly Enchantress had already removed her veil, revealing her supreme beauty. She looked at the infant with mixed emotions and gently sighed, “Alright then. Since you all like this child so much, let’s let him live on Three Saint Island.”

“Yes, fantastic. There’ll be one extra person on Three Saint Mountain in the future.” Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue immediately cried out. They were like little girls as they behaved in such a lively manner.

“Master, the child still doesn’t have a name. Why not give him a

name?” Xiao Yue suggested.

“Oh my, let me do that then. I’m best at giving names to children.” Xiao Qian excitedly took up the right to name the child. After some thought, she said, “Master, looking at how cute the child is, why not call him Xiao Bao?”

“Xiao Bao, that name sounds pretty good. It sounds quite cute,” Xiao Yue said after some thought as well.

The Heavenly Enchantress hesitated slightly before faintly nodding in the end, “Alright then. This child will be called Xiao Bao in the future.”

“Master, leave Xiao Bao to the two of us. We will be responsible for looking after him in the future,” Xiao Yue giggled, before extending her hands to carry Xiao Bao.

“No need,” the Heavenly Enchantress appeared silently ten meters away, gradually moving further away with Xiao Bao. She said, “I’ll look after Xiao Bao. Xiao Qian, Xiao Yue, immediately go down the mountain to find some high quality milk. You two will be responsible for Xiao Bao’s food in the future.”

“Yes, master!” Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue replied in unison, though they seemed to be dejected.

“Qin Qin, you should rest for a few days. I will play the zither for you in three days so that you can comprehend the Heavenly

Melody,” the Heavenly Enchantress softly said, before completely disappearing.

The Heavenly Enchantress sat dazed on a big rock within a secret room with Xiao Bao in her arms. Her expression was extremely complicated with some distress mixed in.

Xiao Bao seemed to sense the Heavenly Enchantress’ distress and began to make sounds. He stared at the Heavenly Enchantress with his large, pure eyes out of curiosity as he unconsciously moved his arm.

The Heavenly Enchantress looked at Xiao Bao and secretly sighed inside. She said, “I was pregnant for ten whole years to give birth to Xiao Bao. Meanwhile, my strength has skyrocketed at an unbelievable rate during my pregnancy, reaching the current level with the addition of the Dragon’s Saliva. Xiao Bao, are you my blessing or curse...”

From then on, one more person joined Three Saint Island. That person was a male infant, Xiao Bao.

The Changyang clan in Lore City was currently in joy. Jian Chen’s return immediately caused it to become bustling. In the present day, Jian Chen’s status in the clan was unrivaled. He was the glory of the clan, the pride of the clan. He earned the respect of everyone. All of the elderly members of the clan immediately went up to personally receive him when he returned. Their gazes toward him were filled with deep pride and admiration.

These older members were all part of the upper echelon. Although they were not powerful, mostly Earth Saint Masters, they were Jian Chen's great-grandfathers if seniority was considered.

In a corner of the clan, Jian Chen's second brother, Changyang Ke, watched on with mixed emotions as everyone seemed to parade into the conference hall with Jian Chen. He was strewn between emotions and could not help but think back to every single moment he had been in contact with Jian Chen when he was young.

He could still clearly remember that his youngest brother's status was nowhere near his when he was labeled as a cripple who could not use Saint Force, yet now, the cripple had become a powerful figure that could shake up the continent with a twitch of his feet. On the other hand, even after expending a large quantity of the clan's monster cores, Changyang Ke was still stuck at Great Saint Master. He had not even reached Earth Saint Master.

"Big brother's become a disciple of the Pure Heart Pavilion of the ten protector clans, while sister's become the saintess of some unknown Ice God Hall. Youngest brothers has become a shocking expert of the continent. He's now a Saint King. Now there's only me, Changyang Ke, without any proud achievements. I haven't even reached Earth Saint Master. Am I useless..." Changyang Ke laughed at himself and became rather dejected.

Of the four sons and daughters of the current patriarch, Changyang Ba, three of them had already become famed figures. There was only him who remained relatively unknown even today,

which greatly affected him.

Jian Chen casually conversed with the seniors of his clan, before returning to his own room. Due to Jian Chen's unique status, he also received special treatment from the clan. His luxurious, palace-like residence from before had been rebuilt once more. Not only was it larger, it was even more grand and majestic. It could rival the royal palaces of kings.

Jian Chen's palace-like residence had already become the symbol of the Changyang clan. It took up an entire third of the estate. The great tower created by Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun had been demolished long ago.

Jian Chen felt rather helpless knowing the clan rebuilt his residence. He really did not have any demand for the reconstruction of his residence. He had even learned from his mother that the reconstruction was actually suggested by the ancestor of the clan, Changyang Zu Yunkong. He had even obtained the agreement of everyone, including Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun.

On that night, Jian Chen gathered in the residence with Little Fatty, Wang Yifeng, Senior An, Yun Zheng, Yang Ling, and the others. They drank together and talked about everything, laughter echoed out constantly.

“Jian Chen, I've already made up my mind. Once you leave the Changyang clan, Wang Yifeng, Senior An, Yun Zheng, and I will go out to train. We'll roam the Tian Yuan Continent properly. Locking ourselves up and cultivating everyday is like shutting

ourselves from the world. It's not very helpful at all," Little Fatty drunkenly said. His resolute face had already become bright red from drinking.

Jian Chen secretly nodded to that. Although Little Fatty's talent was impressive, his age was still a thing after all. He lacked legitimate experience, so roaming the Tian Yuan Continent would indeed be extremely beneficial to him.

"Dugu Feng's currently at Mercenary City, taking up the position as disciplinary elder. He's responsible for punishing the mercenaries that have done wrong..."

"Ever since sister-in-law You Yue's left with you, the management of Flame City has all fallen to Bi Lian. She's been managing the city in an orderly manner and has also raised many members of the upper echelon for management as well. Currently, the city is growing with each coming day. Together with your name, Jian Chen, many Saint Rulers have already been drawn over. Your great grandfather Bi Hai's also gone with your sister Bi Lian to the city, protecting her as he watches over her cultivation..."

At the table, Jian Chen gained some understanding of Flame City's situation from his dear friends. He both loved and felt pity for his sister Bi Lian. He knew it had been difficult for her over the years. She must have spent quite the effort for Flame City.

# Chapter 1059: Disturbance at Flame City

---

Deep into the night, Jian Chen's lively residence finally quietened down. Little Fatty and everyone else left, and they returned to their own residences to rest. Only Jian Chen remained, with a few female servants who were cleaning up the table.

Jian Chen walked outside before he gently leaped onto the roof. He laid down and stared at the pitch-black sky. His deep eyes seemed to pierce the space, as he looked at the silver-white Bright Moon Divine Hall in the distant outer space.

You Yue was not at the Changyang clan. Soon after she returned with him, she entered the divine hall. Then, she went to outer space to absorb the essence of the moon to cultivate.

After she accepted fairy Hao Yue as her master, You Yue became extremely enthusiastic toward cultivation. She worked even harder and even more arduously. She only wanted to increase her strength as much as possible, so she could do some things for Jian Chen and share his burden.

Jian Chen laid on the roof and zoned out, as he stared at the night sky. He became slightly confused as he murmured, "Why did fairy Hao Yue take You Yue as a disciple? You Yue's talent is good, but that's only with a small kingdom like Gesun in perspective. It's nothing if you look at the entire continent. There are countless prodigious females on the continent, and their talent is far greater than You Yue's. So, why didn't fairy Hao Yue take someone else?" In that moment of peace, Jian Chen began to think of many things. He felt most suspicious about fairy Hao Yue accepting You Yue as



her disciple.

“I don’t think this is as simple as it seems. Fairy Hao Yue probably has some other intentions,” murmured Jian Chen as he pondered.

Suddenly, Jian Chen’s gaze froze. He immediately stopped talking to himself, as he saw a black figure leap up to the roof. The figure produced gentle sounds as they stepped on the tiles, slowly making their way toward Jian Chen.

Jian Chen did not get up, lying on the roof as before. He cushioned his head with his arms, as he continued to stare at the night sky.

The black figure arrived beside him. Then, they laid down just like Jian Chen. His movements caused the tiles to creak. He said, “Brother, it’s so late. Why haven’t you gone to sleep?”

Jian Chen turned around and looked at the figure. He smiled, “Brother, doesn’t that apply to you as well? And to me, sleeping nowadays is basically wasting time.”

“Sigh, you’re right. You’ve already become a Saint King now. You’re a peak-level expert even with the whole continent in perspective. You indeed don’t need sleep to recover at your level of strength,” Changyang Ke sighed gently. A faint sorrow filled his face.

“Brother, have you been well these days?” Jian Chen asked. Although Changyang Ke had once gone against him in everything he did, that happened when they were young. Jian Chen stopped bothering about it long ago, treating it as the arguments between kids.

“Sigh, you, big brother and sister have all become great, famed people, either a supreme expert or a prodigy peak-level sects heavily favor. Only I remain unknown, a nobody. I’m still stuck at being a Great Saint Master even until now, and I don’t even know when I can reach Earth Saint Master. Do you think I’ve been well these years?” Changyang Ke sighed. He was gloomy.

Jian Chen remained silent. It was true that Changyang Ke’s talent was not really extraordinary. Even with the support of a great clan, he remained at Great Saint Master and improved at a rather slow rate.

Changyang Ke suddenly sat up and wishfully looked at Jian Chen. He said, “Brother, you’re already a supreme figure of the continent now. I know you have extremely great abilities, so can you help me? I don’t want to lie in waste anymore. I don’t want to become an embarrassment to big brother, sister, and you,” pleaded Changyang Ke. It was very courageous of him to say such things.

Jian Chen slowly sat up, “Brother, I still have some heavenly resources on me. When I go to Flame City tomorrow morning, I’ll get the alchemist there to refine the resources into pills. It can modify your constitution. However, hard work is what truly determines your accomplishments even though these items can improve your constitution.”

“Brother, thank you. I will definitely work hard on cultivation in the future...” Emotions began to overwhelm Changyang Ke. He seemed to see a sliver of light in the darkness before him and hope for the future.

On the next day, Jian Chen left Yang Ling at the clan, before going to Flame City with Rui Jin.

Flame City was even busier than before. Mercenaries flowed unendingly in and out of the city gates, along with many merchants who had come to hire them.

The Flame Mercenaries had experienced a huge setback and almost collapsed, but Jian Chen was just too famous. Coupled with his position as captain, the mercenaries regrouped at an astonishing rate. Not only did they recover their peak strength in less than a month, but they also became even stronger than before. There were even several Saint Rulers who came to join them.

The Flame Mercenaries had already exceeded many hermit clans in strength now. They were no weaker than ancient clans with Jian Chen in consideration, as he had killed Saint Kings before. They became one of the few great mercenary groups and their name shook the continent.

The banners of the mercenaries had almost become a life-saving charm. Wherever the banners passed by, no one dared to behave in an offensive manner; this included bandits and the people from a few large clans. They all would give way on their one accord in a

courteous fashion.

As a result, all the escorting missions that people of the Flame Mercenaries undertook proceeded smoothly. Blood would only be drawn when they came across a few ignorant magical beasts. More and more merchants became willing to recruit the Flame Mercenaries as a result.

Jian Chen levitated a thousand meters in the air, as he stared down at the bustling city with a joyous smile. However, his eyes suddenly froze when he swept past the very center of the city, and his complexion became rather horrible.

A three-hundred-meter-tall stone statue stood there. It gazed into the distance like a ruler, lording over the world in an impressive manner.

It was a sculpture of Jian Chen that was carved in a life-like fashion. It seemed just like a real person.

With a darkened complexion, Jian Chen ran through the air and arrived above the stone statue with just a few flashes. He directly struck it with his palm and the entire stature shattered with a violent boom. It drifted down in the form of dust.

He had personally destroyed a statue of himself.

The statue was irreplaceable in the city. This was because it depicted a legend, an epic of the continent. At the same time, it

depicted a supreme Saint King, who was the spiritual leader of the Flame Mercenaries. It was Jian Chen.

The destruction of the statue immediately raised the attention of the people nearby. All of them began to seethe as soon as they witnessed the destruction of the statue of the captain they admired and worshipped the most. Killing intent and rage immediately began to surge within them, burning like roaring flames.

“The statue of the captain has been destroyed. Someone has destroyed the captain’s statue...”

“Which bastard did this? I’ll personally carve you up for destroying the statue of our captain...”

“How dare they destroy the statue of our captain? I’ll chop whoever did it into a million pieces...”

...

The eyes of each and every person became blood-shot, as they gnashed their teeth. Intense rage began to burn within their eyes.

The destruction of Jian Chen’s statue was like the murder of their parents. It was a debt that would be seared into the blood, and a crime that could not be forgiven.

“How dare you, you madman! You must be sick of living for destroying the captain’s statue! Pay with your life!” A roar

suddenly erupted from deep within the city. Several large presences surged into the sky as a few Saint Rulers that had joined the mercenaries shot toward the statue in rage.

# Chapter 1060: The First Captain

---

The roars from the Saint Rulers rang through the entire city, so everyone learned that someone had destroyed the captain's sculpture. It threw everyone into a rage, to the point where even more mercenaries took to the skies and quickly flew toward the center.

The main headquarters of the mercenaries was located toward the rear of the city. It was a palace constructed like an emperor's and the core power of the mercenaries gathered there. The people in charge stayed in this palace.

Currently, the green-dressed Bi Lian and several high-ranking members of the mercenaries were sternly discussing the developments of the Flame Mercenaries.

Suddenly, a shout passed through the various obstructions and resounded clearly in the room, disrupting Bi Lian's meeting with the others.

Bi Lian's complexion immediately darkened when she heard that someone had destroyed the sculpture of her own brother. Her eyes shone with a chilling light.

"Hmph, I'd like to see just who it is that dares to destroy my brother's sculpture. I definitely won't let them go so easily for acting so recklessly." Bi Lian was enraged. She slammed the desk and left despite the meeting. She strode outward with a darkened face, while the high-ranking members followed closely behind her.

Jian Chen floated several hundred meters in the air at the center of the city. Jian Chen crossed his arms and leisurely watched as the Saint Rulers quickly approached him. By his side, Rui Jin floated expressionlessly, gazing at the obliterated sculpture from time to time. Some doubt also filled his eyes.

The Saint Rulers all possessed surging presences as they drew their Saint Weapons. Then, they surrounded Jian Chen and Rui Jin. Surging energy pulsed wildly around them, which caused the surrounding space to slightly twist. They were ready for battle at any time.

“Who are you? Why have you destroyed captain Jian Chen’s sculpture? Why don’t you quickly...” A Saint Ruler yelled at Jian Chen as he glared at him, but before he had finished speaking, he became surprised. He stared blankly at Jian Chen’s appearance as disbelief flooded his face.

The Saint Ruler stared blankly at him for quite a long time. Then, he asked with a trembling voice that was filled with shock, “Y-y- you’re captain Jian Chen?”

“What! Captain Jian Chen...”

The four other Saint Rulers all became astounded when they heard this. They immediately observed Jian Chen carefully. They had never seen Jian Chen before, but they had seen his images and his sculptures, so they were familiar with his appearance. They immediately noticed that the young man really did seem the same



as their captain.

Another tremendous aura appeared, rapidly drawing closer to Jian Chen's location. It was the ancestor of the Bi family, Bi Hai, who flew over with Bi Lian at lightning speed.

Both of their faces were pale as anger burned within them. The destruction of Jian Chen's sculpture seemed to have touched their most sensitive area. They were currently thinking about how they would viciously punish the person who destroyed the sculpture.

But when the two of them saw the Saint Rulers that encircled Jian Chen and Rui Jin, they became stunned as stupefaction filled their faces. A bucket of cold water seemed to extinguish their roaring flames of anger, disappearing completely.

"Brother, how is it you!?" Bi Lian called out. She was astonished.

Bi Hai also stared at Jian Chen in stupefaction. Then, he looked at the pile of dust that was once a sculpture. He was confused. He had already learned that the person who destroyed the sculpture was his own great grandson by now.

"We greet captain Jian Chen!"

The Saint Rulers that had arrived first finally confirmed Jian Chen's identity. Without any hesitation, they bowed and respectfully greeted Jian Chen. They were all extremely excited. Jian Chen was a legendary figure of the continent, someone that

could only be heard about in stories. Even as Saint Rulers, they struggled to stay composed.

As for their anger, it had completely disappeared long ago.

Jian Chen saw Bi Lian's thin face, and his anger about the sculpture vanished in that moment. Love began to fill his heart, and he made his way through the air to Bi Lian in an instant. He then looked at her lovingly and pitifully, as he gently said, "Lian'er, it really must have been tiring managing the matters of the mercenaries."

Bi Lian could not help but smile sweetly from Jian Chen's loving concern for her wellbeing. However, she then gazed past the missing sculpture in the center of the city and became confused. She asked, "Brother, did you destroy the sculpture?"

"Yes, it was me who destroyed it," Jian Chen said nonchalantly as he stared at the clouds of dust in the air.

"Brother, the statue was sculpted with a great deal of effort from over a hundred artisans I found. Why did you destroy it? Was it badly sculpted?" Bi Lian felt like she had suffered a wrong as she spoke delicately.

"Lian'er, don't get mad. Brother has no intentions of blaming you. It's just that you don't understand the origins of the mercenaries. The statue standing in the center of the city should not be depicting me, but the first captain of the Flame Mercenaries," Jian Chen said softly. He gazed into the horizon as

reminiscence filled his eyes.

“The first captain? Aren’t you the first captain, brother?” Bi Lian became surprised as disbelief filled her face.

Jian Chen shook his head, “Lian’er, I am not the first captain of the Flame Mercenaries. The first captain was called Kendall. I’m only the second.”

The matters from the past flashed through Jian Chen’s head like a movie. Jian Chen thought back to the days where he wandered the Magical Beast Mountain Range with the members of the Flame Mercenaries.

He could still remember clearly that many years ago, the Flame Mercenaries faced the pursuit of a Class 5 Golden Fur Tiger King. In the end, everyone died to it except him, including the first captain, Kendall.

Kendall’s greatest wish was for the Flame Mercenaries to become the greatest and most powerful mercenary group on the Tian Yuan Continent. As a result, Jian Chen took up the great aspiration of expanding the Flame Mercenaries in order to complete Kendall’s wish.

Back then, when he became the second captain of the Flame Mercenaries, he was alone. Afterward, Ming Dong joined. Now, after so many years, the mercenary group had expanded from its initial, nameless state to something that could shake up the continent.

“Brother, who is the first captain of the Flame Mercenaries? Why haven’t I heard a single thing about him after staying so long in the Flame Mercenaries?” Bi Lian asked.

Jian Chen sighed gently, “He died many years ago.” With that, Jian Chen suddenly grabbed at the ground with his two hands. The ground at the center of the city quickly began to move, and the soil surged rapidly into the air. It climbed higher and higher. In just a few second, Jian Chen erected a huge statue from the earth.

# Chapter 1061: Exploring the Tungsten Alloy Deposit Once More

---

All the mercenaries and merchants stared at the huge statue in shock as it had ‘grown’ from the ground. Many of them became confused.

The statue had completely replaced Jian Chen’s sculpture, but it depicted another person. It was an honest-looking middle-aged man who seemed to be in his forties. He was the first captain of the Flame Mercenaries, as well as the founder, Kendall.

Jian Chen stared at the familiar face with mixed emotions as reminiscence filled his eyes. He would never forget how Kendall looked. He was like a scorching brand that had been deeply imprinted into the depths of Jian Chen’s head. He could not forget him even if he wanted, and even though so many years had passed, he could recall it before his eyes exactly like when it happened.

The statue that had ‘grown’ from the ground was created by Jian Chen using his own abilities by taking control of the earth and then modifying it match the Kendall from his memories. This was not an extravagant expenditure; as long as one was a Saint Ruler that could control earth-attributed Saint Force, it could easily be achieved.

However, Kendall’s statue was still very fragile after its creation, and it lacked a certain charm. Jian Chen slowly closed his eyes, and with a single thought, the earth-attributed energy of the world immediately began to bubble, surging in from everywhere with extremely great speed. In the end, it turned into a hazy earthen-

yellow light that flowed unceasingly into the statue.

The color of the statue immediately became to change with the input of the energy. It began to whiten at a visible rate, the soft soil turning to tough stone, becoming harder and harder.

Jian Chen could control all six attributes of energy, including light and dark. He had gathered all the earth-attributed energy in a radius of a hundred kilometers, using all he had to construct Kendall's sculpture.

You Yue, Bi Hai, and the five Saint Rulers stared unblinkingly at the statue as it became harder and harder, observing the unfamiliar face. They all knew inside that this was probably the first captain Jian Chen spoke of.

Although the statue at the center of the city which represented the glory of Flame City had completely changed, they dared not voice any objections even as high-ranking members. This was all what Jian Chen decided, and Jian Chen's status in the mercenaries was irreplaceably high. Even Bi Lian, in charge of managing the mercenaries, could not object.

Jian Chen had basically become a god to every member of the mercenaries. He was the pillar of mental support for the entire group. A single casual sentence from him was like an edict from god himself.

More and more people gathered around Kendall's statue, causing it to become crowded very soon. The large square became

extremely packed. Most of the people were members of the Flame Mercenaries, and had come with burning rage. They wanted to brutally punished the person who destroyed Jian Chen's statue.

However, they could not help but become doubtful when they saw Bi Lian and the Saint Rulers just floating in the air, taking no action whatsoever. They sensed that this matter did not seem as severe as they had imagined, but due to the distance and where they stood, many people could not see Jian Chen, so they failed to recognize him.

After ten whole minutes, the earth-attributed energy finally dispersed, and Kendall's sculpture was completed.

Kendall's sculpture was currently as tough as steel. Jian Chen had even left a large quantity of earth-attributed energy within the sculpture, causing its toughness to greatly increase. Even Heaven Saint Masters would struggle to break it.

Kendall's statue did not radiate with any earth-shaking aura. It seemed extremely ordinary. His honest and kind-looking face was created in a life-like fashion by Jian Chen, as if Kendall was still alive.

Jian Chen stood with his arms crossed as he gazed at the statue with deep emotions. He said, "Do you all see? He was the first captain of the Flame Mercenaries. His name is Kendall, and the statue that stands in the center of the city belongs to him, not me. If there was not captain Kendall, the current Flame Mercenaries would not exist."

Bi Lian and the others all stared at the statue with their full attention. Their expressions became mixed, and they remained speechless for quite some time as the information was just too astounding.

At the same time, the news that Jian Chen's statue had been changed spread through the entire city like wildfire. It caused a huge commotion, causing people to discuss it everywhere and at all times.

Jian Chen stayed there for a while, before returning to the palace in Flame City. Soon after that, the news regarding Kendall as the first captain of the Flame Mercenaries was spread out as well, traveling through the entire city with lightning speed. Everyone there learned about the truth regarding this matter, as well as the identity of the person that the statue depicted.

Although many people believed it still should have been Jian Chen as a statue, they did not show any objections, let alone any dissatisfaction, since Jian Chen had personally saw it through.

Jian Chen gained an even clearer understanding regarding Flame City from Bi Lian. Everything happened smoothly; it could be said that ever since Jian Chen had returned from the sea realm and had taken back the city from the Extinguishing Alliance, the status of the Flame Mercenaries skyrocketed on the Tian Yuan Continent, allowing the mercenaries to successfully develop in an extraordinary fashion.



Also, Jian Chen learned from Bi Lian that the first few members of the mercenary group had completed their training in Walaurent City. They had all returned to Flame City and had successfully become a part of the Flame Mercenaries with the token of identification Jian Chen had given them all those years ago.

Jian Chen treated them with particular importance as they were loyal subordinates. He met with them in person. Through the years outside when they had trained on the edge of life and death, they had undergone a baptism of blood, forged an iron willpower, gained powerful battle prowess, and nurtured a spirit that did not fear death.

However, during their adventures on the Tian Yuan Continent, there were members who were lost, as well as some loyal, bold mercenaries that joined. Under the fluctuating number, there were sixty-five of them now. Each and every one of them had reached Earth Saint Master, and they all possessed battle skills. Their strength was incomparable to ordinary people.

On the other hand, the Golden Fur Tiger King cub they had obtained in Walaurent City had fallen in an intense battle before it had fully matured.

Although no one reached Heaven Saint Master out of all of them, a few slightly-talented members had reach the Fifth Cycle of Earth Saint Master. They were only an inch away from Heaven Saint Master and had grasped Heaven Tier Battle Skills.

Jian Chen had decided many years ago that he would use everything he had to nurture this group of people. As a result, he

took them all into the artifact space, providing them with a quiet environment and all the resources required for cultivation, so that they would cultivate diligently to increase their strength. He even used invaluable heavenly resources of high maturity to change their constitutions.

“Jian Chen, even with the increase from the heavenly resources in their talent, they can only reach Saint Ruler at most due to innate restrictions. Some of them will even struggle to reach Saint Ruler. Is it really worth it to expend so much effort and resources in raising them?” Rui Jin found Jian Chen’s actions rather wasteful.

“Currently, the Flame Mercenaries are completely under my control. There were a few Saint Rulers who joined us, but they’re completely untrustworthy. If the Flame Mercenaries wants to become truly powerful and maintain a steady, unmovable position on the Tian Yuan Continent, it needs to possess its own powerful force. They will be that force in the future,” said Jian Chen. His decision in raising all of them was not wavered at all.

“There is no need to worry about their talent. There may be limits in what thousand-year heavenly resources can change, but ten-thousand-year heavenly resources will definitely be able to change them completely. I may not be able to pull out that many heavenly resources at such a maturity right now, but looking for them would not be difficult with my current strength. There’s also a wondrous item in the sea realm called the divine water of the world. Its effects far exceeds ten-thousand-year heavenly resources. Once I find enough of it after I proceed to the sea realm in the future, they will be able to undergo metamorphosis, making it such that their future accomplishments will reach Saint Ruler at

the very least,” Jian Chen enthusiastically explained as he had planned everything out.

Rui Jin fell silent. He did not say anything more, as Jian Chen obviously had his reasons for what he did.

Allowing the elite squad of the Flame Mercenaries to settle down, Jian Chen and Rui Jin arrived in a mountain range several dozen kilometers from the city. It was the mine where they had discovered the tungsten alloy deposit.

However, the mountain range was no longer as majestic as before after so many years of mining. It was now filled with holes, and several mountains had been mined away. Several huge pits had been dug where tungsten alloy ore was more concentrated.

There was indeed an extremely great quantity of tungsten alloy ore in the deposit. Even after building the city walls for quite a large city, there was still a lot left. However, the ore was extremely pure, so the mining process was extremely difficult. Even Heaven Saint Masters would probably struggle to leave a mark if they struck with all they had, so the Flame Mercenaries stopped the mining process. They just did not possess the power to continue.

Jian Chen arrived in the center of the mine with Rui Jin, staring down like a lord looking over his citizens. Below him was a large mass of jet-black tungsten alloy ore, littered with the marks from mining and gathering.

# Chapter 1062: The Growing Metallic Origin Energy

---

Jian Chen levitated above the mountain range as he looked down in interest. He was expanding his presence fully. It quickly passed through various obstructions and entered the ground.

When he had first discovered the deposit, the grand elder of Mercenary City, Tian Jian, had found a ball of origin essence hidden deep within the deposit. It possessed extremely great power and could assist people in breaking through to Saint King from the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler. It was a rare treasure in the world.

Jian Chen had also learned from the sword spirits that the origin energy hidden within the deposit was the origin energy of a metallic spirit from the five elements.

Jian Chen's presence could pass through the obstructions of the tough tungsten alloy ore to reach several hundred meters into the ground. He could clearly feel an extremely great power pulsing slowly. It was pure with no impurities whatsoever.

“Senior Rui Jin, you must have also discovered that something is hidden in the mountain range of the tungsten alloy deposit,” Jian Chen said as he stared down unblinkingly.

A gleam of light flashed through Rui Jin's eyes, and he nonchalantly replied, “I indeed have. It's an extremely pure and great power. Though it's surrounded by a thick layer of tungsten

alloy. There aren't many people who can break through this layer, so it's very hard to remove."

"Do you have the power to remove it with your current strength then?" Jian Chen said. Although the origin energy of the metallic spirit was of no use to himself, he wanted to use it on other people.

"If you need it, I'll make an attempt at it with my Sacred Dragon's Sword," Rui Jin slowly answered. Afterward, a vast pressure began to radiate from him and the Sacred Dragon's Sword was slowly covered by a thick layer of white light. The terrifying energy ripples caused the surrounding space to distort, showing signs of shattering apart.

"Hmm? The origin energy of the metallic spirit is much greater than before. It's actually growing. Master, get Rui Jin to stop immediately. What he's doing will destroy it." Zi Ying's voice suddenly rang through Jian Chen's head.

The Sacred Dragon's Sword was already lifted high up; Rui Jin was just about to cleave down.

"Senior Rui Jin, let's wait actually." Jian Chen also reacted quickly. He immediately stopped Rui Jin, before concentrating on his sea of consciousness to converse with the sword spirits.

"Master, this ball of metallic origin energy is rapidly growing. If it has enough time, it will become even stronger and even gain self-awareness. It will grow into a spirit and become something like the barrier spirit of Mercenary City. Taking it out now would be

destroying it no doubt,” Zi Ying explained.

Surprise flashed through Jian Chen’s eyes. Pausing for a while in thought, he then said, “How long would it roughly need to mature completely?”

“We are unable to estimate that. It’ll all depend on its rate of growth. However, the origin energy will become more powerful with time. Once it gains self-awareness, it will morph into a spirit. It will be richly endowed with talent and can cultivate at a heaven-defying rate. It will have great accomplishments in the future,” said Zi Ying.

“The barrier spirit of Mercenary City is also a spirit born from energy. However, it came from the essence of the earth, so it’s just slightly below the metallic origin energy of the five elements. It’s a pity that the barrier spirit’s innately incomplete, or her accomplishments would be far greater than right now,” sighed Zi Ying.

“It’s just that the chances for it to morph into a spirit are just too low. I cannot guarantee whether the origin energy will gain self-awareness or not. It’ll all depend on its fortune,” said Zi Ying.

Jian Chen hesitated slightly with what the sword spirits had said, but he ended up giving up on the idea of taking the origin energy of the metallic spirit. Since it had a lot of room for growth, why not just give it some time? It would obviously be best if it could morph into a spirit, but even if it could not become self-aware, it would become even more powerful after a period of time. At that time, the benefits would be even greater if it was used to increase

strength.

“Senior Rui Jin, let’s leave the origin energy a little longer. It won’t be too late to remove it when we need it,” Jian Chen said to Rui Jin.

“You make the decision. When you want to remove it, I can assist you in breaking through the tungsten alloy shell,” said Rui Jin. Right now, his opinion of Jian Chen was rapidly rising. They had become people at similar levels of strength long ago. Even if he had no need to keep Jian Chen alive, just his talent and cultivation speed was enough to hold him in high esteem.

Jian Chen and Rui Jin’s eyes froze suddenly, and they turned to look in the same direction simultaneously. On the horizon, a faint gleam of five-colored light appeared, causing the sky to become all colorful. It was pretty.

“Another person’s reached Saint Ruler. By the direction, it should be quite close to Gesun Kingdom,” Jian Chen mumbled. He was extremely indifferent to the matter.

Rui Jin casually glanced at the direction before losing interest as well. Reaching Saint Ruler was a big deal to normal people, but it was nothing to his eyes.

Jian Chen did not pay too much attention to the rainbow clouds in the distance either. If it was several years ago, he would treat Saint Rulers as extremely strong experts, but they had all become extremely weak now, like ants. He really could not find any

interest in people at those levels anymore.

Jian Chen and Rui Jin left the mountain range together, returning to the city. He handed a Flaming Jadeite had been filled with Rui Jin's power to Bi Lian as a treasure to guard the city.

Afterward, Jian Chen summoned the five Saint Rulers that had joined the mercenaries and spoke with them. He made them swear some oaths, told them about the consequences of betrayal and so on. He then went to see Dugu Feng. He originally wanted Dugu Feng to put down what he was doing for the time being, so that he could devote all his energy into cultivation. However, Jian Chen could not do anything since Dugu Feng liked his current job very much.

Jian Chen had basically subdued Dugu Feng like a servant back then, but he always treated Dugu Feng as a good friend in the past years. He never forced Dugu Feng to do anything, which was why Jian Chen did not meddle with Dugu Feng's choice.

“Jian Chen, the disparity between our strengths is now like the distance from the ground to the sky. I can't catch up to you no matter how hard I cultivate, so there's no longer a point for me to follow you. All I can do is stay in Flame City and help you manage some affairs.”

“Flame City is very big, but it has developed way too fast, so there's many problems with the management since it has failed to develop at the same rate. The two worst areas are the rules and the discipline. If those aren't managed well, problems will happen to the mercenaries sooner or later.” This was Dugu Feng's



explanation to Jian Chen as well as his reason for taking up the position of a disciplinary elder.

Jian Chen stayed for another two days in the city before leaving with Bi Hai after handing over some matters. He returned to the Changyang clan in Lore City through a Space Gate from Rui Jin.

As soon as he returned, Changyang Zu Yunxiao came looking for him. He called Jian Chen into a conference hall while Rui Jin and Bi Hai both left to rest. They did not follow him to the hall.

Jian Chen discovered a few unfamiliar people as soon as he entered the grand hall. They were an old man and three women. However, the thing that surprised Jian Chen was that You Yue was actually present as well and not cultivating in outer space. Her complexion was not very great.

Jian Chen's face sank slightly when he noticed You Yue's expression. He seemed to realize something before observing the four outsiders.

The old man possessed a ruddy and sagely aura, like some old immortal. He sat there leisurely and did not speak.

Jian Chen had seen the old man before. He was one of the great elders of the Changyang protector clan, a Saint King at the Sixth Heavenly Layer.

One of the three women was a middle-aged beauty. She was a

Saint Ruler while the other two ladies seemed to be in their twenties. They stood out quite a lot with their appearances as well. Though they were Heaven Saint Masters.

“Jian Chen, this is one of the seven great elders of the Changyang clan, Changyang Qing Jueri. He would be a great-grandfather of yours in terms of seniority,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao introduced for Jian Chen.

Changyang Qing Jueri stared at Jian Chen ever since he had come in. With Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s introduction, he immediately stood up and smiled amicably. He said, “You must be Xiangtian. You really are a genius. The protector clan’s gained quite the glory from you. Come sit, come sit.” Changyang Qing Jueri treated Jian Chen extremely politely. Although Jian Chen was a junior by age, he did not act snobbishly.

Jian Chen bowed politely before taking the empty seat next to You Yue. He asked politely as he looked at You Yue’s troubled expression, “Yue’er, what’s happening here?”

You Yue was clearly relieved now that Jian Chen had made it in time. She seemed to have found the person she would rely on, and much of her worries vanished. She said to Jian Chen, “They want my Bright Moon Divine Hall.”

“What!” Jian Chen’s expression abruptly changed with that, taking a bad turn in complexion.

# Chapter 1063: The Greed of the Changyang Clan

---

Jian Chen suddenly narrowed his eyes as an intense anger uncontrollably rose within him. His gaze toward Changyang Qing Jueri also underwent an overwhelming change, becoming extremely hostile.

The Bright Moon Divine Hall now belonged to You Yue. It was crucial for cultivation. She could only absorb Moonlight Force quickly through the divine hall. She would progress much slower in the future without it.

The divine hall also functioned as a method where You Yue could protect herself, and Jian Chen would not need to worry for her safety.

As a result, Jian Chen became extremely angered now that the people of the Changyang clan actually wanted to take the divine hall from You Yue.

“Is that true? You want to take the Bright Moon Divine Hall?” Jian Chen suddenly stood up and glared at Changyang Qing Jueri. He acted pressingly, showing no respect for him. He was completely indifferent about the fact that Changyang Qing Jueri was technically a great-grandfather of his.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao sat in the seat beside Jian Chen. He showed no intentions of stopping or persuading the angered Jian Chen. He drank tea leisurely and said nothing, as if he had seen

nothing.

Changyang Qing Jueri had expected this from Jian Chen long ago, so he maintained an amicable smile. He said unhurriedly, “Xiangtian, it’s not like what you think. The clan is just considering You Yue’s relatively low strength. The Bright Moon Divine Hall is an invaluable treasure, enough to cause any person of the continent to become green with greed. If it remains with You Yue, it might just end up attracting endless trouble or even be taken by some powerful people. This is why the clan has decided to have You Yue leave the divine hall in the clan, so that it can’t be lost.”

“So in other words, you want to take the divine hall for Yue’er’s own good?” Jian Chen sneered.

Changyang Qing Jueri obviously could sense the sarcasm in Jian Chen’s tone. His expression remained the same, but he was now filled with bitterness. He knew that taking the divine hall from You Yue was almost impossible now.

Changyang Qing Jueri said after a period of silence, “Xiangtian, I know what you’re worrying about. You can completely relax about that. You’re now a member of the clan, so the clan would never do something against you. Having You Yue leave the divine hall indeed has only benefits and is not detrimental in any way. She will remain as the owner of the divine hall.”

“I appreciate your kindness for Yue’er. The divine hall is impregnable and is nowhere as fragile as ordinary ones. With the divine hall by her side, even Saint Emperors can’t do anything to

her, so leaving the divine hall with the protector clan is completely unnecessary,” said Jian Chen.

Changyang Qing Jueri’s heart immediately skipped a beat when he heard that even Saint Emperors were helpless against the Bright Moon Divine Hall. He thought, “The divine hall’s actually so powerful. It’s on par with the divine hall left behind by Mo Tianyun for Mercenary City. If the clan has the protection of a divine hall like that, do we still need to fear the other protector clans and Mercenary City?” Changyang Qing Jueri’s mood immediately began to surge. The ten protector clans were in possession of quite a few divine halls, but none of them could resist attacks from Saint Emperors. If they were in possession of one that could, the protector Changyang clan could ignore the Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent and the path lord of carnal desires, becoming the only other clan that can rival Mercenary City.

Even now, Changyang Qing Jueri could still clearly remember the conflict between the ten protector clans and Mercenary City several tens of thousands of years ago. The protector clans sent over twenty Saint Emperors. The group was so great that it outnumbered the Saint Emperors of Mercenary City several times over, yet Mercenary City only sent a single person. Through the powerful divine hall, he stopped all of the Saint Emperors from the protector clans, shaking the entire continent.

The middle-aged beauty, who was a Saint Ruler, began to talk seeing how Changyang Qing Jueri said nothing, “Changyang Xiangtian, legend has it that fairy Hao Yue’s cultivation method is the only method that exceeds Saint Tier on the Tian Yuan Continent, and it is only suitable for females. Since your fiancée

has become a disciple of fairy Hao Yue, she must have obtained the cultivation method. Why not get her to offer it up? It'll be a great contribution to the clan, and it'll also allow our clan's strength to increase. If all the women of the clan use that cultivation method, we can completely surpass the nine other clans in no time."

Jian Chen's expression became even uglier. Not only did the protector clan want You Yue's divine hall, they even desired fairy Hao Yue's cultivation method. This was far beyond what he could bear.

Jian Chen had already clenched his fists tightly. The anger within him had peaked. If it were not for the fact that they were people of the Changyang clan and not some outsiders, he would have chased them out long ago.

"Changyang Xiangtian, you're a member of the protector Changyang clan. You Yue's your fiancée, so we're really all just one big family. According to the rules of the clan, every member must treat the clan with utmost importance and do everything for the clan. You Yue's cultivation method is extremely important to the clan, so she should offer it up," continued the woman.

"Enough, shut up." Jian Chen could not longer bear with it anymore and slammed the armrest of his chair. The powerful force turned the chair to dust. He glared at the woman and Changyang Qing Jueri and coldly said, "Don't go on about clan rules and benefits for the clan before me. Unless Yue'er is willing herself, no one can take away the Bright Moon Divine Hall or fairy Hao Yue's cultivation method. Otherwise, I will treat it as you going against me."

“Changyang Xiangtian, it’s outrageous how you speak to your seniors. Do you really think that you can ignore the rules and the hierarchy of the clan just because you have great strength? I may be weaker than you, but you still should be referring to me as your great-grandmother in terms of family,” the woman sternly said, wanting to suppress Jian Chen with her seniority.

Jian Chen’s lips curled into a sneer of disdain, “You still don’t have the right to be my great-grandmother. Everyone, my Changyang clan does not welcome you. Please leave.” Jian Chen made a gesture, directly ordering the guests to leave.

“How dare you, Changyang Xiangtian! Don’t you know who great-grandfather Jueri is? He’s a great elder of our protector clan. Y-y- y-you dare to treat him like that!? You have no respect for your elders!” A Heaven Saint Master beside the middle-aged woman stood up furiously as she yelled at Jian Chen while pointing at him.

Changyang Qing Jueri was no longer able to remain as composed as before. He was a great elder of a grand protector clan. His status was so great, yet he was actually ordered to leave by someone younger than him. Would he still be able to retain any dignity if he abided? If it were not for the fact that this junior possessed a relatively special status, he would have taught him a lesson long ago. In no way would he have endured it.

“Let’s go!” Changyang Qing Jueri glanced at Changyang Zu Yunxiao, who silently sat to one side, before waving his sleeve. He left furiously and hurriedly with the middle-aged woman and the

two ladies.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao slowly stood up after Changyang Qing Jueri left, sighing deeply at the sky. He was filled with helplessness.

“Jian Chen, the two requests made by Changyang Qing Jueri and the others are indeed rules of the clan, so I can’t help you talk. You don’t understand the protector clans. Our rules are extremely rigid and have existed since the ancient times. Even great elders dare not break them so easily; I hope you can understand,” sighed Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

“I don’t care how rigid the protector clan’s rules are. I will never let them take anything from Yue’er. Though I do hope you don’t end up helping them with that,” Jian Chen replied.

“You don’t have to worry about that. You’re a member of the Zu faction, so the faction will never make things difficult for you, including your great-grandfather Changyang Zu Xiao,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao sternly explained.

“Jian Chen, great-grandfather Yunxiao, you’re actually worrying too much. Even if I offer up the divine hall and the cultivation method, they can’t do anything with them. The divine hall is still controlled by master’s hands. I only have partial control over it. The cultivation method is even more so the case. Even if they obtain it, they can’t use it for cultivation since they need a specific constitution, which can only be obtained through the personal modifications of master,” said You Yue.



“They might not believe that. Fairy Hao Yue may still be alive, but she’s reduced to a soul. Her capability of deterrence is no longer as great as before.” Changyang Zu Yunxiao said after some thought. He hesitated slightly before continuing once more, “Jian Chen, the seal in Kong’er mind still has not been released. The protector clan wants you to return, and then the seven great elders can work together to release the seal. I hope you can make some time to visit the protector clan regardless of how you feel about them, so you can release Kong’er from his thousand years of pain.”

Jian Chen agreed after a pause, “I’ll visit the protector clan in three days. It’ll all be for great-grandfather though.”

## Chapter 1064: Visiting the Huanggu Clan

---

Jian Chen left the conference hall with You Yue. The two of them first visited Jian Chen's parents. During their conversation, Bi Yuntian mentioned the marriage between Jian Chen and You Yue once more, but it was evaded by both of them together.

Jian Chen was now in possession of enough strength to protect himself and the people around him, but there were still many matters he needed to deal with. He was in no mood to consider marriage.

On the other hand, You Yue now had the Bright Moon Divine Hall as well as fairy Hao Yue's cultivation method. Right now, her only objective was to increase her strength as fast and as much as possible, devoting all her energy into cultivation. She would consider marriage once she possessed enough strength to help out Jian Chen.

Bidding farewell to Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba, You Yue did not stick by Jian Chen's side for very long. She entered the divine hall once more, going to outer space to cultivate.

"Once I drop off uncle Chang, great-grandfather Bi Hai, Yang Ling, and senior Huang Tianba at Mercenary City, I'll go to the protector clan immediately and get them to release great-grandfather Changyang Zu Yunkong's seal," Jian Chen thought after leaving his parent's room. The main reason why he visited Flame City last time was to take Bi Hai with him. He planned on leaving Bi Hai in Mercenary City so Xiao Ling could invoke the mysteries of the world for him to comprehend.

“Now it’s just senior Huang Tianba. The Huang family just happens to be rather close to here, so I’ll go by myself.” Jian Chen shot off like a cannonball, climbing high up into the sky with extremely great speed. He shot off in the direction of the Huang family, disappearing in the blink of an eye.

He could not help but think of a flawless beauty in his head. He thought, “It’s been so many years. I wonder how Luan’er’s been. With her talent, she should have made great improvement in these years.” Jian Chen immediately sped up some more after that thought.

The Huang family was over thirty thousand kilometers away from the Gesun Kingdom. With Jian Chen’s speed, he only needed two short hours before arriving at the beautiful mountain, abundant with energy of the world, where the Huang family resided.

Jian Chen descended outside the entrance of the manor. He did not conceal his presence, so he was discovered by experts of the Huang family as soon as he arrived. Several Heaven Saint Masters immediately shot out from within. They all became surprised when they recognized Jian Chen, and their stern faces immediately became replaced with smiles. They politely welcomed Jian Chen into the clan.

With Jian Chen’s current fame on the continent, almost all hermit clans had heard about him. His current level of status could not be compared to his past. The Huang family immediately became overwhelmed by Jian Chen sudden visit. Not only did the

patriarch personally come out to receive him, even people of previous generations came out of seclusion,

Jian Chen was younger than any of them, but he was still a Saint King after all. He was indisputably someone who held great power on the continent where strength determined all.

Jian Chen struggled a little to adapt to how everyone in the Huang family had come out to receive him. After conversing with the patriarch slightly, he cut to the chase, “Patriarch, I’ve come this time to find senior Huang Tianba. May I ask where he is currently?”

“The ancestor has always been cultivating in seclusion, and he hasn’t appeared in several years already. I will bring you to him if you are looking for the ancestor,” said the patriarch, before directly flying to the rear of the mountain with Jian Chen and a few other experts of the clan.

Very quickly, Jian Chen arrived at the sword-shaped ridge where Huang Tianba stayed in seclusion. It was surrounded by a barrier, and inside stood a single, old, wooden hut.

“Descendent greets the old ancestor. Brother Jian Chen has come to our clan,” the patriarch spoke courteously to the hut as he stood outside the barrier.

Jian Chen stared nonchalantly at the hut and some wonder appeared in his eyes. He said, “Patriarch, there’s no need to keep calling. Senior Huang Tianba’s not in there.”

“What? The ancestor’s not there?” The patriarch became stunned.

Jian Chen nodded slightly before expanding his presence. He enveloped a radius of a thousand kilometers in an attempt to find signs of Huang Tianba, but there was nothing.

“If I can’t find him in the radius of a thousand meters, expanding my presence any further than that would result in the same outcome. Looks like the senior’s not in the clan right now,” thought Jian Chen.

The patriarch thought a little and said, “Brother, Huang Luan’s a disciple of the ancestor from the Huanggu clan. She’s always stayed in the Huanggu clan cultivating while the ancestor treats her like a treasure. Since the ancestor’s not with us, he’s probably gone to the Huanggu clan to see her.”

“Huang Luan’s at the Huanggu clan,” repeated Jian Chen inside. He then said, “I’ll visit the Huanggu clan then.”

Jian Chen declined the patriarch’s attempts to get him to stay, leaving immediately after learning where the Huanggu clan was.

The Huanggu clan was located in the south, hidden in a forest that was always covered with mist and filled with magical beasts. Very few people knew about its existence.

A thousand-meter-tall tower stood in the center of the clan. That tower was the most sacred building in the clan since it was where the ancestor cultivated.

A disheveled old man hung in the air of the top room in the tower. The room was completely sealed and slightly gloomy while the man was surrounded with huge, thick chains; he looked like a beggar. The old man possessed very great strength; every time he struggled, the chains would rattle, but he could not break free from them no matter how hard he tried.

“You mongrel! You will pay for this! If I break free, I will never let you go!” The old man’s voice was hoarse with hatred.

Before him stood the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. The ancestor was at ease and possessed a sneer, “Huang Tianba, do you still think you have a chance at revenge? Why don’t you think about your current predicament? Do you think you still have the ability to break free? You better give up on that thought.”

“Mongrel, my Huang family has never done anything to your Huanggu clan. Why do you do this to me?” Huang Tianba gnashed his teeth. He was haggard, no longer possessing his former glory.

# Chapter 1065: Disaster at the Doorstep

---

The ancestor of the Huanggu clan sneered, “Huang Tianba, your precious great-granddaughter has already become a Saint Ruler now, and my great plan is about to come to an end. You are already someone at your end, so it doesn’t matter even if I tell you.”

“Huang Tianba, have you ever heard about the Water Spirit’s Body?” The ancestor said.

“The Water Spirit’s Body? What Water Spirit’s Body? What has that got to do with my beloved great-granddaughter?” Huang Tianba questioned. He had no idea about the specific constitution.

“I can understand why you don’t know.” The Huanggu clan ancestor sneered, “The Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower I practice is a water-attributed Saint Tier Cultivation Method. The Water Spirit’s Body is recorded in there.”

“The Water Spirit’s Body is an extremely rare and special type of constitution on the Tian Yuan Continent. It very rarely appears on the continent. It’s difficult to come across someone with it even over the span of a hundred thousand years. Anyone with that constitution is endowed with great talent for water-attributed cultivation methods. Not only do they improve at an astonishing speed, their future accomplishments are immeasurable. They have the potential to reach Saint Emperor.” A powerful gleam of yearning began to glow in the ancestor’s eyes when he mentioned Saint Emperor.

“Are you saying that my great-granddaughter is in possession of this Water Spirit’s Body that you mentioned? But what intentions do you have by taking her in as your disciple and passing the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower to her?” Huang Tianba’s eyes shone with interest as he stared tightly at the Huanggu clan ancestor.

“Correct. That girl indeed is in possession of this rare constitution, but it has not been completely activated yet. If it were not for the wonders of the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower, probably no one would have been able to discover her constitution beforehand,” chuckled the Huanggu clan ancestor.

“You mongrel, so you want to control Luan’er and turn her into a puppet of your clan!” Huang Tianba became enraged. He struggled furiously against the chains as he hung in mid-air, producing clanking sounds.

“Control? Hahaha, I’ve spent so much effort, and even passed the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower to that girl. It’s not going to be as simple as controlling her. I’m just helping her unlock the potential of her constitution, which I’ll then absorb all her talent and pure water-attributed Saint Force through a secret technique. My strength will skyrocket and I will reach Saint King. At the same time, I will have hopes of reaching Saint Emperor in the future.” The ancestor’s eyes burned with greed.

“You bastard, you won’t succeed! My great-granddaughter is Jian Chen’s woman! Not only is Jian Chen a prodigy with unlimited potential, he has close ties with the grand elder of Mercenary City. If you even touch my great-granddaughter, Jian Chen will never



let you go,” Huang Tianba roared hoarsely as surging hatred filled his eyes.

Fear immediately appeared in the depths of the ancestor’s eyes upon hearing Jian Chen. Although he had never left the clan in the recent years, he had an extremely clear understanding about the matters outside, especially with matters regarding Jian Chen. He knew even more than Huang Tianba; Jian Chen had resisted the ten protector clans all by himself and had even caused them to back off. That was Jian Chen’s power.

But the ancestor seemed to think of something very soon. The fear in his eyes immediately vanished and he sneered, “Huang Tianba, you’re still thinking of Jian Chen even now. I must admit that he is a junior with shocking talent, but why would he come to my Huanggu clan? Even if he comes, he won’t do anything to me.”

His lips curled into a sinister smile, “After all, your beloved great-granddaughter has already reached Saint Ruler successfully. All her potential has been completely unlocked. I’ll go find her right now, and very soon, there will be one more Saint King on the continent. No matter how great Jian Chen’s abilities are, it’s impossible for him to learn about what is happening here.”

“You mongrel, I will never let you go even if I come back as a ghost,” Huang Tianba roared furiously as his body trembled violently. However, his voice lacked power.

With the current circumstances, he was indeed at the mercy of the ancestor. His strength was sealed. He did not even have the power to resist.

“Hahahaha, Huang Tianba, you better stay here and personally witness the birth of another Saint King,” the ancestor wildly laughed, as if his future of reaching Saint King was already set in stone.

The complacent smile on his face slowly vanished. However, just as he wanted to leave the room, a mighty voice suddenly rang from outside.

“The captain of the Flame Mercenaries, senior Jian Chen, has come to visit the Huanggu clan.”

Jian Chen’s voice was rather plain, but it spread out in all directions in the form of a visible sound waves. Not only did it cause all of the buildings in the clan to shake slightly, it passed through various obstacles, allowing everyone to hear it extremely clearly. Even those who were in completely sealed rooms, in seclusion, were not an exception.

The ancestor of the Huanggu clan reacted abruptly as he was about to close the door to the room. In that moment, any joy of his completely vanished, and his complexion took a horrible turn. Deep fear and dread began to flood his eyes.

“Jian Chen, it’s actually Jian Chen. Jian Chen’s come to my Huanggu clan.” The ancestor struggled to maintain his calm and composure as before. His heart began to heavily thump. In that moment, without even realizing it, he had already begun to tremble slightly.

“Crap, it’ll be troublesome now. How has that bloody Jian Chen found his way here? Why can’t he come a little later?” His heart grew cold. What he dreaded the most was finally about to happen.

“Hahahaha, it’s brother Jian Chen. He’s come. He has the support of the grand elder from Mercenary City. You mongrel, I’d like to see what you do now.” Huang Tianba became filled with vigor once more. In that moment, he seemed to catch the glimpse of a ray of light in pure darkness. He had seen the hope of breaking out.

Bang! The ancestor of the Huanggu clan slammed the door shut, as if he was afraid that Huang Tianba’s voice would make it to Jian Chen’s ears.

His complexion was extremely horrible, and he became unsettled. He wanted to run, but once he thought about Jian Chen’s current strength, he immediately gave up on that thought.

Suddenly, an idea crossed his mind. He thought, “Jian Chen may have come to my clan, but he has no idea about how I’ve been dealing with Huang Tianba and Huang Luan. In other words, the situation still hasn’t reached its worst point. I still have a sliver of hope, and I also have a final trump card to keep me alive.” He immediately calmed down by quite a bit with that before quickly dismissing his thoughts. He left the tower as if nothing had happened, personally going up to welcome Jian Chen.

“Hahaha, so it’s my friend Jian Chen who’s suddenly paid a visit.

You're fame on the continent these days is like the noon sun—just as dazzling and unstoppable. It truly is an honor for you to visit my clan. If this news breaks out, my clan's status will definitely skyrocket on the continent," the ancestor of the Huanggu clan laughed excitedly from afar, flattering Jian Chen.

# Chapter 1066: Huang Tianba Saved

---

Jian Chen knew that the ancestor of the Huanggu clan was Huang Luan's master, so he spoke relatively politely. He did not give off any particular presence, so he looked just like an ordinary person right now, floating mid-air as if he was standing.

The ancestor's face was filled with smiles, arriving before Jian Chen with fake excitement. His compliments flowed unceasingly from his mouth, buttering up to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen was oblivious to Huang Luan and Huang Tianba's current situation, which was why he responded very amicably to the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. After all, he was Huang Luan's master.

The two of them conversed a little before cutting to the chase. Jian Chen said, "Senior, may I ask if Luan'er and senior Huang Tianba is with you?"

The ancestor's heart sank once again, but he showed none of it. He smiled, "I was thinking that brother Jian Chen would be visiting for my beloved disciple and Huang Tianba. It's a pity though, you've come too late. My disciple's gone out for training while Huang Tianba is not in my clan either."

"What? They're not at your clan?" Jian Chen was astounded.

"Yep. They're not with me right now. Huang Tianba may have gone traveling. Brother Jian Chen, if you want to find them, I'll

contact you immediately if they come back to my Huanggu clan,” the ancestor leisurely replied. However, no one knew that his emotions inside were the exact opposite. He wished that Jian Chen would leave as soon as possible.

With every moment Jian Chen stayed, his uneasiness would increase.

Jian Chen could not help but feel confused with what the ancestor had said. He had learned from You Yue that ever since Huang Luan had left Flame City to go to the Huanggu clan all those years ago, she had never appeared. There had not even been a single piece of news about her.

When he first heard that, Jian Chen thought that Huang Luan had always remained in the Huang family, cultivating arduously. However, only with his visit from before did he discover that Huang Luan did not stay at the Huang family at all. As a result, there was only the Huanggu clan. Jian Chen felt suspicious about Huang Luan going out for training mentioned by the ancestor.

Suddenly, Jian Chen expanded his presence and enveloped the entire clan. He wanted to check whether it was actually like the ancestor said.

Jian Chen’s presence was extremely powerful. Combined with how profound it was, it passed through all the defences and obstacles of the clan easily, allowing him to observe the clan clearly.

However, Jian Chen's complexion changed the moment his presence swept through the tower in the center of the clan. A terrifying light exploded from his eyes and anger began to fume from him. Inside contained a deep killing intent as well.

He had sensed a beggar-like old man, wrapped in chains within the hidden room. Although the old man was disheveled and haggard, Jian Chen recognized him with a single glance. It was the person he was searching for, Huang Tianba.

"Senior Huang," Jian Chen cried out furiously. He arrived before the tower with a flash and struck out with his hand. With a boom, the tower collapsed loudly, obliterated from Jian Chen's attack.

The fragments of the tower shot off in all directions, destroying quite a few structures in the clan. Huang Tianba also fell from the sky with the destruction of the tower.

With another flash, he appeared by Huang Tianba's side after leaving behind an after-image of where he had been before. He caught Huang Tianba and gently landed. Huang Tianba's face had already become pale-white.

The ancestor of the Huanggu clan paled in fright. Badly shaken, he stared at the fuming Jian Chen and without any hesitation, he fled off into the distance as fast as he could. He swore inside, "God dammit, how did Jian Chen know that Huang Tianba was trapped in the tower? He clearly didn't know before." Right now, all he wanted to do was survive. He could not bother with the lives of his clansmen.

Suddenly being saved, Huang Tianba obviously became extremely emotional. Just as he wanted to say something, he saw the ancestor of the Huanggu clan trying to flee and immediately became enraged as well. He called out, “Jian Chen, don’t let that mongrel go!”

“Don’t worry, senior Huang. He can’t escape.” Icy killing intent formed in Jian Chen’s eyes. Throwing that down, he immediately began to pursue the ancestor.

In the air, the ancestor fled while Jian Chen pursued. They both used Spatial Force and moved extremely quickly. However, as they both were at the Seventh Heavenly Layer in terms of their comprehensions for the mysteries of the world, the distance between them never really closed after a while of pursuit.

With a flip of his hand, Jian Chen drew his Emperor Armament from his Space Ring. With the injection of Chaotic Force, the Emperor Armament immediately began to shine with dark light. The terrifying energy caused the surrounding space to distort, creating pitch-black cracks.

Jian Chen’s battle prowess immediately skyrocketed with the Emperor Armament. The terrifying presence caused the ancestor of the Huanggu clan to pale in fright, now filled with despair inside.

Jian Chen swung his sword and a huge, black sword Qi immediately shot out, flying toward the ancestor with lightning



speed.

The Huanggu clan ancestor wanted to dodge, but the sword Qi was not something he could avoid. There was a humongous disparity between Saint Kings and Saint Rulers.

“Argh!”

The sword Qi caught up to him in the blink of an eye and cleaved off his legs. The only body he had left was from the waist up. Violent pain caused him to shriek out in a chilling fashion, and it even affected his speed. He began to slow down.

Jian Chen put away the Emperor Armament and caught up to him with lightning speed. This time, he did not treat the ancestor as politely as before. He ignored his painful cries, taking him away by grabbing his clothes.

The Huanggu clan had fallen into chaos as of right now. The activity from the destruction of the tower had alarmed all the people in the clan. Everyone stopped their cultivation and stepped out of their residences to check what was happening outside. All the members of the upper echelon had already arrived beside Huang Tianba in the meantime. They all stared at him in shock as disbelief flooded their faces.

They all recognized Huang Tianba as the ancestor of the Huang family, but they had no idea what their own ancestor had done. They all felt extremely shocked with Huang Tianba's current appearance, completely confused about what had happened.

At this moment, a vast presence appeared in the distance. Jian Chen returned furiously to the clan with the ancestor of the Huanggu clan and landed on the ground. Afterward, he made his way to Huang Tianba, step by step while carrying the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. His face was sunken while his eyes were icy-cold. Dense killing intent continued to linger on him.

“Ancestor!”

“Ancestor!”

The group of people recognized that Jian Chen currently carried their ancestor with a single glance. Their faces all changed drastically as they called out sorrowfully.

“Release the ancestor!” A middle-aged Heaven Saint Master cried out, charging at Jian Chen with a Saint Weapon. His eyes were bloodshot from anger.

“Piss off!” Jian Chen angrily yelled out. He did not even glance at the person as he punched out. He used the toughness of his body to resist the person’s Saint Weapon.

Ding! Jian Chen’s fist collided with the Saint Weapon, and it shattered like tofu from Jian Chen’s punch. Jian Chen’s fist continued on with no reduction in force, mercilessly landing on the Heaven Saint Master’s chest.

The Heaven Saint Master spurted blood from his mouth as he shot back like a cannonball. He passed through several buildings before stopping a hundred meters away in the end. His entire chest had caved in, and his organs had all turned to mush from the might of Jian Chen's punch.

"Sixth elder!" The Heaven Saint Masters of the Huanggu clan all called out, immediately flying to the man who had been injured by Jian Chen. They discovered that he had lost all signs of life; Jian Chen's casual punch had claimed his life on the spot.

All the people of the Huanggu clan immediately quietened down after witnessing Jian Chen's strength. They all stared at him in surprise and fear. No one else dared to say anything more. They stepped aside to give way to Jian Chen.

"Jian Chen, you're still a supreme expert of the continent after all. You've actually murdered a Heaven Saint Master," the ancestor of the Huanggu clan furiously yelled out. The person who had passed away was his great-grandson as well as the most talented person in the clan. He was treated with great importance by the ancestor.

# Chapter 1067: Huang Luan Reaches Saint Ruler

---

“It doesn’t matter who you are. If you attack me, I’ll kill you without mercy,” Jian Chen coldly said. His impression of the Huanggu clan had completely reversed. He treated them as enemies now.

Huang Tianba had showed great kindness to him before, and he was also Huang Luan’s great-grandfather. It did not matter what happened between Huang Tianba and the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. Jian Chen would always stand by Huang Tianba’s side.

Jian Chen slowly made his way to Huang Tianba’s side with the legless ancestor in his hand. He threw him to the ground mercilessly before squatting down. He asked in concern, “Senior Huang, are you alright? Just what has happened?”

Huang Tianba eyed the ancestor of the Huanggu clan that had collapsed on the ground like mud. He felt extremely delighted inside and was also extremely shocked by Jian Chen’s strength. Huang Tianba’s understanding of Jian Chen’s strength remained at the level from several years ago. He had no idea just how terrifying Jian Chen had become.

“Brother Jian Chen, that mongrel did all this to me all because my precious great-granddaughter is in possession of the rare Water Spirit’s Body. She’s a prodigy with unlimited potential in the future. She is currently trapped by this bastard over a thousand meters underground in a room. Please go save her,” Huang Tianba spoke rather hurriedly. He was extremely concerned for Huang

Luan's wellbeing.

Jian Chen's face changed with that. He immediately expanded his presence and had indeed discovered Huang Luan trapped in a room underground. The room was enveloped by a powerful barrier.

Jian Chen's heart ached when he saw Huang Luan's haggard face. He could not imagine just how much pain she had gone through during these years. A killing intent even more powerful than before erupted from the bottom of Jian Chen's heart, targeting the ancestor of the Huanggu clan.

"Senior Huang Tianba, I'll free you from your chains first," Jian Chen hoarsely said. He grabbed the thick chains with his two hands, and with some force, the chains were crushed to pieces with a few cracks.

Although the chains were made from a special type of metal, they were not unbreakable. Huang Tianba's strength was sealed up, so he could not use his powers as a Saint Ruler. That was why he was chained up for so long.

Huang Tianba recovered his freedom and teetered as he stood up. He thanked Jian Chen, before arriving in front of the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. He laughed out loud without any restraint before gnashing his teeth, "Never did you think that you would end up like now, did you? I'd like to see how you harm my precious great-granddaughter now." Huang Tianba's voice was filled with resentment. He kicked the ancestor's body as he spoke, but since his strength was currently sealed, as well as the fact that he had

been chained up for so long, not only did he fail to hurt the Huanggu clan ancestor, he lost his footing and ended up staggering back.

Jian Chen helped Huang Tianba regain his balance with one hand and said, “Senior Huang Tianba, I’ll leave this person with you to deal with. Your strength is currently sealed. You should enter the saint artifact space where I’ll get someone to remove the seal from you.”

Jian Chen was unable to remove the seal in Huang Tianba as the brutality of Chaotic Force was not something ordinary people could endure. If his Chaotic Force entered Huang Tianba’s body, it would harm him rather than help him.

“No, I have to kill this bastard right now,” Huang Tianba was absolutely furious. Killing intent surged from him. He utterly despised the ancestor of the Huanggu clan inside.

The Huanggu clan ancestor looked up at the furious Huang Tianba. Not only was fear absent in his eyes, he even laughed complacently, “Hahaha, Huang Tianba, I can give a reason why you won’t want to kill me, unless you want your precious great-granddaughter to die.”

Huang Tianba’s expression changed immediately with that. He glared at the ancestor of the Huanggu clan and roared out, “Bastard, what did you do to her!?”

Even Jian Chen’s expression took a turn for the worse with that.

“Hahahaha, Huang Tianba, I’ll tell you since you want to know.” His face was filled with smugness. Even after falling into Jian Chen’s hands, he did not fear losing his life, “I’ve cast an ancient secret technique on the soul of your precious great-granddaughter long ago. I’ve left behind an imprint that entwines our fates in her soul. If you kill me, the imprint will erupt and kill her as well, wiping out her soul. Huang Tianba, kill me if you want your great-granddaughter to die as well.”

With that, Huang Tianba and Jian Chen’s faces both darkened in expression. If that truly was the case, they dared not kill him.

“Senior Huang Tianba, I’ll let you into the artifact space to remove the seal first. I’ll immediately go check on Huang Luan and see if that really is the case,” Jian Chen emotionlessly said to Huang Tianba. He then used the saint artifact to suck him away before he could even object. At the same time, he contacted the artifact spirit to get Hong Lian and Hei Yu to remove Huang Tianba’s seal.

Jian Chen obviously would not let the ancestor of the Huanggu clan go either. He also sucked him away, but his treatment in the artifact space would be a whole different story.

The members of the Huanggu clan stood in the surroundings, stunned. All of them experienced mixed expressions; none of them had thought that their ancestor would actually do something so treacherous to the Huang family, a family they were always on good terms with. All of them were extremely shocked and struggled to accept this, feeling extremely heavy inside.

They dared not show any disrespect to Jian Chen. Although they did not know about Jian Chen as well as their ancestor, they had heard about him at the very least and knew that Jian Chen was not someone their clan could agitate. Not to mention, their strongest member, their ancestor, just had his legs cleaved off, which deterred them from acting recklessly before Jian Chen even more.

With a dark face, Jian Chen's eyes swept over all of the clansmen of the Huanggu clan. Whoever he stared at felt like a sharp sword was poised against them. They shivered inside, all lowering their heads. They were all completely unsettled.

Jian Chen did not make it difficult for these people. He understood that they had no clue about this matter at all and knew nothing of what their ancestor had done. Afterward, Jian Chen expanded his presence straight into the ground, finding the tunnel leading to the room where Huang Luan was. He then climbed down it.

Huang Luan sat in the middle of the sealed room. Dazzling water-blue light lit up her surroundings, making her seem sacred and dignified, like a god.

The surroundings of the room were filled with droplets of crystal-clear water. Each droplet radiated with a blue glow, dying the entire room a deep blue. It was rather pretty. There were a few droplets of water that drifted about, slowly rotating around Huang Luan. They were like energetic fairies, filled with beauty.



Huang Luan's presence was countless times greater than before. The five-colored rainbow clouds that had appeared several days ago were because of her. She was no longer a Heaven Saint Master anymore but a Saint Ruler.

The hidden potential of Huang Luan's Water Spirit's Body was fully unlocked as she reached Saint Ruler. It was truly the Water Spirit's Body now. She was like the mother of water, extremely close with the water-attributed energy in the world. She could control it as she wished, at a proficiency that no one could rival.

## Chapter 1068: A Hidden Crisis

---

Suddenly, the water-attributed energy in the room began to pulse violently. Even the droplets of water that floated about like fairies lost their ability to levitate, falling out of the air and splattering on the floor.

The water-attributed energy in the world suddenly became extremely unstable.

Huang Luan slowly opened her eyes. She glanced past the water droplets with her bewitching eyes as she furrowed her brows.

“Odd. Why do I suddenly feel like I have far less control over the water-attributed energy and that I feel like I’m losing control inside?” Huang Luan murmured. She pondered and seemed to realize something very quickly. An idea flashed through her head as she mumbled to herself, “Is it because of the cultivation method? Did that old bastard not give me the true Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower?”

The more Huang Luan thought, the more she believed that to be the case. She gradually became solemn as a result, but she soon recovered her cool. She calmed down once more and said, “It doesn’t matter anymore whether that old bastard has given me the true thing or not. I’ve reached Saint Ruler now, and I’m countless times more powerful than a Heaven Saint Master. Once that old bastard comes, I’ll put up a desperate fight. Even if I have to lose my life as the price, I won’t let him have it easy. As long as the news of what happened here makes it out, the clan will definitely find a way to save great-grandfather.”

Determination flowed in Huang Luan's eyes. She had already made up her mind about her death. She no longer yearned for a free life like before, because she knew that it was probably impossible.

Suddenly, a rumble began to ring out. The heavy door began to slowly open.

Huang Luan immediately dismissed her thoughts and her eyes narrowed at that moment. Dense killing intent flickered in her eyes. She knew the ancestor of the Huanggu clan had come. If she wanted to heavily injure someone more powerful than her, she needed to attack with everything she had when he was unaware, catching him off-guard. Otherwise, she would definitely fall to a disadvantage in an open battle.

The dense and pure energy in the room began to surge. A blue sword, two fingers wide, had already appeared in Huang Luan's hand. It glowed with a bright blue light, and through the light, the surface of the sword rippled unceasingly.

At this moment, the door of the room had opened by a portion. It was pitch-black outside, so all that could be seen was a black figure standing silently outside. His appearance was unclear.

Over the past years, only one person ever walked through that doorway, and that person was the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. As a result, Huang Luan treated the figure as the ancestor, so before the door had completely opened, she stabbed out.

The strike was Huang Luan's most powerful attack after charging up. It was everything she had, pushing her strength of the First Heavenly Layer past the limits.

The sword shot through the air and immediately began to shine brightly, becoming as dazzling as the sun. It dyed the dim room blue as powerful ripples of energy pulsed from the sword. It caused the surrounding space to distort as black cracks immediately appeared. They were cracks in space.

Huang Luan discovered that the water-attributed Saint Force within her began to pulse in an unstable manner as she stabbed out, vaguely feeling like she had lost control. However, she could no longer bother with that feeling anymore. She devoted all of her attention to the attack, trying to deal a heavy blow by catching the ancestor off-guard. She only wished to injure him and had no hopes of killing him.

The black figure in the doorway did not panic, nor did he dodge or block. He remained where he was, in the same position. Not even energy leaked from him.

Huang Luan's strike was like a lightning bolt, arriving before him instantly. She mercilessly thrust it toward the chest of the figure, and the exact moment the sword came in contact with the figure, Huang Luan discovered through the dazzling blue light that the clothes and stature of the person before her did not seem to match the Huanggu clan ancestor's. However, she had no more time to think about that.

Boom!

Huang Luan's full-powered thrust viciously struck the chest of the figure. Pure water-attributed energy immediately erupted, and with a deep sound, the residual energy slammed into the surrounding walls as a terrifying wave. It caused the entire room to violently tremble. The room probably would have collapsed if it were not for its toughness.

Huang Luan immediately rejoiced when she saw how her attack had landed precisely on his body. However, her joy quickly disappeared. She could feel that her sword had failed to pierce him in the way she had imagined. Instead, she seemed to have struck a steel board, and the powerful reaction force numbed her hand.

Huang Luan's heart sank. She thought that the ancestor had probably come prepared, so her full-powered attack was unable to cause any harm to him.

“Luan'er!”

At this moment, Huang Luan heard a gentle voice. She immediately jolted in a violent fashion. She was just too familiar with this voice. It would even appear in her memories quite often.

Huang Luan stared at the figure in shock. She finally saw the person's appearance through the dazzling blue light of the sword.

It was an extremely familiar face. Although it had changed

slightly from several years ago, the face was still the same one burned deeply into Huang Luan's mind, the one she could not forget even after an eternity.

Huang Luan became stunned as she stared at the person she thought of the most. She could not come back to her senses even after a very long while. Her heart beat furiously as her body trembled uncontrollably. Two clear streaks of tears slowly ran down her cheeks from her bright eyes.

"J-J- Jian Chen," she said with a trembling voice. She struggled to believe that the person before her right now was Jian Chen, who she missed most, and not the ancestor of the Huanggu clan.

At that moment, she felt like everything was a dream, and she no longer experiencing reality.

"Luan'er, it's been hard for you during these past few years," Jian Chen softly replied. His voice was extremely gentle as his heart ached.

The sword remained pressed against Jian Chen's chest. Huang Luan's attack from before had obliterated Jian Chen's clothes, but it failed to harm him at all.

"Jian Chen, is it really you?" Huang Luan asked again with a trembling voice. Fat tears rolled down her cheeks, flowing faster and faster. The sword in her hand also fell as it trembled.

“Luan’er, it’s me. I’ve come to save you. You’re safe now. No one will ever be able to harm you again in the future.” Jian Chen stepped forward and tightly embraced Huang Luan. He felt like his heart was being stabbed inside.

He dared not to imagine exactly what Huang Luan had gone through, exactly what burden she felt, or exactly what suffering she had endured after being trapped for all these years.

There were countless people who faced horrible fates on the Tian Yuan Continent with many more people who suffered even worse than Huang Luan. However, Huang Luan bore an extremely important status in Jian Chen’s heart. He would not allow her to suffer any harm.

The sword in Huang Luan’s hand slowly disappeared, and the coldness on her face gradually vanished, replaced by a gentleness that had not been seen for several years. Even her icy gaze began to thaw. She then cried out Jian Chen’s name before lunging into his bosom, breaking into tears. She seemed to be releasing all the pressure and grievances she had suffered over the years.

Jian Chen embraced Huang Luan tightly. He could feel his clothes dampen from Huang Luan’s tears. His heart ached from what Huang Luan had gone through, but at the same time, he felt some joy. He was happy that Huang Luan had now become a Saint Ruler.

Suddenly, Jian Chen’s face froze. He gently furrowed his brows. He could feel that the energy within Huang Luan was surging violently, as if it was not under her control at all. It rampaged

about before surging out of her body into the room in the form of a bright, blue light.

Huang Luan was encased by the light of the leaking energy, becoming extremely blinding.

“Luan’er, what is happening?” Jian Chen asked in concern. He felt an ill omen about what was unfolding before him.

Huang Luan gradually calmed down and raised her head from Jian Chen’s chest. Her eyes were no longer cold, now filled with gentleness as she looked at Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, it’s probably because the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower from that old bastard has problems. It’s very hard for me to control the power within me now. I feel like all the energy is about to leave my body and break free from my control.” With that, Huang Luan placed her head against Jian Chen’s chest once more. Her face was filled with satisfaction and happiness, as if she did not care about the leaking of her energy at all.

She had made up her mind about her death long ago. She no longer had any attachments in the world except to Jian Chen and Huang Tianba. Since her great-grandfather had been saved now and the person who she missed the most was with her, she felt very satisfied.

She did not care about being a Saint Ruler at all. All she needed was Jian Chen, and she felt like she had the world. She did not care about anything else.



“I’ll definitely make that old bastard wish he was better off dead for treating you like this.” Jian Chen’s face was pale-white. He was panicking since he was unable to stop the energy from leaking out of Huang Luan.

Suddenly, a golden streak of light shot out from the center of Jian Chen’s eyebrows. The saint artifact had emerged from his sea of consciousness, levitating in the room in the form of a fist-sized golden tower as it spun slowly.

“Luan’er, I’ll send you into the artifact space. Don’t worry, I’ll definitely be able to find the method to deal with this from that old bastard,” Jian Chen comforted. He intended on entering the artifact space with Huang Luan.

“Jian Chen.”

Just as he was about to enter the artifact space, a woman’s voice rang through the room. It was extremely pleasant and seemed to be filled with unlimited charm. It was bewitching

A gleam of light flashed through Jian Chen’s eyes, and he suddenly raised his head. Before him, the illusionary figure of the sea goddess had silently appeared at some point unbeknownst to him.

# Chapter 1069: Huang Luan Surrenders Her Body

---

“Your majesty, why have you appeared here?” Jian Chen asked in surprise. He was in great shock.

“If I didn’t appear now, your friend would be completely doomed. Once the energy within her and the potential of her Water Spirit’s Body leaks away, she will become a mortal. It would be a waste for a great Water Spirit’s Body,” the sea goddess said with a gentle but dignified voice as she stared at Huang Luan.

Jian Chen immediately began to panic when he heard that Huang Luan could become a mortal as well as the fact that energy was leaking out of her body unceasingly. He hurriedly requested, “Your majesty, please save Luan’er.”

The sea goddess pointed with a finger. There was no earth-shaking presence that erupted. It just seemed to freeze time; as she extended her finger, the pure water-attributed energy in the room immediately froze. Even the energy leaking out of Huang Luan seemed to be obstructed by a mysterious power, sealing it firmly within her.

Huang Luan’s face immediately changed when she sensed the change in her body. She was astounded. She felt like all the energy within her belonged to someone else in that instance. She had no control over it.

Although she had been losing control over the energy before, she

still maintained some authority. She was just unable to stop it from leaking out. Now, she had completely lost all authority, as if all the energy she had gathered arduously from cultivation in the past years had become someone else's.

Freezing the pure energy with a single gesture, the sea goddess looked to Jian Chen, "Jian Chen, I can only forcefully control some of the power with my soul and prevent it from leaking out anymore. If you want to save her, it'll all depend on you yourself."

Jian Chen could not help but feel relieved now that Huang Luan was temporarily out of danger. He said, "Your majesty, just how do I make it so that Huang Luan retains her strength? Is it finding the correct cultivation method?"

The sea goddess shook her head, "I know a little about the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower she cultivates. It was created by a prodigy several hundreds of thousands of years ago. In the very beginning, there was only one version. It was a water-attributed cultivation method that belonged to the upper levels, extremely wondrous in nature. The prodigy reached Saint King in just a thousand years using this method.

"Afterward, he came across a woman who possessed the Water Spirit's Body. The speed at which she practiced water-attributed cultivation methods completely astounded the prodigy, so he became interested in her. Approaching her intentionally, he quickly became her cultivation partner.

"As he came in contact with the Water Spirit's Body many times, the prodigy gained an even clearer understanding regarding the

special constitution. He used his supreme talent to create a second version of the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower in a few decades and then passed it onto his cultivation partner to practice.

“The woman did not doubt him at all and began cultivating the second version of the cultivation method. However, what she never realized was that the second version was not a powerful cultivation method, but a cultivation method that was made for the Water Spirit’s Body. After practicing it, she lost control over all the energy within her and even the potential from the Water Spirit’s Body was taken from her. She became just like your friend right now.

“The prodigy absorbed all the pure, water-attributed energy from his partner as well as the potential of the Water Spirit’s Body, turning it into his own. Not only did his strength skyrocket, even his talent in cultivation greatly increased. He became a Saint Emperor on the Tian Yuan Continent in the end.”

“As for his partner, she lost all her powers and turned into a mortal. She was reduced to an old, white-haired woman from her beauty before and committed suicide from heartache.”

The sea goddess paused slightly there. She looked at Jian Chen before continuing, “You should understand now. Your friend has practiced the second version of the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower. The person who gave it to her wants to use the same special method as that prodigy to absorb your friend’s energy and potential and turn it into his own.”

Jian Chen and Huang Luan both fell silent because of what the

sea goddess said, and they remained silent for a very long time. They felt greatly influenced by the sea goddess' story. They all felt sorry for the woman who was harmed by her husband, feeling deeply sympathetic.

At the same time, Jian Chen's killing intent for the ancestor of the Huanggu clan grew even denser. It reached an absolute limit, except he did not unleash it here.

"Your majesty, what happened to the prodigy in the end?" Jian Chen inquired. He cared for the answer very much.

"After reaching Saint Emperor, the prodigy became embroiled in a large-scale battle and was killed," said the sea goddess.

Jian Chen was satisfied by the outcome of the prodigy. Although he possessed great talent, he was evil-hearted. He ruthlessly harmed his wife who trusted him. He deserved more than death.

"That woman is so pitiful." Huang Luan was filled with sympathy. Also as a woman and in possession of the Water Spirit's Body, she felt deep pain for what the woman had gone through.

"There is nothing pitiful if you live in this world," the sea goddess said. Her voice was gentle, but it was emotionlessly cold. She was one of the four champions from ancient times and had emerged step by step from a ruthless past. She had just seen too many things like this.

The sea goddess continued after some silence, “Jian Chen, there’s only one method to save your friend, to let her keep her Water Spirit’s Body and her current strength.”

“What’s the method?” Jian Chen gathered his attention and quickly threw the story regarding the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower to the back of his mind. He had a deep understanding regarding the brutality of the continent, so it was difficult for his mental state to be affected by a few stories. At most, he would just form some feelings for it.

Huang Luan also turned to the sea goddess. She did not know the sea goddess’ true identity right now, but she clearly paid much attention since the sea goddess could resolve her problem.

Although Huang Luan had opened her mind a lot more and no longer viewed her strength with much importance, she also understood very well that she needed to have enough strength to stay beside Jian Chen. Her lifespan would greatly decrease if she lost all her powers and became a mortal, and she would age as a result. If it was possible, she also wished to retain her strength so that she could be with Jian Chen forever.

The sea goddess did not reply immediately. Her gaze became rather complicated, and she only spoke after hesitating, “Jian Chen, if you want to resolve the problem with your friend’s body, you need to use an even greater force to suppress the potential that’s being stripped away, and then you will redeposit it into her with my assistance from the side, thus rebuilding the Water Spirit’s Body.”

Jian Chen became a little troubled, “Your majesty, the power I use is too great. Huang Luan’s body may not be able to withstand it.”

“Your power is indeed very great, something that ordinary people cannot withstand, but don’t worry. I have a way of weakening your power. The Water Spirit’s Body is no ordinary constitution. If the two of you come together, you can control the power so that it enters slowly from the lower body and then have it pause in the dantian of the Water Spirit’s Body. The pure water-attributed energy will neutralize your brutal energy. Coupled with my help, she should be able to endure your power,” the sea goddess explained.

“What? We have to use a method where we come together?” Jian Chen immediately became surprised as disbelief flooded his face. He doubted what he heard right now.

Huang Luan also became bright red in an instance. She peeked at Jian Chen from the corner of her eye before quickly burrowing her head into Jian Chen’s chest. She hugged him even tighter.

“That’s the only method I can think of. There’s nothing else other than that.” The sea goddess stared deeply into Jian Chen’s eyes.

“B-b- but that’ll harm Luan’er.” Jian Chen hesitated as he wavered. He could not make up his mind. At the same time, he could clearly feel Huang Luan against his chest, and he felt like he was rapidly heating up.

Huang Luan slowly raised her head. Some affection filled her bright eyes as she glanced at Jian Chen in an infatuated manner. She said, "Jian Chen, I belong to you. Both my body and my soul belong to only you. In this world, only you are worthy of me. I'm not afraid of being harmed." Huang Luan's breath became rather haggard as she spoke and her heart beat even heavier. She slowly unbuttoned her dress and it immediately slid down her body, revealing her white skin.

"Luan'er..." Jian Chen bit his lip as he looked at Huang Luan's enchanting, hour-glass figure. Although he knew that Huang Luan was deeply in love with him, he felt like he was just taking advantage of the situation and the circumstances to become one with Huang Luan.

"Jian Chen, I only have you in my heart. I've belonged to you since a very long time ago. I love you very much. Take me. I want to truly become your woman." Huang Luan stared at Jian Chen with deep affection as she slowly began to take off Jian Chen's clothes.

Huang Luan was clearly extremely straightforward with her emotions. She did not suppress or avoid them purposefully, completely different to ordinary girls.

Jian Chen slowly closed his eyes. He seemed to be in a great dilemma inside, but when he opened his eyes once more, they were no longer any hesitation, only determination.



Bang!

With a jolt, a powerful force erupted from him and turned his clothes into shreds, revealing his almost-perfect figure. He then tightly hugged Huang Luan's burning body. At the same time, he brought his lips to meet Huang Luan's cherry lips.

Two naked people coiled together a thousand meters underground.

# Chapter 1070: Entwined Fates

---

The light that had dyed the room a water-blue had already disappeared. It was pitch-black currently, so dark that nothing could be seen. Only enchanting, arousing sounds constantly rang out.

Jian Chen remained clear-headed in the room. He carefully guided slivers of Chaotic Force slowly out of his dantian and into Huang Luan's body through a special method. He then had them stop in Huang Luan's dantian for a while according to the sea goddess' method.

Huang Luan's Water Spirit's Body was indeed much more wondrous than any ordinary constitution. Even though she had lost control of the pure, water-attributed energy, it was no weaker than before. He could indeed feel the brutal, destructive presence of the Chaotic Force being neutralized by the energy when it paused in her dantian, constantly weakening.

“Jian Chen, I will now tell you the detailed method on how to rebuild the Water Spirit's Body. You must do everything according to my instructions and do nothing wrong, or the reconstruction will probably be impossible,” the sea goddess' voice rang in Jian Chen's head. Afterward, she extended a finger and the frozen pure energy in the room immediately began to surge toward Huang Luan's body, before disappearing into her.

All the energy and potential of the Water Spirit's Body that had drifted out returned to Huang Luan's body under the control of the sea goddess.

Ever since she began to practice the second version of the Scripture of the Aquatic Sunflower, Huang Luan's Water Spirit's Body had been ruined and was about to collapse. If the sea goddess had not arrived in time, she probably would have lost all of her powers and would have been reduced to a mortal. The sea goddess passed on the method to reconstruct the Water Spirit's Body to Jian Chen, and then assisted him from one side. She used her powerful soul that belonged in the Origin realm as well as her supreme control over water-attributed energy to rebuild the Water Spirit's Body with Jian Chen.

The constitution was something unique that would rarely appear even over the span of a hundred thousand years. It was completely innate, not something that could be achieved through cultivation.

Huang Luan's Water Spirit's Body was about to collapse, and her energy and potential had already begun to disperse. Rebuilding the constitution under such a situation was undoubtedly an extremely difficult matter, even impossible.

The Water Spirit's Body was no ordinary constitution. Even well-versed Saint Emperors would have no idea what to do with it, let alone rebuild it.

However, it was fortunate that Huang Luan received the help from the sea goddess this time, which was why the constitution could be recovered. The sea goddess was one of the four supreme experts from ancient times after all, having reached the legendary Origin realm. As a supreme existence in regards to water, no one could rival her understanding of the Water Spirit's Body.

The reconstruction process was successful. Jian Chen did what the sea goddess instructed and followed every step and detail carefully. Finally, after one whole day, Huang Luan recovered her Water Spirit's Body.

Now that the problems in her body were completely removed, Huang Luan's senses of water immediately reached an unprecedented level. She could also feel that the compatibility between her body and water-attributed energy was unbelievable.

Right now, she only needed a single thought to instantly gather all the water-attributed energy in the radius of several dozen kilometers, all of which would be under her control. She had experienced this before, but it was never as powerful as right now.

Not only did the constitution provide Huang Luan with almost heaven-defying talent in cultivation, it also granted her supreme control over water-attributed energy as well as a future of infinite potential.

The Chaotic Force that entered Huang Luan did not return to Jian Chen's body. It was permanently deposited in Huang Luan's body under the sea goddess' control, allowing Huang Luan to refine it into strands of pure, water-attributed Saint Force. It became her own power.

Although not a lot of Chaotic Force had entered Huang Luan's body, each strand was composed of vast quantities of energy, so just that tiny amount caused Huang Luan's strength to skyrocket.

She reached the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler. However, that was not all that happened. Even her Water Spirit's Body benefited, increasing the toughness of her body. It was still far from Jian Chen's Chaotic Body, but no one else could rival it even if they possessed a similar level of cultivation.

Even the pure, water-attributed Saint Force within her seemed to undergo some minute changes.

The problems with Huang Luan's Water Spirit's Body were finally resolved completely, allowing Jian Chen to relax.

The two of them finally separated, and they pulled out clothes from their Space Rings to put on at the same time. What differed was what they felt inside. Jian Chen was strewn between different emotions, while Huang Luan felt pleasant, satisfied, and happy.

"Jian Chen!" Huang Luan could not help but call out Jian Chen's name softly after putting on her clothes. She stuck to Jian Chen's body once more, laying on his chest silently with a satisfied and happy smile. She was like glue.

Jian Chen gently wrapped his arm around Huang Luan's figure and slowly inhaled the fragrance of Huang Luan. He knew that Huang Luan had truly become his woman now, both on paper and in actuality. At the same time, it was the second woman he had entwined with.

The first was the cold, prideful beauty, the Heavenly Enchantress. The two of them only embraced each other due to

their special circumstance because of the fact that their lives were threatened.

As for Huang Luan, it was the same case, but it was different from the first time as well. Huang Luan was passionate and threw herself at Jian Chen, offering her body to him.

“Sigh,” Jian Chen exhaled inside. He could not help but think of everything that had happened in the past, the scene where he accidentally came across Huang Luan in the river outside Walaurent City.

Jian Chen could not help but emotionally sigh inside as he thought about how he first met Huang Luan. Who would have thought that the girl he had accidentally met would end up with a relationship like this with him?

Suddenly, Jian Chen seemed to think of something. He quickly dismissed his thoughts and said to Huang Luan, “Luan’er, is the ancient secret technique that binds your fate, cast by the ancestor of the Huanggu clan, still present on you?”

Huang Luan nodded and said nothing else.

Jian Chen’s heart slightly sank after confirming that it was still there. He then looked at the sea goddess, “You majesty, may I ask if you have some understanding regarding these types of secret techniques and if you are able to undo them or not?” Jian Chen did not feel indebted to the sea goddess even though she had helped him a lot. He knew he would pay her back in the future, when the

worldly ebb of the sea realm occurs.

“I can help your friend reconstruct her body in my current form, but I am unable to break the secret technique. However, it is not difficult to remove it; you can take her to a protector. There should be people there who can manage,” said the sea goddess.

Afterward, Jian Chen and Huang Luan bid farewell to the sea goddess before leaving the underground room together. They discovered that a large portion of the Huanggu clan people had left once they returned to the surface. Only a small portion of old people remained.

While Jian Chen was underground, the clansmen moved a large portion of their clan away, fearing Jian Chen’s rage because of Huang Tianba and Huang Luan’s sufferings, hoping that they could save at least just a few people. Only a few older people who were loyal to the family and did not fear death remained.

If it was before, Jian Chen would definitely vent his anger on these people, or even wipe out the entire clan. However, he was now a Saint King and his mentality had undergone some changes. Coupled with the fact that the clansmen had no idea that Huang Tianba had been trapped, he did not make it difficult for them. He left with Huang Luan, returning to the Huang family.

The seal within Huang Tianba was removed by Hei Yi. Together with the personal treatment from the artifact spirit, Huang Tianba recovered extremely quickly, having returned to peak condition long ago. The Huanggu clan ancestor thrown into the artifact space by Jian Chen was also brutally tortured by Huang Tianba,

making him feel like he was better off dead. However, his life was not threatened due to the secret technique he had cast on Huang Luan.

Huang Tianba and Huang Luan returned to the Huang family, and the news of them being trapped in the Huanggu clan quickly spread through the entire family. The news immediately caused a great uproar.

Afterward, Huang Tianba took the clan treasure, the Solunar Bow, with him, personally leading group of experts to the Huanggu clan in a threatening manner. He swore to wipe out the Huanggu clan, to make it vanish from the continent.

Meanwhile, Jian Chen and Huang Luan stayed at the Huang family in ease. They did not pay any attention to Huang Tianba's actions.

Once Huang Tianba returned, Jian Chen learned that Huang Tianba had used the Solunar Bow to destroy the region where the clan had settled down and that the remaining elderly members of the Huanggu clan were attacked collectively by the experts he had brought along. He killed them all, and also sent half of the Huang family experts to pursue the group of people who had fled from the Huanggu clan. He wanted to end the Huanggu clan completely.

Jian Chen did not bother too much with these matters. Although he knew that many of the people were innocent, the concepts of 'innocence' and 'benevolence' did not exist on this continent. If the Huang family did not completely wipe out the Huanggu clan, the Huang family would face its end once the remaining members



of the Huanggu clan rose up and became peak-level experts.

# Chapter 1071: Going to Mercenary City

---

The sun was blood-red as it neared the horizon. Jian Chen stood straight, like a sword, at the peak of a range of mountains in white robes. He stared at the red clouds, as if he was in a trance, without moving at all. A sea of white clouds floated beneath him.

Where he currently stood was the tallest mountain peak in the mountain range where the Huang family resided. The mountains were so steep and dangerous that they were unscalable.

The wild wind violently buffeted him high up in the air, whistling past his ears. Coupled with it were the roars of beasts from the forests in the distance, sounding like the dreadful cries of ghosts as they fused together with the wind.

A white figure quickly shot over from the distance, arriving on the mountain peak where Jian Chen stood in an instant. Afterward, she walked up to his side and gently grabbed Jian Chen's arm, resting her head on his shoulder. Her face was filled with happiness and satisfaction.

She was Huang Luan. Huang Luan was dressed especially prettily today, wearing makeup to accentuate her alluring beauty. Her eyes were bright and seemed to possess a wondrous charm, possessing some grace in her purity. It was enchanting. Her glossy, black hair fell down her shoulders like a waterfall. She had worn a white, luxurious dress on purpose today, so she looked like a goddess. Standing next to Jian Chen who was also in white robes, the two of them possessed the aura of an immortal couple.

Huang Luan leaned closed to Jian Chen's bosom. She was filled with happiness and joy, watching the sun set with Jian Chen. Neither one said anything.

As the blood-red sunlight gradually faded, darkness gradually descended upon the dusk. The moment when the world was about to be engulfed by darkness, the whistling of wind vibrated from afar and a figure shot over like a comet. He made his way toward Jian Chen with lightning speed, arriving in just a few seconds.

"My beloved junior, why have you called me here?" Huang Tianba chuckled with a smile. He had even begun to refer to Jian Chen as his junior instead of brother like before. He felt extremely happy, especially when he saw how Huang Luan and Jian Chen were together.

Huang Luan became embarrassed with how she stuck to Jian Chen so intimately after her great-grandfather arrived. She hesitantly let go of Jian Chen's arm before glancing at Huang Tianba with a slight blush. She gently said, "Great-grandfather!"

Huang Tianba chuckled even more when he saw how Huang Luan became embarrassed like a little girl. He nodded but did not say anything more.

Jian Chen slowly turned around and looked at Huang Tianba calmly. He smiled, "Senior Huang, I've called you here this time because I have something important to discuss with you."

Huang Tianba immediately became stern when he heard how it

was important. He said, “Please continue.”

Jian Chen continued, “Senior Huang, I want to take you to Mercenary City and get the barrier spirit to invoke the mysteries of the world so you can comprehend them and thus break through. Are you willing to come?”

“What! To get the barrier spirit of Mercenary City to invoke the mysteries of the world so I can comprehend and break through?” Huang Tianba became surprised. He stared fixedly at Jian Chen, wide-eyed, as disbelief flooded his face. He felt shocked inside, struggled to convince himself that that was what Jian Chen had said.

Huang Tianba also knew a little regarding the barrier spirit of Mercenary City. He did not know a lot, but he did know one thing: the barrier spirit had existed since ancient times and was an existence that had survived through the ages. It was extremely powerful, always playing the role of the Mercenary City’s protector god.

What he found difficult to believe was that Jian Chen could actually get the barrier to invoke the mysteries of the world and assist people in making breakthroughs. It was just too shocking.

No similar rumors had ever appeared on the continent, let alone the fact that anyone knew the barrier spirit could do such things.

“Senior Huang, are you willing to come?” Jian Chen seemed to smile at Huang Tianba through his eyes.

“I’m willing, I’m willing. Of course I’m willing. How could I miss something so good?” Huang Tianba returned to his senses and hurriedly replied. He was afraid that his late reply would make him miss out on such a rare opportunity.

Huang Tianba left afterward as he was ravished by joy. He handed over some matters within the clan before leaving with Jian Chen on the morning of the next day. He went with Jian Chen, making their way to the Changyang clan in Lore City.

Huang Luan left with Jian Chen. Although the problems with her Water Spirit’s Body had been resolved, the imprint left in her head by the Huanggu clan ancestor still remained.

While Jian Chen stayed at the Huang family, he had visited the Huanggu clan ancestor trapped within the saint artifact. He wanted to learn the method of releasing the seal from him. However, he was a sly old fox who had lived for over two thousand years, so he knew that the secret technique was the only thing keeping him alive. How could he tell someone else how to release it so easily? In the end, Jian Chen failed to learn about the method of release from the old man no matter what he tried.

Jian Chen dared not harm the life of the Huanggu clan ancestor due to the restrictions of the secret technique. With no other choice, he left the old man be. He would come back to deal with him after he found a way to remove the seal from Huang Luan.

Jian Chen returned to the Changyang clan very quickly with

Huang Luan and Huang Tianba. The two of them had stopped being outsiders to the rest of the clan long ago since they had gotten to know each other quite some time ago. As a result, they were warmly welcomed as soon as they arrived.

Bi Hai warmly welcomed them in particular. As he was good friends with Huang Tianba, he was pulled aside to drink as soon as they met.

Jian Chen stayed in the Changyang clan for one day, before leaving for Mercenary City with Bi Hai, Huang Tianba, Yang Ling, Huang Luan, and uncle Chang. They traveled through a Spatial Gate constructed by Rui Jin.

The people beside Jian Chen right now were only the people he trusted most. There was also Jiede Tai, but Jian Chen still did not completely trust him, which was why he did not take Jiede Tai with him this time.

As for Changyang Zu Yunkong, a seal remained in his head so he was unable to increase his strength at all. It would only be harmful to him otherwise.

“Big brother, you’ve finally come.” As soon as Jian Chen arrived in Mercenary City, Xiao Ling appeared before him in an illusionary form. Perhaps because she saw Jian Chen, her pure face was filled with happiness.

Jian Chen could help but smile when he saw Xiao Ling. He had begun to view Xiao Ling as his own younger sister since long ago,

“Xiao Ling, how’s Ming Dong?”

“The three pieces of beast fur in your friend’s hand are not simple, big brother. The mysteries of the world are actually hidden within them. I used my own powers to awaken them inside, and then with some hard work, I invoked the mysteries of the world on the side as well, so your friend finally reached Saint Ruler. However, he’s cultivating right now,” said Xiao Ling. She was proud of herself.

“Ming Dong’s also become a Saint Ruler,” murmured Jian Chen. He felt happy for Ming Dong inside.

“Jian Chen, who’re you talking to?” A pleasant voice rang out from beside him. Huang Luan asked Jian Chen as she hung onto Jian Chen’s arm, her eyes shining with curiosity.

It was not just her; even Huang Tianba, Bi Hai, Yang Ling and Chang Wuji stared at him in amazement.

Jian Chen knew that they could not see Xiao Ling, but he did not explain his actions. He said to Xiao Ling, “They’re all friends and senior of me. I hope Xiao Ling can assist them in their cultivation in the future.”

Xiao Ling obediently nodded, “Yes. Big brother, don’t worry. Xiao Ling will definitely work hard to increase their strength.” With that, she waved her hand and Jian Chen’s group immediately felt everything go black. They had been dragged underground by Xiao Ling’s abilities, and even Rui Jin came along.

When the scene before them brightened up once more, they discovered that they had arrived in a completely sealed room. There were no cracks on the wall at all, completely flawless like nature. There was not even a door out.

Jian Chen looked around a little. He knew that the room was completely created from energy, probably prepared by Xiao Ling specially for Bi Hai and the others.

“Big brother, you can cultivate here in the future. Xiao Ling will invoke the mysteries of the world for you, but comprehending them will completely depend on you.” Xiao Ling’s illusionary body reappeared before Jian Chen as she levitated in the air.

This time, Bi Hai, Huang Tianba, Yang Ling, Huang Luan, and Chang Wuji’s attention were all drawn toward her at the same time. They could all see her.

“My dear junior, is this the barrier spirit of Mercenary City?” Huang Tianba could not help but ask as he stared unblinkingly at Xiao Ling. He was filled with curiosity.

Jian Chen nodded before introducing everyone to Xiao Ling. He left Huang Tianba, Bi Hai, Yang Ling, and Chang Wuji there.

Jian Chen also took the three pieces of beast fur from Ming Dong before handing them to Chang Wuji. He wished that Chang Wuji could reach Saint Ruler as soon as possible.



Chang Wuji's talent was relatively ordinary. He had not reached Saint Ruler even after close to a thousand years. Now, due to the fact that he was too old and extremely close to the end of his life, the effects of heavenly resources would be minimal. The assistance from Xiao Ling and the three pieces of beast fur was his final chance at reaching Saint Ruler.

If he could not break through even under such circumstances, it would be impossible for him in the future.

Afterward, Jian Chen asked Xiao Ling whether she could remove the secret technique in Huang Luan's head. The outcome, however, was extremely disappointing.

Xiao Ling was an expert of the Origin realm, but she was not an omnipotent god. It was impossible to break such a profound ancient secret technique planted directly on a person's soul even if someone had heavenly abilities.

Xiao Ling was in the Origin realm. Her battle prowess was extremely great, and she was basically invincible on the Tian Yuan Continent. However, she was just too negligent; since the ancient times, she had mostly spent her time sleeping. The number of abilities she knew were just too few, so she could do nothing about the secret technique that entwined the fates of two people.

Compared to the sea goddess, Xiao Ling might have been slightly more powerful, but she was nowhere near the sea goddess in terms of knowledge, experience, and secret techniques.

For certain matters, Xiao Ling could not even compare to the mercenaries who had spent some time wandering the Tian Yuan Continent.

# Chapter 1072: Comprehending the Mysteries of the World

---

Jian Chen could not help but become slightly dejected seeing how Xiao Ling could do nothing. He sighed inside, “Looks like I can only go ask senior Tian Jian and the people of the protector clans in the future. I hope I can obtain the method to remove the seal from Huang Luan from them.”

Jian Chen and Huang Luan stayed behind to get Xiao Ling to invoke the mysteries of the world for them.

Although Jian Chen possessed the strength of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King with his Emperor Armament, his comprehension of the mysteries of the world remained at the level of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. He possessed the ability to kill Saint Kings, but he was never able to rip open Space Gates, always requiring Rui Jin and Hei Yu to assist him.

Jian Chen wanted to make up for this weakness as soon as possible right now. He did not wish for his comprehension to reach the same level of strength he possessed, only so that it could reach the level of Saint Kings. That way, he would be able to create his own Space Gates.

It was evident that Jian Chen’s talent could be described as unprecedented. Both his cultivation speed and rate of comprehension was supreme. He submerged all his attention into the mysteries of the world invoked by Xiao Ling, fusing it into his soul so he could comprehend it closely.

Ordinary people would devote all their efforts into the comprehension for the mysteries of the world. The mysteries they comprehended would be hazy, uncertain and illusionary, like an image that was concealed by mist. They needed to get past this mist first, to see the reality within, if they wanted to achieve any comprehension.

Now that Jian Chen and the others possessed Xiao Ling's assistance, they seemed to be able to see the image itself, able to observe it clearly. It was not concealed by any mist, nor any illusionary and uncertain obstructions. They managed to avoid many winding paths, so it was much easier for them to comprehend compared to other Saint Rulers.

This was not spoon-feeding them. Although the mysteries of the world were invoked by Xiao Ling, they were still required to comprehend them and understand if they wanted to benefit from them. Otherwise, it would just be a waste of effort. They would gain nothing.

Jian Chen, Huang Luan, Bi Hai, and Huang Tianba were completely submerged within the invoked mysteries. They felt that the mysteries of the world were so close to them. They had never remembered that the mysteries could be so close. They felt the mysteries were so clear in that moment, no longer hazy like before.

In the room where Chang Wuji stayed, the three pieces of beast fur flew about by themselves. A profound presence radiated from them as they slowly revolved around Chang Wuji.

Chang Wuji seemed like a meditating old monk, sitting there without moving at all. All his attention was submerged into them. He could feel that he seemed to vaguely understand something, but he failed to grasp onto it during the process.

Yang Ling also sat there silently. He did not have the assistance of the beast furs, so he needed to work hard himself and comprehend the mysteries of the world in order to reach Saint Ruler.

They all lost sense of time as they cultivated. In the blink of an eye, they had all stayed in Mercenary City for a year. All of them benefited greatly, Jian Chen in particular. He reached the Eighth Heavenly Layer in cultivation, and was continuing toward the Ninth.

Bi Hai and Huang Tianba gained great benefits as well. They had reached the Sixth and Fifth Heavenly Layers respectively long ago, and were close to reaching the peak. Now with Xiao Ling's help, they comprehended the mysteries of the world in the most direct way, thus improving extremely quickly. They all made a breakthrough to the next level of cultivation, reaching the Seventh and Sixth Heavenly Layers.

Huang Luan had only reached Saint Ruler recently, but her strength had reached the Third Heavenly Layer due to Jian Chen. Her foundation was nowhere as firm as Huang Tianba's or Bi Hai's, so her strength did not increase that year.

She did not go without benefits, however. Although she

remained at the Third Heavenly Layer, her comprehensions of the mysteries increased quite a lot. She was advancing to the Fourth Heavenly Layer.

Meanwhile, Yang Ling and Chang Wuji remained the same before, without making any advances toward Saint Ruler.

At the same time, a huge divine hall levitated in the dark and cold outer space directly above the continent. It was a magnificent and extravagant structure, completely white and glowing with a pure light. It illuminated the surrounding darkness.

A huge throne floated three meters in the air in the center of the top floor. A layer of visible Moonlight Force slowly coiled around it, shining with soft light and dying the room white.

You Yue sat on the throne with the Moon God Scepter in hand. She was meditating as powerful ripples of energy pulsed from her from time to time. The Moonlight Force around the throne was constantly absorbed by her, allowing her presence to rapidly increase.

As Jian Chen and the others comprehended the mysteries of the world through Xiao Ling's help, You Yue did not idle about either. She remained in the cold and cheerless divine hall, silently enduring the boredom and loneliness to work hard on increasing her strength.

After the modification of her constitution with the moon essence and gaining the cultivation method that surpassed the Saint Tier,

You Yue's rate of improvement was no slower than Huang Luan with her Water Spirit's Body, maybe even far exceeding it. In a mere year, You Yue reached the Fourth Cycle as a Heaven Saint Master from the First Cycle. If she continued like that, she would only need another half a year to reach the Sixth Cycle.

Hei Yu, Hong Lian, Kara Lot, and Kazda Jianxiong also recovered to their peak conditions after having all their energy drained away by the Bright Moon Divine Hall a year ago. Kara Lot and Kazda Jianxiong left the artifact space half a year ago, returning to their clans after bidding farewell to Jian Chen.

Kara Liwei had also left the artifact space. She congratulated Jian Chen on the matter with You Yue obtaining the Bright Moon Divine Hall before returning with her ancestor. However, she felt very envious when she mentioned the divine hall.

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Hong Lian all remained within the artifact space. They were all at the Great Perfection of Saint King and only an inch away from Saint Emperor. They needed to overcome this gap by themselves, as any help from Xiao Ling was useless.

A mountain range, always surrounded by poisonous mist, existed within the Karl Empire of the three great empires. It was extremely well known in the empire, where almost everyone knew about it. Not only had it existed in the empire for over a hundred thousand years, it had taken the lives of countless adventurous mercenaries and experts. Even Saint Rulers could meet their end in the mountain range.

As time went on, the mountain range was labeled as a forbidden

region within the Karl Empire by countless mercenaries and experts. It was named the Soul-claiming Mountains.

A deathly silence did not exist in the mountain range; instead, it was teeming with life. Countless green vegetation grew there, even great trees that were hundreds or even thousands of years old. Magical beasts would move about from time to time in the thickets. It was no different than an ordinary forest.

However, the only difference was that everything was poisonous. Poison was present everywhere; not only were the plants poisonous, even the soil was poisonous, enough to threaten the lives of Earth Saint Masters. The deeper one went into the mountain range, the poison would grow stronger and stronger, where even Heaven Saint Masters would struggle to stay afloat in the end. All the magical beasts that thrived there were powerful, venomous beasts without a doubt.

A bare mountain peak stood in the depths of the mountain range. It was surrounded by vast quantities of poisonous mist, so dense that it had almost condensed into a liquid. Even the high class magical beasts that thrived in the mountain range could not approach it.

In the center of the mountain range existed a huge space carved out by a person. Fist-sized luminous pearls were lodged into the ceiling. They radiated with bright light and illuminated the dark cavern.

A middle-aged man, who seemed to be in his forties, sat there like a sculpture. He wore black robes.



The man's appearance was ordinary, but his face was resolute. The muscles on his face seemed to be stiff, as if he never smiled. It made him seem rather straightforward at the same time. There was an extremely eye-catching scar that stretched across his forehead. It was terrifying, enough to frighten people just by looking at it.

Beside him stood a 1.3-meter-long sword, stuck in the soil. The sword seemed ordinary, but a vast, chilling pressure emanated from within.

Suddenly, the man snapped opened his eyes, and they immediately began to glow with two odd and different lights. One of the eyes was sharp, filled with vigor and was firm, while the other eye possessed a demonic light. The light flashed about the eye, as if it was a will-o'-wisp jumping about.

“Kakakakaka, Bi Dao, my soul has undergone a basic fusion with yours. You can now use a portion of my powers, and you can use all of the power in my Saint Weapon, the Heaven-quaking Sword. You now possess the strength to move without restraint on the Tian Yuan Continent. Go deal with your matters as soon as possible. Don't forget about the promise after you finish with them.” An odd, husky laughter rang through the middle-aged man's head. The voice was extremely unpleasant, like the sobs of a ghost.

# Chapter 1073: Changes of Hellfire City

---

The middle-aged man suddenly stood up and a vast presence immediately began to radiate from him. It shook the surroundings with raw force, causing the entire mountain to shake slightly.

“Venerable Poisonsword, don’t worry. I am a person who keeps his word. I will do it since I’ve agreed to you. Once I take revenge for the devastation of the Bi family, my body will belong to you. I will not resist.” Determination flowed through the man’s eyes. He was not afraid of death.

“Kakakaka, alright, alright, good. I trust you, but I do hope you move a little faster, so that I don’t have to wait too long.” The horrible, husky voice rang in Bi Dao’s head again. It sounded impatient.

Bi Dao said nothing. With a wave of his hand, the sword in the ground immediately erupted with extremely great energy, which collided with the mountain. With a boom, the entire cavern collapsed. The rock was actually reduced to pieces by the supreme power that erupted from the ordinary-looking sword.

“My dwelling, my dwelling! Bi Dao you brat, do you know that I constructed this dwelling all those years ago with so much work? Y-y- y-you’ve actually destroyed by dwelling! You drive me mad!” The venerable Poisonsword hiding within Bi Dao’s head immediately bellowed out in anger with the destruction of the cavern.

“Venerable Poisonsword, you will be able to see the light of day again soon. Do you still care that much about a mere dwelling?” Bi Dao said coldly and emotionlessly. He had already grasped the sword tightly in his hand.

The sword was no ordinary weapon, but a King Armament left behind by a Saint King at Great Perfection. It was the Heaven-quaking Sword, the Saint Weapon of venerable Poisonsword who had once shaken up the continent twenty thousand years ago.

Venerable Poisonsword immediately shut up because of what Bi Dao had said.

Bi Dao remained silent as well. With the Heaven-quaking Sword in hand, he shot off like a cannonball, climbing up into the sky in an instant. He shot off into the distance after determining his directions and immediately disappeared into the dense mist.

Hellfire City was a king city in the Karl Empire. Regardless of size, area, or prosperity, it was only second to the seven capital cities of the continent.

Hellfire City possessed several tens of thousands of years of history in the Karl Empire. Its walls were entirely made from essence metal. They were extremely tough and could resist the attacks of Class 5 Magical Beasts with ease. Throughout history, the walls had fended off over a hundred magical beast hoards, allowing the city to come out unscathed each time.

Several millions of people lived within the city. Coupled with the

everyday flow of people, the number of people that Hellfire City could accomodate was close to a hundred million. Many experts rose from Hellfire City since there was such a large population, along with countless clans of different sizes.

The Bloodcloud clan was the most powerful clan in the city. It was originally the second greatest there, but ever since the Bi family had been wiped out in a single night fifty years ago, they had completely replaced them. They were now unquestionably the greatest clan in the city.

This was because the Bloodcloud clan possessed a new Saint Ruler. He was not an ancestor of the clan, but a talented junior. With his supreme talent, he reached Saint Ruler in just a few hundred years, and he even became the disciple of an Imperial Protector of the empire. He was deeply valued and was raised as a pillar of support for the future of the empire, causing the clan's status in the city to soar, becoming admired by everyone.

A vast presence suddenly appeared outside the city. A figure made its way past the great walls of the city in the form of a blur. Without any decrease in speed, it flew to the center of the city with a threatening presence, alerting countless people along the way.

The figure brazenly flew through a small portion of the city and descended before a large manor in the very center of the city. It was where the Bloodcloud clan resided.

The figure wore black robes and radiated with a presence so vast that it would make people suffocate. His long hair danced in the windless air as his robes fluttered as well. He stared at the manor

in a daze as reminiscence filled his eyes. Deep sorrow was also present.

The four burly guards at the entrance of the clan stared at the man in shock. Without saying anything, they ran into the clan to report what had happened. They dared not stay for even a moment longer.

The presence from the man had utterly frightened them, causing their legs to tremble. They believed that they had seen quite a few experts themselves, but this was the first time they had sensed such a great presence. Vast pressure came from the presence, which made the guards feel like their souls were going to shatter.

Before the guards could even report what had happened, all of the experts in the clan sensed the frighteningly-vast presence as well. Immediately, an energetic and polite voice rang out from within the clan, “May I inquire who you may be to have come to my clan as a guest? I am You Zixing, the patriarch of the Bloodcloud clan. I welcome you to the Bloodcloud clan on behalf of all clansmen.”

A dashing, middle-aged man in golden robes slowly walked out of the manor. Although he was unhurried, each step of his covered several dozen meters. He arrived at the main entrance with a little more than ten steps, before politely bowing to the black-robed man.

You Zixing was the same genius of the clan who had reached Saint Ruler in less than a thousand years. He had also become a deeply-valued disciple of an Imperial Protector of the empire. At

the same time, he was the patriarch of the Bloodcloud clan.

Afterward, the clan filled with blurs. Several Heaven Saint Masters and a group of Earth Saint Masters hurried over from all directions, all gathering behind You Zixing. They stared at the black-robed man sternly, unsure about his intentions.

The black-robed man stood dead-straight, like a stick outside the Bloodcloud clan's doors. He stared in a daze at the two large words—Bloodcloud Clan—written on the amethyst board above the main entrance. His expression was extremely mixed, filled with reminiscence, sorrow, and anger.

“I never thought that Hellfire City would change so much after leaving for fifty years. The once-prosperous clan from then has also become memories of the past; nothing of it remains now. Nothing,” murmured the black-robed man. His sorrow grew deeper and deeper, before quickly turning into an icy killing intent. In that moment, all the pain and reminiscence in his eyes disappeared. It all became abnormally cold.

Suddenly, the man stabbed his sword into the ground. A terrifying storm of energy erupted, charging toward the Bloodcloud clan with an unstoppable force, as if it was under someone's control.

“Senior, what are your intentions?” You Zixing paled in surprise, immediately backpedaling. At the same time, Saint Force gushed out of his body, turning into a barrier to protect himself as well as the experts of his clan.

No one sustained any injuries from the terrifying storm of energy, but the main entrance and walls of the clan were not as fortunate. All of them collapsed, throwing dust into the air. Even the board hanging above the main entrance fell down.

The black-robed man advanced with a single step. He threw a punch at the board as it was falling, turning it into dust.

More and more people gathered from within the clan. All the guards as well as many clansmen had come, all hiding behind You Zixing as they stared in shock at the collapsed walls and entrance.

The disturbance at the clan alerted nearby people as well. Very soon, many people gathered from all directions to watch what was happening. There were even a few Heaven Saint Masters hanging several hundred meters in the air as they watched from afar.

You Zixing's complexion became extremely horrible. He growled, "I am You Zixing. My master is Imperial Protector Mo Jian. Senior, may I ask if my clan has offended you in any way? Please enlighten me."

The man finally looked at You Zixing. With an icy, emotionless gaze, he said, "Do you know who I am?"

You Zixing observed the man carefully, and a sliver of doubt appeared in his eyes. He said, "Junior is very limited in his knowledge, so I hope senior can forgive me." You Zixing dared not be impolite. He could already tell that the person before him was

someone on the level of his master from presence alone. It would be extremely difficult to protect his life even with his master if he offended someone at a level like that.

“My name is Bi Dao,” the black-robed man said emotionlessly.

You Zixing immediately jolted all over when he heard the name. He became shocked as he cried out, “What! Your surname is Bi! Are you a person of the Bi family?” You Zixing’s heart began to churn as great fear began to pervade his insides. The manor of his Bloodcloud clan was constructed where the Bi family originally belonged.

Fifty years ago, the news of how the Bi family had been wiped out in a single night shook up the entire city. Now, not only did the Bloodcloud clan replace the Bi family as the number one clan, they even took the Bi family’s territory. If a member of the Bi family with terrifying strength accidentally connected the Bloodcloud clan to the destruction of his family, You Zixing could not imagine the possible consequences his clan would face.



## Chapter 1074: Bi Dao's Revenge

---

Bi Dao's right eye looked rather demonic, as if a will-o'-wisp was leaping about inside. He then took a step forward and arrived before You Zixing in an instant. He placed the Heaven-quaking Sword on the shoulder of You Zixing. With its tremendous pressure, he said, "Speak, who was responsible for wiping out my Bi family all those years ago?"

"I don't know, I don't know. Senior, I really don't know. It has nothing to do with my Bloodcloud clan." You Zixing was utterly terrified. The pressure from the King Armament seemed to invade his soul, and he could not even think of resisting in that moment.

He was a Saint Ruler, but only someone who had reached that level recently. He still belonged to the First Heavenly Layer.

A dense killing intent flashed through Bi Dao's eyes, "Then is there still any use to leave you around if you don't know?" With that, Bi Dao swung the Heaven-quaking Sword before You Zixing could explain, beheading him. At the same time, a great energy shot out from the sword and into You Zixing's head, wiping out his soul.

A talented Saint Ruler died just like this.

The light in Bi Dao's right eye danced about crazily. "God dammit, you brat, why did you kill him? Didn't you hear that his master was an Imperial Protector of the Karl Empire? Y-y- y-you drive me insane! You're just causing problems for me," venerable

Poisonsword's enraged voice immediately rang through Bi Dao's head with the death of You Zixing.

Bi Dao's face remained the same, completely ignoring the venerable Poisonsword's cries. He slowly swept his gaze over the manor of the Bloodcloud clan, and he murmured, "This place belongs to the Bi family. It will always belong to the Bi family. No one can take this sacred piece of land away. I'll kill whoever does." Bi Dao spoke very softly, but it was filled with killing intent. Every member of the Bloodcloud clan heard what he said clearly.

He then gazed past the people of the Bloodcloud clan and continued, "Who is the one responsible for the Bi family back then? Speak and I will spare you."

Everyone was pale-faced. Their legs trembled since they were utterly frightened. No one dared to say anything. You Zixing was a Saint Ruler, yet he was slain without even being able to fight back. That affected them all greatly.

Killing intent surged within Bi Dao's eyes. He murmured, "Since you don't know, you can all go die." Bi Dao slowly raised the Heaven-quaking Sword, before swinging it down with lightning speed.

Boooooooooom!

With a great sound from the center of Hellfire City, the greatest clan in the city was wiped out in an instant. No one was left alive, suffering a fate similar to the Bi family all those years ago. The

luxurious manor was reduced to ruins.

The destruction of the Bloodcloud clan shook the entire city very soon, astounding everyone. Countless people went to see exactly what was happening.

Bi Dao stood in the ruins of the clan with his arms crossed as he zoned out at the floor. His eyes were dull and filled with reminiscence, as if he was trying as hard as he could to think back to all the times from before.

The King Armament was stabbed into a tough piece of rock by his side. It radiated with a great pressure, causing everyone in the surroundings to shiver in fear. No one dared to approach him, watching on from afar as sounds of discussions constantly rang out.

A huge stone pillar stood behind Bi Dao, and on it was carved some large forceful words:

“A descendent of the Bi family has returned with the beast fur. Come get it.”

A powerful clan that was equivalent to hermit clans had just been wiped out in an instant. It may not have been much on the continent where conflict never ended, but it caused a huge uproar in Hellfire City.

A group of guards immediately hurried from the city lord's

manor to where the clan was after they heard the news. However, they hid in the crowd as they watched from afar, unwilling to reveal their presences. They felt extremely frightened when they saw how the clan had been reduced to rubble.

All the other large clans in the city arrived where the had been Bloodcloud clan as well. Without a single exception, all of them hid in the distance, fearfully staring at the black figure in the ruins. To all of them, the black figure seemed like a demon from hell. Bi Dao was that terrifying.

The huge pillar in the ruins became the center of attention as well. When they saw the words carved on it, many people immediately guessed Bi Dao's identity. He was actually a member of the Bi family that had been wiped out fifty years ago.

An old man in dragon robes and a crown sat in the study of the imperial palace in the Karl Empire as he read in interest. There was only him in the quiet study, but powerful presences erupted from the corners of the room from time to time.

The old man was the emperor of the Karl Empire. He was not very powerful, but he possessed great authority.

The way the Karl Empire was controlled differed from how the Holy Empire was controlled. On the surface, the Holy Empire seemed to be controlled by the imperial family, but true control was actually in the hands of the three great clans. The imperial family was just a puppet to the three clans. Even the position as emperor would be switched between members of the three clans.

The Karl Empire, on the other hand, completely fell to the control of the imperial family. It was the same as the Felicity Empire.

At this moment, the space around the emperor rippled slightly and a man shrouded in a black cloak silently appeared. He passed on a letter in his hands politely and said, “Your majesty, this is an urgent letter from Hellfire City.”

The emperor looked up before slowly putting down the book in his hand. He took the urgent letter and began to read it. A while later, he furrowed his brows, “The Bloodcloud clan of Hellfire City has actually been wiped out, and even You Zixing is dead. You Zixing reached Saint Ruler in five hundred years and was highly likely of becoming a Saint King. Sigh, it really is a pity for such a genius to die before he could fully mature.” The emperor folded up the letter and then passed it back to the cloaked man. He said, “Go, take this letter to Imperial Protector Mo Jian.”

“Yes sir!” The cloaked man politely replied, before disappearing with the letter.

In the depths of the imperial palace, a white-robed, wrinkly, old man sat on a cushion with his eyes closed. He seemed extremely ordinary and possessed no eye-catching characteristics, other than the fact that his robes seemed to be rather expensive.

“Sir Imperial Protector, Enshrouded One has come under orders from the emperor to deliver this letter.” Suddenly, a polite and

somewhat emotionless voice rang out from outside.

“Come in!” The old man called out without even opening his eyes.

The door opened and the cloaked man entered with his head lowered. He walked in softly from outside and courageously passed the letter to the old man.

The old man slowly opened his eyes. His eyes were profound, like the vast night sky. He slowly raised his hand to accept the letter and began reading it.

The next moment, his face abruptly changed. His nonchalant gaze turned into a glare in an instant. Two streaks of light actually shot out of his eyes like blades. He was extremely terrifying, causing the space before him to tremble slightly.

“You Zixing’s actually been slain in Hellfire City. How dare they, how dare they! Who dares to do something like this? To even kill a disciple of mine, of Mo Jian!” The old man became enraged and suddenly stood up from the cushion. The letter in his hand had turned to dust.

“Hmph, I’d like to see just exactly who it is who dares to be so reckless and completely disregard any respect for me within the Karl Empire.” The old man was completely pale. With a swing of his arm, a crack immediately formed in the space beside him, warping into a Space Gate. Taking a step, he vanished.

Bi Dao stood in the ruins of the Bloodcloud clan like a sculpture. He did not move even after a very long time, while more and more people gathered in the surroundings, maintaining a distance of a thousand meters from him. All of them pointed at the ruins of the clan and actively discussed the event. The Bi family of Hellfire City from fifty years ago, which had almost forgotten by people, slowly returned to all their memories as well.

“A descendent of the Bi family has returned with the beast fur. Come get it—maybe the destruction of the Bi family had something to do with this beast fur?”

“For the descendent of the Bi family to return in such a brazen fashion, he probably wants to lure out the culprit who devastated his family all those years ago and then take revenge...”

“But just what level of strength does this descendent possess? Even You Zixing, a Saint Ruler, wasn’t his opponent. This is just too frightening...”

...

Discussions constantly rose from the crowd. Though, the words carved into the pillar behind Bi Dao had answered many of their questions.

Suddenly, a colorful Space Gate appeared in the air about the ruins. Before the person who had created the space gate even emerged, a vast presence blanketed the surroundings, stretching out in a bold manner. It actually enveloped the entire city.

Everyone in Hellfire City stopped what they were doing at that moment. They stared at the sky in shock. Many of them could not see the Space Gate high up in the air, but they could feel where the presence was coming from.

Bi Dao finally began to faintly move in the ruins of the Bloodcloud clan. He slowly raised his head and glared at the Space Gate in the air. His expression did not change.

However, Bi Dao's right eye flashed vigorously. Venerable Poisonsword exasperated voice rang out in his head, "A Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King. It's a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King! Bi Dao you brat! You've actually provoked a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King! God dammit, if you don't want to live anymore, at least don't drag me to my death as well! Experts like these may have been nothing to me when I was at my peak, but my current condition... Sigh, you sure have made it disastrous for me now."



# Chapter 1075: The Saint King Mo Jian

---

Two different kinds of light flickered in Bi Hai's eyes. He seemed to completely ignore venerable Poisonsword's anger and stared at the Space Gate in the air emotionlessly. His eye that remained normal revealed some sternness.

The Heaven-quaking Sword erupted from the rock it had been stabbed into. It became coated in a thick layer of energy, shattering the rock. It then flew into Bi Dao's hand as if it possessed a spirit.

After blanketing the surroundings with a violent presence, a white-robed, wrinkly old man slowly emerged from the Space Gate. Immediately, an indomitable might began to radiate from him, deeply shocking everyone in the city. It was like the descent of a supreme lord.

The old man looked down at everyone like a king lording over his citizens. His face was prideful and cold while his eyes shined with interest. He stared closely at Bi Dao who stood in the ruins and growled, "Was it you who killed my disciple?"

Bi Dao did not fear him. He stared at the old man and emotionlessly asked, "You must be You Zixing's master, the Imperial Protector of the Karl Empire, Mo Jian."

"Correct, that is me!" Mo Jian coldly replied.

Bi Dao's gaze remained icy, "The land beneath me belongs to my Bi family. No one can take it. I'll kill whoever tries."

Mo Jian furrowed his brows slightly with that. He seemed to stare at Bi Dao in disbelief, “You’re a member of the Bi family?” The Bi family was a great clan that possessed a Saint Ruler in the past, so even Mo Jian had heard about the clan before. What he did not understand was when did an expert like this appear in the Bi family?

“Correct!” Bi Dao’s face remained the same as before.

Mo Jian’s face grew colder, “Since you’re a member of the Bi family, you’re also someone of the Karl Empire. In other words, you’re no outsider. However, you killed my disciple, so you have to give me an explanation for this.”

“If you want an explanation, I’ll give you one,” growled Bi Dao. A vast battle intent immediately erupted from him, surging into the sky. It caused the wind and clouds to churn. The Heaven-quaking Sword in his hand also erupted with a shocking sword Qi.

“Bi Dao, my strength is far from my peak right now. I can’t let you waste it like this. Don’t resist, I’ll take over your body. This battle needs to be completed as soon as possible, or both of us will end up dead once all of my energy is expended,” the venerable elder’s voice rang in Bi Dao’s head.

Bi Dao said nothing and slowly lowered his head. At that moment, no one realized that the light in Bi Dao’s left eye quickly vanished, becoming lifeless in the blink of an eye. Afterward, an odd light suddenly appeared in that left eye, flashing about. It was

filled with an evil feeling.

Now, both of Bi Dao's eyes had become demonic, as if two will-o'-wisps were dancing around inside.

Unexpectedly, Bi Dao rose from the ground, shooting into the sky like a rocket. The Heaven-quaking Sword in his hand also erupted with a bright green light. It was a potent poison.

Not only was venerable Poisonsword powerful, he was someone who frequently used poison. His poison was no less potent than Nubis' venom.

Mo Jian could not help but furrow his brows when he saw how resolutely Bi Dao behaved, ready to give it all into the battle. Although You Zixing was his disciple in name, their relationship as master and disciple did not exist at all. Mo Jian indeed was greatly angered when he heard about You Zixing's death, but that was mainly over the disrespect rather than the actual death. After all, his disciple had been killed in the territory of the Karl Empire. That was a provocation and insult in his eyes.

Mo Jian originally thought that the person who killed You Zixing was a Saint Ruler, which is why he hurried over angrily. However, once he arrived above the city and discovered that the murderer was a Saint King just like him, many of his thoughts of revenge disappeared. He could not offend a Saint King over someone who did not even treat him as a master, especially due to the fact that the Saint King was also a member of the Karl Empire and had only come to destroy the Bloodcloud clan. As a result, Mo Jian lost interest in pursuing this matter.

Asking for an explanation from Bi Dao was just a way for him to set up a way out of the situation. He had never thought that not only would Bi Dao refuse to cooperate, he would even come at him threateningly, throwing him into a temporary dilemma.

“Heaven-quaking Sword! Cloud-piercer!” Bi Dao had already struck out before Mo Jian could prepare himself. With a loud bellow, poisonous gas immediately surged out of the sword in his hands. The deep green light completely shrouded the sword, which was thrust out with a vast energy.

The sword disappeared the moment it was thrust forward. It arrived before Mo Jian in an odd manner within the next moment, and the potent poison fused perfectly with the terrifying energy. It stabbed toward Mo Jian mercilessly.

Mo Jian immediately turned solemn. He could clearly feel just how powerful this strike was, shocking him greatly. Only until that point did he suddenly realize that Bi Dao’s presence alternated between strong and weak, but it was no weaker than himself. He could even feel mysteries of the world beyond the Fifth Heavenly Layer of Saint King in the strike, which utterly astounded him.

Without any hesitation, Mo Jian drew his Saint Weapon as fast as he could. His weapon was a huge one-handed sword that was the width of a palm, and as soon as it appeared, the vast quantities of energy within him surged into the sword. He stabbed out with all his might, making it collide with the Heaven-quaking Sword.

Boom!

With a deafening sound, the two terrifying energies wildly smashed into each other. They immediately caused the surrounding space to rupture, forming a black hole over thirty meters across. The surroundings violently shook.

After the clash, the Heaven-quaking Sword turned around and returned to Bi Dao's hand. Mo Jian's body, on the other hand, shook violently, and his complexion immediately became rather ugly. He was not injured after blocking Bi Dao's attack, but he fell into a disadvantageous position. The potent poisonous gas also entered his body. He had rarely ever come across a poisonous gas like this, and it was extremely powerful. It forced him to use fifty percent of his power to suppress it.

Bi Dao floated emotionlessly in the air with his sword as the light in his eyes constantly flickered. He coldly said, "Is this enough of an explanation? If it's not enough, I can provide you with an even more satisfying one."

Mo Jian stared at Bi Dao in shock. He paid close attention to Bi Dao's eyes. He could feel that the person before him was rather strange just from his instincts, but he could not tell exactly where this strangeness came from.

Mo Jian inhaled deeply and slowly calmed himself down. After a moment of peace, he could not help but swallow his pride, "Sir is also a member of the Karl Empire. It truly is worthy of celebration for another great expert to appear in my empire. My failure of a disciple was looking for it himself for taking up your clan's

territory. He deserved much more than death.” Mo Jian gave in. In the clash earlier, he knew that he was definitely not Bi Dao’s opponent. Gaining such a powerful enemy over someone who did not even act like a disciple was not a smart choice.

Mo Jian paused slightly before continuing, “Your strength is extraordinary, and you are also a member of the Karl Empire. If you are willing, you are welcome to take up the position as Imperial Protector at any time.” With that, Mo Jian stuck around no longer and flew away.

“Wait, just who wiped out the Bi clan back then?” Bi Dao coldly asked.

Mo Jain froze and glanced at the huge pillar in the ruins. He said, “I spent most of my time in seclusion within the palace, so it has already been several hundred years since I last meddled with worldly affairs. If you want to find your enemy, you are welcome to come find the emperor in the palace. I believe his majesty will be very willing to assist you.”

Mo Jian left hurriedly through a space gate. Bi Dao also descended from the sky, returning to the ruins. The flickering light in his eyes also slowly calmed down, until all that was left was a sharp gaze.

“Brat, stay a little more composed for me in the future. Just that exhausted twenty percent of my power. If it weren’t for my foresight to use supreme strength to deter that person right from the get-go, we’d probably still be fighting right now. If we get stuck in a battle of endurance, we would lose for sure.” Venerable

Poisonsword's angry voice rang through Bi Dao's head.

Bi Dao did not respond. He focused his attention on his dantian. In there was a thumb-sized pearl that floated quietly. It was completely composed of energy, extremely terrifying energy.

The pearl was the venerable's power. It had been sealed through a special method, and the venerable could use it at his will while Bi Dao could only use a tiny portion of it. Once all the power was exhausted, it would be extremely difficult to recover. The power sealed within was indeed twenty percent less than before.

Bi Dao did not go to the imperial palace of the Karl Empire. He waited there silently in the ruins. He had a feeling that those people would definitely come.

In the blink of an eye, night had already descended, blotting the entire world with darkness. In an extremely desolate region of the continent, a huge, jet-black divine hall silently stood in a mountain range. It radiated with a chilling aura. It seemed like a place where demons lived, enough to make people shiver in fear.

"Reporting to the Yama, a descendant of the Bi family has appeared in Hellfire City of the Karl Empire. He has carved the fact that he had returned with the beast fur into a stone pillar. What should we do, Yama?" A vague, evil-sounding voice sounded in the dark palace.

"What? A person of the Bi family has returned to Hellfire City with the beast fur? Is that true?" A husky voice rang out from the

pitch-black hall. It sounded like the shrieks of ghosts.

“It is completely true. However, he seems to be very powerful. He fought off an Imperial Protector of the empire without suffering defeat.”

“A member of the Bi family has returned to Hellfire City with the beast fur. Looks like he knows the destruction of his clan fifty years ago was caused by the beast fur. However, we have to obtain the beast fur now that it has appeared once again. It doesn't matter just how powerful that person is. He can't stop as. Send the orders to summon the ten Protector Kings to accompany me to Hellfire City.”



## Chapter 1076: Trapped in Yama Hall (One)

---

In the blink of an eye, seven days had passed since the Bloodcloud clan had been wiped out in Hellfire City. During those seven days, news regarding the event swept through Karl Empire like a storm. Since the person who had wiped them out in less than ten minutes was a member of the Bi family, that news became the biggest a drawing point. Afterward, various rumors appeared regarding the descendent of the Bi family as well as the destruction of the Bi family fifty years ago. They crazily spread across the Karl Empire.

The imperial family of the Karl Empire did not respond in regards to how the Bloodcloud family was wiped out. Ever since their Imperial Protector Mo Jian had come back several days ago, they did nothing, indicating that they did not wish to interfere with Bi Dao's matters. After all, Bi Dao was also a member of the empire, and he was a Saint King. He was an existence that the imperial family wished to pull over, so why would they take offense over the death of a Saint Ruler?

During those seven days, Bi Dao stood unmoving in the ruins of the Bloodcloud clan. He did not even take a single step from that place. The Heaven-quaking Sword remained stabbed into the ground beside him. Its luster was gone and it seemed extremely ordinary, but the pressure it possesses still existed. It slowly pervaded the surroundings, no longer making them seem so ordinary.

A large crowd of people remained in the surroundings of the ruins, watching on from afar. During those few days, people had come and left. There were even a great group of people who had come from several thousand kilometers away just to see the awe of

a Saint King.

Very soon, darkness descended on the earth once more. The bustling city gradually began to quieten down, and the people in the surroundings all slowly dispersed. Only Bi Dao remained where he was, disregarding any fatigue.

Bi Dao could not help but think of everything that had once happened right now. Countless faces of the Bi family flashed through his head one by one, and his cold gaze gained some gentleness.

“So many years have passed. I wonder how Xiangtian is right now. He’s the only descendent left of my Bi family. I hope he can survive...”

“Sister, once I take revenge for the destruction of the clan, I’ll go hunt down the people who murdered you. Even if I have to search to the ends of the earth, I will find them and use their blood to hold a ceremony to remember you. Sister, rest well. Your brother won’t let you die for nothing.” Bi Dao was filled with deep sorrow. When the Bi family had been wiped out all those years ago, only he and his sister survived. Now that Bi Yuntian was dead, all that was left in the family was him.

Suddenly, loneliness began to pour out of Bi Dao’s heart. He felt so lonely at the moment, as if he was the only one left from the glorious Bi family all those years ago.

He had always remained in the Soul-claiming Mountains in

recent years, having only left a few days ago. He had not learned about the major events occurring across the Tian Yuan Continent. He still had no idea that his sister had been revived by Jian Chen, while his nephew was no longer a mere Saint Ruler, now a great Saint King.

Suddenly, a cold breeze gently blew past him. The surrounding sounds seemed to vanish in that instant, and the city seemed to become a haunted place of deathly silence.

Bi Dao's head immediately cleaned up, and he dismissed his random thoughts. He slowly raised his head and looked around emotionlessly. Ten figures had appeared in the surroundings silently at some time. They seemed to have fused with the darkness; although they stood there out in the open, it was extremely easy for people to miss them, making it very difficult to sense them.

The ten figures stood there silently like that. No one said anything, nor did any presences leak out, causing the atmosphere to become rather odd.

Burning killing intent immediately appeared in Bi Dao's eyes when he looked at the ten people surrounding him. He could clearly remember that when the Bi family was devastated several dozen years ago, it was done by a group of people in similar attire.

"You've finally come. I've waited here for you for several days already." Bi Dao's voice was extremely icy as killing intent radiated from him without restraint. He slowly drew the Heaven-quaking sword from the ground, adding a vast pressure to his killing intent.

The ten people said nothing, but some greed appeared in their cold gazes once they all laid their eyes on the sword in Bi Dao's hand.

"Speak, who are you? What organization do you belong to?" Bi Dao continued after not hearing the people respond.

The ten people stood there silently, as if they were a part of the darkness. No one replied to Bi Dao's questions.

"No wonder we couldn't find any beast fur when we wiped out the Bi family back then, so it's actually been taken away when a survivor of the family fled." At this moment, a husky voice rang out from nowhere. It was impossible to discern its origins.

One of Bi Dao's eyes began to violently flicker. He stared fixedly at the space before him.

A black figure gradually appeared in the empty darkness. It seemed so odd.

"Just who are you?" Bi Dao stared at the figure. Just from instinct, he could tell that the person before him was the leader of the rest.

"Survivor of the Bi family, hand over the beast fur if you want to know who I am," sneered the black figure.

Killing intent surged in Bi Dao's eyes. He coldly said, "If you want the beast fur, then take it from me, but you might not have the abilities with just the eleven of you." With that, the Heaven-quaking Sword in Bi Dao's hand began to shine with dazzling green light. The potent poison fused perfectly with the terrifying energy erupting from the sword.

Swish! Bi Dao stabbed out with the sword, directly targeting the head of the leading figure.

"You really are a Saint King," the black-clothed man involuntarily called out with his hoarse voice. His gaze immediately became stern, and with a flip of his hand, an exquisite black dagger appeared. It was only palm-sized, but it emitted a dense black glow. A cold light could vaguely be seen flickering on it through the dark glow.

"Kiss of the Venomous Scorpion!" The figure called out and the dagger immediately shot out as a blur.

With a violent boom, the dagger collided with the Heaven-quaking Sword. The sound erupted in the desolate night, alarming the entire city. Countless people woke up from their sleep and lit candles, flooding the city with light in just a few seconds.

Bi Dao and the man were evenly matched in the clash.

"Survivor of the Bi family, you really are very strong, but you can't keep the beast fur. Why don't you hand it over obediently, and I'll spare your life. Otherwise, today next year will be when

people visit your grave,” sneered the man.

Bi Dao said nothing. He wielded the Heaven-quaking Sword in his right hand while the venerable elder’s voice rang out in his head, “Brat, you won’t be able to beat him even if you use up all of my energy. Let me deal with him.”

The light in Bi Dao’s eyes became odd once more. He relinquished control over his body, handing it over to the venerable Poisonsword once again.

As soon as the venerable took over, an indescribably vast presence immediately began to radiate from him. He seemed to fuse with the surroundings, as if he had turned into the world in that moment.

“Even a mere Saint King of the Fourth Heavenly Layer dares to be so arrogant? Die!” Venerable Poisonsword sneered in disdain after gaining control. He slowly raised the Heaven-quaking Sword and stabbed out.

Not only did the strike contain a great energy and potent poison, it possessed the profound mysteries of the world. Not only did a strike from venerable Poisonsword contain much more energy than the one from Bi Dao, its might was multiplied several times over.

“Phantom’s Flurry!” The man’s gaze became even sterner. Crying out, the dagger in his hand began to wildly dance about, forming a string of afterimages that filled the space before him. All of the

afterimages forcefully shot out.

However, the afterimages that struck the Heaven-quaking Sword all vanished with a bang. The sword seemed like an invincible sword, advancing like a hot knife through butter. It arrived before the man in an instant and impaled his chest.

The man roared out and immediately shot back. He separated from the sword and bellowed out, “Slaughter of the Ten Kings!”

The gazes of the ten darkly-clothed men in the surroundings all changed. Vast presences erupted from every single one of them, and they knit together in the middle of the air to form an even greater presence. Afterward, the ten of them drew their Saint Weapons at the same time, sending a powerful sword Qi into the air simultaneously.

The ten darkness-attributed sword Qis weaved together in the air and rapidly formed the face of a demon. It charged toward Bi Dao who was below.

‘Bi Dao’ could not help but sneer in even more disdain. He mocked, “An attack through a secret from the fusion of ten Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers is only as powerful as a Saint King of the Second Heavenly Layer. Is this all you have?” As he said that, he casually stabbed at the sky and a powerful sword Qi shot out, destroying the demon face.

“Let’s go!” The man with the dagger did not stick around. Shouting out, he immediately turned into a black figure, shooting

off into the distance. The ten Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers did not hesitate either, silently fleeing into the distance.

“Where do you think you’re going? Stay right here!” Bi Dao regained control of his body and pursued them with bloodshot eyes. He had found the people who had wiped out the Bi family all those years ago after great effort, so how could he let them escape so easily?



## Chapter 1077: Trapped in Yama Hall (Two)

---

Bi Dao chased the eleven black-clothed men, leaving Hellfire City very quickly. Although they had only clashed twice in the city, the disturbance was undoubtedly great. Everyone in the city was alerted. There were even quite a few Heaven Saint Masters who quickly flew over to where the Bloodcloud clan had been, wishing to witness a battle between experts to assist them with their future cultivation.

However, they were fated to see nothing. When they arrived at the ruins of the Bloodcloud clan, no one was present. Even the descendant of the Bi clan who had always remained there was gone.

For some time, the fighting that rang through the city along with the disappearance of the Bi family descendant sent clouds of suspicion into the minds of the citizens of the city. The occurrences also lead to the proliferation of various rumors.

“The descendant of the Bi family killed Imperial Protector Mo Jian’s disciple. The Imperial Protector has gathered his friends to capture him...”

“The descendant of the Bi family has aggravated a great expert by wiping out the Bloodcloud clan and has been taken away...”

“It’s probably because the Bi family descendant has gained the attention of some expert of the continent through the beast fur, leading to another intense conflict. He can not win, so he has

already fled...”

“I think it’s extremely likely that the people who wiped out the Bi family all those years ago have appeared again. After fighting, they realized they weren’t his enemy, so they fled. The descendant pursued them...”

“The descendant of the Bi family is so strong that even Imperial Protector Mo Jian could do nothing to him. I don’t think there’s anyone on the continent who would want to provoke him. I think it’s because his enemies have appeared...”

...

Various rumors filled every inch of the city. The matter had already gained the attention of everyone in the city, but no one knew the truth. All they could do was guess.

Outside Hellfire City, Bi Dao pursued the eleven people in a threatening manner as wild gusts of wind blew past him. He was so fast that he seemed to have become a faint blur.

Before him, the ten Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers seemed to have fused together. They used a special secret technique to merge all their powers, maintaining a distance from Bi Dao throughout the pursuit. Every time Bi Dao was about to catch up to them, their speed would skyrocket and widen the distance between them in an instant.

Very soon, Bi Dao had already pursued them at full speed for one whole day and night. They moved extremely quickly, traversing several hundred thousand kilometers in just a day.

“Brat, this doesn’t look right. They seem to be intentionally drawing you in with how they’re acting. Be a little careful.” Venerable Poisonsword’s voice rang out in Bi Dao’s head.

“Don’t worry, I’m not an idiot. I know exactly what I should be doing,” Bi Dao coldly replied. Now that his enemies were right before him, his killing intent boiled inside. He knew that he could finally return the debt of blood from fifty years ago.

In the blink of an eye, another three days passed. Bi Dao had already traveled more than a million kilometers as he pursued the group of people. It was late, and thick clouds blanketed the sky, completely obscuring the light of the moon. Thus, the night was extremely dark, so dark that vision was severely limited.

After chasing them for four days, Bi Dao continued to tail them with no intention of giving up. His gaze was extremely determined as he thought, “The people who devastated my Bi family are much stronger than I had imagined. They actually have a Saint King and ten Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers. If I want to take revenge, I need to borrow venerable Poisonsword’s power. It’ll be impossible otherwise with my talent.

“Hmph, the venerable elder’s soul shares my body. I do know that you are rapidly growing accustomed to my body, and once you have completely adapted, you’ll probably forcefully take over my body and devour my soul. At that time, it doesn’t matter if I’ve

successfully taken revenge. The outcome will all be the same, so why shouldn't I use everything I have? It's not like my life belongs to me anymore."

Bi Dao continued to chase down the eleven people without any fear with a mindset like that. Nothing could stop his advance, not even immense danger, because he knew that it would be the venerable elder's problem if he came across great dangers, not his own.

Right now, all Bi Dao thought about was revenge!

The eleven people entered a desolate mountain range with Bi Dao. They quickly made their way through the dark mountains, before fleeing into a pitch-black palace.

Bi Dao saw the giant palace, but he did not hesitate at all. He continued into the palace without slowing down at all.

"Brat, stop! Don't go in there, it's a trap!" The venerable elder's panic-stricken voice rang out in Bi Dao's head. The light in Bi Dao's eyes also fluctuated in brightness as the venerable elder attempted to forcefully take control.

"Venerable Poisonsword, the strongest of my enemies is only at the Fourth Heavenly Layer of Saint King. They pose no threat to you, and this is their lair. I will completely flip the lair upside down and turn it into a river of blood and corpses," Bi Dao roared out inside. His flickering eyes quickly stabilized, replaced by a cold determination.

The body belonged to Bi Dao after all. Bi Dao successfully suppressed venerable Poisonsword's attempt to steal his body.

“Bastard! Bi Dao you brat, don't be carried away by your hatred. Return to your senses! Stop, it's a trap inside! Don't go in! If you want to die, just don't drag me to my death as well!” The venerable elder was utterly exasperated as he roared out.

Bi Dao completely ignored what he said, entering the palace in the form of a black blur.

As soon as he made his way in, the main entrance immediately slammed shut. It was pitch-black inside, where nothing could be seen.

Suddenly, a scorching presence surged in. The temperature of the palace began to skyrocket and black flames appeared on the ground. It formed an odd formation, trapping Bi Dao.

“God dammit! This is a formation, brat! You've been trapped in the formation!” The venerable swore angrily as his hatred for Bi Dao seeped into his bones.

“Hahahahahaha! Survivor of the Bi family, welcome to the Yama Hall of the three great assassination organizations of the continent! You are our first guest in the past thousand years, so please enjoy the scenery of our hall!” A horrible voice appeared out of nowhere. It sounded like the sobs of a ghost, while its laughter seemed extremely sinister.

“God dammit, it’s actually the Yama Hall of the three famed assassination organizations of the continent! I’ve been trapped by them! Bi Dao you brat, you sure have brought disaster to me!” The venerable elder wailed powerlessly. If he was at his peak, he could try adventuring into the Yama Hall, but he was nowhere as powerful as he had been before in his current form as a soul. There was almost no hope for him to escape after being trapped here.

“So what about the Yama Hall? Venerable Poisonsword, you were a person who once stood at the apex of the continent. You didn’t even fear the ten protector clans, so how can a mere assassination organization stop you. I’ll let you take control of my body and take revenge for me,” Bi Dao said to the venerable elder. He could not help but think of his sister, and he sighed inside, “Sister, I’m useless. I might not be able to take revenge for you.”

“Brat, is there still any use if you let me gain control of your body? The Yama Hall is infamous. It has stood on the continent for over a hundred thousand years, so how can they be easily dealt with? Especially with how you intentionally entered their lair. Y-y-y-you drive me crazy,” venerable Poisonsword swore as he took control of Bi Dao’s body. Wielding the Heaven-quaking Sword in his right hand, he sternly stared at the surging black flames surrounding him.

“Heaven-quaking Sword, Heaven-cleaver!” Suddenly, he roared out and the sword immediately erupted with surging energy. With the sword raised up high, he stabbed at the ceiling of the palace.

With a loud boom, the entire structure began to violently

tremble. However, his devastating strike did nothing to the palace. Not even a crack had appeared.

“Hahahahaha, you still want to break out of this divine hall? I’d suggest you give up on that thought. This divine hall was created by a Saint Emperor, so unless you can deal a strike as powerful as a Saint Emperor, you can’t break through it.” The sinister laughter rang out from the dark room once more.

“What! It’s a divine hall!?” Venerable Poisonsword became ashen from the great shock. He lost all hope while his resentment for Bi Dao reached a limit. He was tempted to rip Bi Dao into pieces and eat him alive.

A person wrapped in black robes sat on a throne in a hall at the very top of the structure. Below him sat ten black-clothed people in two rows dressed in the exact same fashion as him.

“Yama, the survivor of the Bi family has been trapped in the divine hall now. Should we kill him right now and take the beast fur from him?” A person below asked. His voice was icy-cold and completely emotionless.

The person on the throne was the Saint King who fought against Bi Dao with a dagger in Hellfire City and was repelled by venerable Poisonsword. He was one of the people who held the greatest power in the Yama Hall.

The ten people below him were the ten Protector Kings of the Yama Hall, only standing below the Yama in status.

“There’s no need to hurry. The survivor of the Bi family is very strong. He’s at least at the Sixth Heavenly Layer, so even though I can kill him, it’ll cost me quite a lot of effort. It’s not worth it. Since he has been trapped in the divine hall, he can’t escape. It’s a pity that the primary control of the divine hall is still in the hands of the former Yama. I can only use a small part of the divine hall’s power, so I can’t activate all the formations of the divine hall. Otherwise, would there still be a need for me to personally kill him? Just the power of the divine hall would be enough.”

“The former Yama’s been heavily injured and has been in seclusion for a thousand years already. I think he should have roughly recovered after a thousand years, so let’s wait for the former Yama to execute him.”

The Yama had no other choice. In the battle a thousand years ago against the Bloodsword sect, their organization was heavily damaged. They lost many experts and had yet to fully recover even now. Although they could kill Bi Dao right now, it would exhaust many experts, which was something they did not want to risk. All they could do was leave Bi Dao and the venerable Poisonsword alive, leaving them trapped within the divine hall.



# Chapter 1078: Breakthrough Obstructed

---

The disturbances in Hellfire City subsided very quickly. However, ever since the battle from that night ended, the descendant of the Bi family never appeared again.

A small, wooden hut stood alone on the tallest mountain of a mountain range over ten thousand kilometers away from the City of God. Even though it was buffeted by the cold wind all year round, it seemed to be deeply rooted to the ground. It stood there securely, without even swaying a little.

The layout of the hut was extremely simple, simple to the point where it was hard to believe that it was inhabited. Other than a wooden bed, a table, and a chair, there was nothing else. Everyone inside, however, was spotlessly clean.

On the bed lay a middle-aged beauty in a dark-green dress. She was elegant and her face radiated with a certain righteousness. She possessed a striking appearance, and even though she was already middle-aged, she possessed supreme beauty. A single glance would be enough to discern that she was an enchanting woman in the past.

Beside the bed sat a white-robed, middle-aged man. His face was filled with sorrow and pain, and he seemed rather haggard. He gently held the woman's white hand.

“Caiyun, you've slept for one whole year. I know that you only sealed yourself off from your aching heart and that you don't want

to wake up ever again...

“Caiyun, it’s me who can’t make it up to you. It’s me who has no right to see you. The one who should have suffered punishment like this should have been me, not you. Caiyun, why are you so silly...

“Caiyun, can you hear me? Don’t be so stubborn. Don’t be like this, alright? Wake up. Do you know that I feel horrible when I see you like this? Such agony...”

Hao Wu sat beside Zaar Caiyun, gently murmuring to himself as he held her hand. His face revealed the pain he felt.

Ever since he had brought Zaar Caiyun away from the City of God, she had always remained unconscious.

“Caiyun, maybe Mu’er can wake you up. Do I have to go find Mu’er?” Hao Wu murmured as bitterness filled him. He knew extremely well that Mu’er really hated both him and Zaar Caiyun. It would be virtually impossible to get her to awaken Zaar Caiyun with her zither music.

And if he really did try something like that, it would probably deepen the Heavenly Enchantress’ hatred for him.

“What should I do? Just what should I do? Caiyun, when are you going to wake up...”

In the blink of an eye, another two years passed. It had been three whole years since Jian Chen had arrived in Mercenary City. Jian Chen sat like a sculpture in the room Xiao Ling forged from energy deep below Mercenary City. He did not move at all, not even energy rippled from his body.

In the silent and ice-cold room, the space there seemed to pulse like a beating heart. A profound aura filled the surroundings, possessing the indescribable truths of the world.

Jian Chen sat there just like that, borrowing the mysteries of the world invoked by Xiao Ling to comprehend the truths of the world, as well as the laws of the world. After three years of hard work, the rate he improved at could not be described with words. He advanced from the Seventh Heavenly Layer to the Ninth Heavenly Layer in terms of comprehension during those three years and had stagnated at the Ninth Heavenly Layer for a whole year. He was at the peak right now, only an inch away from reaching the comprehension of a Saint King.

Bi Hai and Huang Tianba remained at the Seventh and Sixth Heavenly Layers respectively from two years ago. Their talents were nowhere near as great as Jian Chen's, so even with Xiao Ling's assistance, they failed to advance one minor cultivation level a year. However, the speed at which they comprehended the secrets meant it would require another three years before they could break through once more.

The reason why they had broken through together in just one year before was because they had stagnated at that level for several years already. They had already reached the peak, which was why

they could make a breakthrough so soon.

The two of them were still ravished with joy even though they had just made one break through in three years, as they would have to waste at least several decades or even over a hundred years to break through when they comprehended the mysteries by themselves. With Xiao Ling's assistance, the time required had been reduced several times over, perhaps even more than ten times over.

In three years, Huang Luan's strength increased quickly as well. She reached the Fourth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler, while only Chang Wuji and Yang Ling remained as Heaven Saint Masters.

Chang Wuji's talent was ordinary. He had consumed heavenly resources before, but he was virtually at the end of his thousand-year life. He seemed to have run out of momentum, so even with the assistance of the three beast furs, he failed to comprehend the mysteries of the world completely. He remained at the peak of Heaven Saint Master.

On the other hand, Yang Ling had not broken through, but he still had a lot of time ahead of him. As a result, breaking through was only a matter of time for him.

Suddenly, the mysteries of the world that filled Jian Chen's room began to pulse violently. The space around Jian Chen also seemed to react, trembling. The room began to distort. Jian Chen's figure also became blurrier and blurrier, until he disappeared in the distorting space.

The sunny sky above Mercenary City immediately began to darken. A thick layer of clouds rapidly appeared, enveloping the entire city. The clouds shrouded the sunlight, obscuring the sky. They rapidly expanded, covering a radius of a hundred thousand kilometers. They threw Mercenary City into darkness in that instance.

The sudden change in weather caused everyone in Mercenary City to stop what they were doing. At that moment, everyone raised their heads at the sky. All of them were filled with surprise and were curious, so they began discussing the changes all over the city.

No one knew what was happening. The speed at which the clouds had gathered was unbelievable. It did not seem like a storm at all.

Just as everyone discussed the sudden change in the clouds, a vast pressure suddenly appeared and pressed viciously down from space. It engulfed all of Mercenary City, and coupled with the pressure was the profound, incomprehensible mysteries of the world.

Immediately, everyone felt like a boulder was pressing against their chests, making it difficult for them to breathe. Some weaker people even felt like they were suffocating.

“These are the mysteries of the world. Someone’s broken through to Saint Ruler...”

“No, I’ve personally witnessed the birth of a Saint Ruler before. The pressure was never this great, and the mysteries of the world that descended were not as strong. Has someone become a Saint King?”

“The birth of a Saint Ruler is accompanied with five-colored rainbow clouds. If it’s a Saint King, there will be seven-colored rainbow clouds. Let’s just wait to see the color of the clouds to know if it’s a Saint Ruler or a Saint King...”

“Look, everyone, colors have appeared. The rainbow clouds have appeared...”

Experts were plentiful in Mercenary City, so a few experienced ones could see through the odd phenomenon of the clouds with a single glance. They immediately called out as envy filled their eyes.

Afterward, a dazzling multicolored light pierced through the darkness. It appeared in the thick layer of clouds and quickly became magnificent. It reached seven colors in total very soon, dyeing all the clouds. It was enchanting.

“It’s seven-colored! The clouds are seven-colored! A Saint Ruler’s broken through to Saint King...”

“Who has broken through? Is it an elder of Mercenary City? Looks like Mercenary City has gained another expert from today on...”

The crowd fell into a hubbub. Everyone was extremely excited. To personally witness the birth of a Saint King was something they could only experience through luck. There were just too few Saint Kings on the Tian Yuan Continent, and it would be difficult for a Saint King to appear even with several billions of people.

The appearance of the seven-colored rainbow clouds alerted all the high-ranking members of Mercenary City. With Tian Jian as their leader, a group appeared in the air as they stared at the clouds in the sky in amazement.

“Grand elder, just who has broken through in our Mercenary City? Why do I sense nothing in regard to this? Is it because the person who broke through isn’t in the city but elsewhere and Mercenary City just happens to lie in the radius of the rainbow clouds?” An elder politely asked from behind Tian Jian.

Tian Jian stared unblinkingly at the clouds in the sky as interest filled his face. He said, “The clouds are centered around Mercenary City. The person who has broken through is indeed in this city, but he has hidden himself very well. Even I cannot sense where he is.”

At this moment, an odd phenomenon suddenly appeared. The pressure that filled the surroundings rapidly weakened and in just a few seconds, it completely disappeared, as if it was never present. The rainbow clouds also began to dull, turning into nothing in a few seconds as well. A deep-blue sky reappeared.

Tian Jian furrowed his brows slightly when he saw this change. Shock filled his eyes, and he called out, “What’s happened? Why have the clouds disappeared?”

“When someone breaks through to Saint King, the clouds will remain for seven whole days. B-b- but why have the clouds dispersed so quickly right after they had formed? This has never happened before! This is unheard of! There is no record of this whatsoever!” An elder beside Tian Jian cried out in astonishment.

Tian Jian pondered the occurrence as he stared at the sky. After a while, he seemed to understand something, and he sighed. He said in pity, “That person’s failed his breakthrough.”

“Failed? How is that possible? Once the rainbow clouds appear, they are destined to succeed! How can failure appear? This truly is unheard of...”

All the elders of Mercenary City were utterly confused by how the rainbow clouds had completely disappeared after appearing for less than twenty seconds. They all doubted what they saw. A few knowledgeable people also reached a similar conclusion with their deductions, and they all sighed in pity. At that moment, many people felt sympathetic for the person who had failed his breakthrough.

It would truly be a great blow to the person breaking through since that person was just about to become an expert that no one would dare to anger on the continent, yet that person failed in the final moments.

Jian Chen snapped open his eyes deep under Mercenary City. He angrily stood up and yelled at the sword spirits in his sea of



consciousness, “Zi Ying, Qing Zuo, why have you come and made trouble? I almost would have become a Saint King, but I failed with what you did! Why are you stopping me from reaching Saint King?”

Everything was extremely successful as Jian Chen made his breakthrough. Just as he was about to reach Saint King, he had never thought that the sword spirits would suddenly interfere at this crucial moment, denying Jian Chen of his chance to reach Saint King.

# Chapter 1079: The Five Major Realms of the Sword

---

Jian Chen stood up angrily as regret and pity filled his heart. Saint King—that was something he had longed for for a very long time. Although reaching Saint King in terms of comprehension would not increase his strength, he could rip open Space Gates if he did.

When that happened, the size of the world did not matter, nor did the distance between two places. It would all just be a step away for Jian Chen. He would no longer need to rely on Rui Jin and Hei Yu if he wanted to go to some distant place.

Saint King was the level of cultivation Jian Chen had yearned for. He did not lack prowess in battle. He lacked cultivation.

“Master, you can’t continue your comprehension of the mysteries of the world because it’ll only be detrimental to you,” Qing Suo timidly explained as she sensed Jian Chen’s anger.

“Master, we stopped you from reaching Saint King for your own good. You can’t reach Saint King.” Zi Ying’s voice also rang out in Jian Chen’s head. It sounded extremely stubborn, as if he would obstruct Jian Chen no matter how angry Jian Chen became.

Jian Chen calmed down very quickly with that. He suppressed his anger and growled, “Zi Ying, Qing Suo, just what is this about? Why can’t I become a Saint King?”

“Master, you must take the Way of the Sword as your cultivation path. The Way of the Sword conflicts with the mysteries of the world you currently comprehended. The two cannot exist together, or they’ll affect your future cultivation greatly.

“Master, are you wondering why we did nothing to obstruct you when you went from the Seventh Heavenly Layer to the Ninth Heavenly Layer? Well, when your comprehension remains at the Ninth Heavenly Layer, Qing Suo and I still had the ability to forcefully purge your comprehension of the mysteries of the world, allowing master to embark on the Way of the Sword with no distractions in the future, but if master reaches Saint King in terms of comprehension, it will be extremely difficult for Qing Suo and I to purge your comprehension. This is why you cannot reach Saint King.”

“What? You even have to purge my comprehension later?” Jian Chen was astounded, “In other words, I will lose all my comprehension of the mysteries of the world, including the Saint Ruler abilities I currently possess?”

“Correct, but don’t worry too much master. Once you embark on the Way of the Sword, you will discover that it is much more powerful than the mysteries of the world you are currently comprehending,” said Zi Ying.

“Master, the Way of the Sword is publicly acknowledged as one of the most powerful pathways of cultivation. Before the Way of the Sword, the mysteries of the world are nothing. Unless the disparity in cultivation is vast, the Way of the Sword is invincible,”

said Qing Suo.

“Zi Ying, Qing Suo, is the Way of the Sword really as powerful as you’ve described it to be? If I do embark on the Way of the Sword, just what level of strength will I obtain?” Jian Chen was rather moved. He was a swordsman after all, so he had a special connection to the sword. The temptation he felt for the Way of the Sword just mentioned by Zi Ying and Qing Suo had reached a level that could even make him risk his life.

“Master, there are five major realms of cultivation for the Way of the Sword. They are Sword Origin, Sword Spirit, Sword Immortal, Sword Sage, and Sword God. These five realms do not represent certain levels of cultivation; they are like the Saint Tier, Heaven Tier, Earth Tier and Human Tier Battle Skills on the Tian Yuan Continent. They represent great battle prowess and supreme offensive power. However, the Way of the Sword is far, far greater than those battle skills on the Tian Yuan Continent. The disparity is basically a huge chasm. Even the weakest Sword Origin far exceeds Saint Tier Battle Skills by several times over.

“And once you reach the Sword Origin realm, every time you attack, every strike you make will far exceed the strength of Saint Tier Battle Skills. At the same time, they are unlike the Saint Tier Battle Skills which consume vast amounts of energy when they are used and cannot be used consecutively even by Saint Kings,” explained Zi Ying. He paused slightly, pondering a little before continuing, “The Way of the Sword is extremely suitable for master. If master embarks on this path of cultivation, you will possess a supreme advantage over others. If master reaches the Sword Origin realm, master will probably be no weaker than Saint Kings of the Ninth Heavenly Layer, while master will have no need

to fear even Saint Emperors if you reach the Sword Spirit realm. Also, the battle prowess gained by these realms will increase as master's base strength grows.”

The Way of the Sword was like a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. If it was given to an Earth Saint Master, they would be able to display the strength of a Heaven Saint Master, and if a Fifth Cycle Earth Saint Master cast it, they would even be able to heavily injure Heaven Saint Masters.

At the same time, if the same Heaven Tier Battle Skill was used by a Heaven Saint Master, the strength would be even greater.

Once one of the five major realms was reached, battle prowess and offensive capabilities that would be increased, not the person's base strength. At the same time, this boosted battle prowess would increase with the growth of base strength.

Jian Chen currently possessed the battle prowess of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King, but this was brought upon by the Emperor Armament. Without it, he would only be as powerful as a Saint King of the Third Heavenly Layer. That was Jian Chen's base strength. Although his comprehension of the mysteries of the world was far below that, the energy within him had reached the Third Heavenly Layer, which he could also use as he willed.

Jian Chen immediately became filled with excitement because of what the sword spirits said. He no longer resented them for obstructing his attempt to reach Saint King. Instead it was replaced by a powerful desire to learn the Way of the Sword.

“Master, do you still remember when you fought with Zaar Caiyun outside the City of God? You entered a wondrous state during that fight, unintentionally dealing an attack that exceeded your current strength. That was actually the Way of the Sword, but only the edge of the first realm. It’s just a pity that you don’t have your fated swords, or master would’ve reached the first realm long ago.” Zi Ying’s voice was filled with pity.

Jian Chen immediately thought back to when he fought Zaar Caiyun and reached an understanding. He murmured, “So I had touched the edge of the Way of the Sword back then. Now I know that that was actually the Way of the Sword.” Jian Chen looked forward to the Way of the Sword even more now. He felt like this was the cultivation pathway that suited him.

“Master, if you want to embark on the Way of the Sword, you need to obtain your fated swords. Only after successfully forging the Azulet swords can you comprehend that pathway and reach Sword Origin,” said Qing Suo. He also displayed much anticipation.

Ever since the sword spirits took Jian Chen as their master and brought his soul to the Tian Yuan Continent, Jian Chen’s future cultivation pathway was destined to be the Way of the Sword. It was just that he had never possessed his fated swords, delaying the time when he would step on the Way of the Sword. This was why Jian Chen was forced into a cultivation pathway that belonged to this world, so that he could survive.

The sword spirits had also been waiting for the day when the

Azulet swords would be forged after all these years. Only by forging the Azulet swords would Jian Chen gain his fated swords, allowing him to truly begin his journey on the Way of the Sword.

“The Azulet swords, the Azulet swords. It’s the Azulet swords again.” Jian Chen became troubled. The materials for the swords were just too difficult to find. Every single one could only be found through luck, so he could not obtain them just because he needed them.

Jian Chen gently sighed. He would never give up no matter how hard it would be to find the materials. Not only was this because of the two supreme swords he had longed for, it was also so that he could successfully comprehend the Way of the Sword and enter the first major realm, Sword Origin.

“Zi Ying, Qing Suo, just how many materials do I lack before I can forge the Azulet swords?” Jian Chen asked.

“There’s still four more. We already have some leads for one of them, which is the Heaven’s Soulstone master came across when you faced the assassination of Yama Hall. Although we’ve already obtained a little from that assassin, it’s nowhere near enough,” said Zi Ying.

“The Heaven’s Soulstone and the Yama Hall,” Jian Chen softly murmured as a gleam of cold light flashed through his eyes.

There was no longer any point for Jian Chen to stick around now that his breakthrough had been obstructed and that he could not

reach Saint King. After checking on Bi Hai and the others, he roused Huang Luan from her cultivation and bid farewell with Xiao Ling, before leaving with Huang Luan.

Although he wanted to leave Huang Luan there so she could continue her comprehension, the seal in Huang Luan's head had not been erased yet. As a result, he wanted to take Huang Luan to the protector clan and find a method to remove the secret technique. He could bring Huang Luan to the city at any time in the future and have Xiao Ling assist her in comprehending the mysteries of the world.

Xiao Ling unwillingly bid farewell to Jian Chen, before sending Jian Chen and Huang Luan to the surface of the earth. When the two of them appeared, the disturbance from the rainbow clouds still lingered about, so they could hear discussions regarding the clouds everywhere.

“Jian Chen, why are there so many people talking about seven-colored rainbow clouds and someone reaching Saint King? Are they talking about you? Have you reached Saint King now?” Huang Luan stared fixedly at Jian Chen with her large eyes as she asked in surprise. Affection filled her eyes as she looked at him.

Right now, Jian Chen's head was filled with matters regarding the Way of the Sword and the Azulet swords, so he had stopped caring about his failure to reach Saint King long ago. He could not help but smile after hearing what Huang Luan had said. He replied completely unperturbed, “They seem to be talking about me. I did indeed fail my breakthrough, so my comprehension is still at the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler.”



# Chapter 1080: Visiting the Protector Clan

---

“Jian Chen, the failure isn’t important. Your talent is supreme, so you’ll reach Saint King sooner or later,” Huang Luan comforted. Her face was filled with concern. She seemed worried that Jian Chen’s failure would affect his state of mind.

Jian Chen smiled wryly inside when he heard her concern. Once he began his journey of the Way of the Sword, the sword spirits would forcefully purge his comprehension of the mysteries of the world. He would also lose all his abilities as a Saint Ruler. Right now, breaking through to Saint King was no longer important.

Afterward, Jian Chen and Huang Luan visited the grand elder Tian Jian as well as Tie Ta who always stayed there. They talked for a little before leaving Mercenary City. Jian Chen and Huang Luan returned to the Changyang clan in Lore City through a Space Gate created by Rui Jin.

It had been three whole years since Jian Chen had last visited the Changyang clan. During that period of time, nothing really changed about the clan—other than Jian Chen’s second brother, Changyang Ke.

After seeking Jian Chen’s assistance that night, Jian Chen had ordered an exclusive alchemist of Flame City to refine a ten-thousand-year heavenly resource into a pill and deliver it to the Changyang clan when he last visited Flame City. After ingesting the pill, Changyang Ke immediately underwent an overwhelming change. His ordinary talent was completely raised to the level of a genius; not only did his strength increase, his rate of cultivation

also became extremely fast. He had become a Earth Saint Master now, and he was at the Third Cycle.

At night, Jian Chen and Huang Luan arrived in the fragrant garden behind the clan. Huang Luan had changed into a luxurious, snow-white dress in an attempt to dress like the young lady of a large clan. Any heroic spirits present on her had completely disappeared. She seemed more like a loving, considerate, and well-educated wife.

Huang Luan gently hugged Jian Chen's arm. She leaned her head on Jian Chen's shoulder as they slowly strolled through the garden. Her face was filled with happiness.

“Jian Chen, I want to go the sea realm to cultivate after some time. The water-attributed energy there is extremely dense, so it's very suitable for my Water Spirit's Body. I believe that if I cultivate there, the rate at which my strength will increase will not be slower than in Mercenary City,” Huang Luan looked at Jian Chen tenderly as she spoke. Her voice was gentle and pleasant.

Jian Chen obviously did not turn down Huang Luan's suggestion. The Water Spirit's Body was different from ordinary constitutions. The effects of cultivating in a place with rich water-attributed energy would indeed be impressive, allowing someone with that constitution to comprehend the mysteries of the world in greater detail.

“Luan'er, once I find a way to remove the seal in your head, I'll take you to the sea realm. As for your cultivation method, I have indeed found the first version of the Scripture of the Aquatic

Sunflower in the Space Ring of the Huanggu clan ancestor. However, it's only an elementary Saint Tier cultivation method. Let me see if I can obtain a better Saint Tier cultivation method more suited for you from the sea goddess after I return to the sea realm. I think she knows quite a few as one of the four supreme experts from ancient times," Jian Chen caringly said. Huang Luan had already become his woman both in name and in reality, so he needed to put all his effort into forging her future.

Huang Luan nodded obediently and sweetly smiled. She felt extremely moved with how much care Jian Chen was showing. At the same time, she felt extremely satisfied.

Jian Chen's eyes suddenly froze at this moment. A delicate person in luxurious robes currently sat in a pavilion up ahead.

"Second aunt," Jian Chen whispered inside. Although all he could see was her back, he could tell with a single glance that she was his second aunt who had loved him like his own son since he was young.

Jian Chen and Huang Luan hurried to the pavilion. Arriving before her, Jian Chen asked, "Aunt, it's already so late; why are you sitting here all by yourself?"

Yu Fengyang sat in an utter daze. She seemed to have failed to notice Jian Chen at all, so the sudden voice immediately caused her to jump in fright. She looked back instinctively, and when she discovered Jian Chen, a forced smile appeared on her sorrow-ridden face. She said gently, "It's Xiangtian." Yu Fengyan seemed much more haggard than before, much different than the way she

looked several years ago. Her gaze was filled with deep reminiscence.

Jian Chen felt rather horrible when he saw how Yu Fengyang had become. His second aunt had loved him very dearly when he was young; although he was not her child, she treated him like her own, which was why she had taken up an extremely important position in Jian Chen's heart long ago.

"Aunt, are you alright? Have you begun thinking about sister again?" Jian Chen asked in concern. He had learned about what had happened to his eldest brother and sister long ago.

The accumulated longing and pain within Yu Fengyang gushed out uncontrollably when she heard Jian Chen mention Changyang Mingyue. She began to sob painfully as tears poured from her eyes like a fountain. She cried from her loneliness.

Jian Chen's face darkened when he saw how painfully Yu Fengyan cried. He cared very much for his aunt, so he felt rather horrible seeing her like this.

"I have no idea how Mingyue is right now. I haven't seen her in over a decade. Mingyue, I know you've become the holy maiden of the Ice God Hall now. When will you return to see your mother? It's been over a decade since I last saw you. I miss you so dearly," sobbed Yu Fengyan as her tears mixed with her voice.

Jian Chen watched his weeping aunt with mixed emotions. After a moment of silence, he sighed inside and then proceeded to

comfort her, “Aunt, don’t be like this. I haven’t seen sister in over ten years as well, so I also miss her very much. Once I finish with my matters in a few days, I’ll take you to the arctic to go find sister.”

Yu Fengyang’s face froze when she heard that. What Jian Chen had said was like a glimmer of hope in the dark to Yu Fengyang. Her gaze, which was filled with sorrow and reminiscence, stirred. She grabbed Jian Chen’s hand in a trembling manner and emotionally said, “Is that true? Xiangtian, are you really willing to bring me to Mingyue?”

The arctic did not belong to the Tian Yuan Continent. It was just like the Three Saint Island the Heavenly Enchantress inhabited; it was located across the sea, beyond the continent. The continent and the arctic were separated by water, and it was much further away compared to Three Saint Island. Although Yu Fengyan was a madam of the Changyang clan patriarch, she possessed no real power in the world despite her status in the clan. Coupled with the fact that the arctic was so far away, it was almost impossible for her to go looking for Changyang Mingyue.

The distance was so great that even Heaven Saint Masters could not venture to the arctic. Only Saint Rulers possessed the ability, and even they would find it costly to take this very long journey. Yu Fengyang’s status in the clan was not at the level where she could ask a Saint Ruler to accompany her to the arctic.

“Aunt, don’t worry. Once I deal with everything, I will definitely go to the arctic Ice God Hall,” swore Jian Chen. He actually missed his sister very dearly as well.

Other than Bi Yuntian, his sister treated Jian Chen the best during his childhood, even far better than his own father, Changyang Ba.

Jian Chen and Huang Luan accompanied Yu Fengyan back to her room after comforting her, before separating to their own rooms.

The morning of the next day, Jian Chen went to visit Kendall's wife and son. Their inn in Lore City was extremely famous; everyone in the city knew about it. Its name had even spread throughout the entire kingdom.

The inn was the safest inn in Lore City, possibly even in the entire kingdom. Fights and arguments would rarely occur there, and if there were people who dared to start a fight, a large group of mysterious experts would charge in from outside and throw them out without exception, sometimes even taking their lives.

The inn was always protected by a group of mysteries experts. The identities of these people had already become a known secret in Lore City. Many people knew that they were members of the Changyang clan.

Over time, it lead to extremely few conflicts in the inn. Some fleeing mercenaries had even treated the inn as a safe haven.

Jian Chen had already repaired Sans' Saint Weapon that had been destroyed by the people of the Yangji sect, allowing him to

cultivate once more. He was no longer a cripple, and his talent was also improved by Jian Chen through heavenly resources. As a result, his cultivation speed was extraordinary.

Jian Chen paid extra concern to the mother and son, almost to the point where he would care for the most trivial details. This was all so he could return Kendall's kindness.

He had repaid Kendall's kindness countless times over to Sans and his mother.

Bidding farewell to them, Jian Chen returned to the Changyang clan. Afterward, he left the city with Changyang Zu Yunxiao, Changyang Zu Yeyun, Changyang Zu Yunkong, and Huang Luan. They planned to visit the Changyang protector clan in order to remove the seal in Changyang Zu Yunkong's head, as well as to resolve the secret technique embedded in Huang Luan.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao constructed a Space Gate with his abilities as a Saint King. After passing through it, Jian Chen and Huang Luan discovered they had arrived in the sky above an unknown, ancient mountain range.

# Chapter 1081: The Bell of Grand Clarity Chimes Nine Times

---

Jian Chen and Huang Luan stood together a thousand meters in the air as they observed their surroundings. Changyang Zu Yunxiao, Changyang Zu Yeyun, and Changyang Zu Yunking stood beside them. They varied in expression; the couple were extremely excited while Changyang Zu Yunkong was extremely dejected. He felt heavy-hearted.

“Jian Chen, this is the main entrance to the Changyang protector clan. It’s located on the eastern part of the continent, and Mercenary City is over five million kilometers away. The protector clans possess the lengthiest histories on the continent, having surpassed a million years in age. They are much more ancient than Mercenary City. We had already become the ten greatest clans before Mercenary City had even been built on the continent,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao explained to Jian Chen.

Although this was not Jian Chen’s first time hearing about the protector clans’ lengthy histories, he still felt astounded by how long they had existed.

“Jian Chen, the ten protector clans of the continent all exist in other independent spaces. This space is described as a world by us, so it is a smaller world, no different than the Tian Yuan Continent, except for the fact that the energy of the world is much more abundant than the Tian Yuan Continent.” As he said that, Changyang Zu Yunxiao gently raised his right arm. A vast amount of energy shot out, before silently disappearing a hundred meters away.



The space there immediately began to ripple and a hundred-meter-tall gate suddenly appeared. A whole different landscape appeared on the other side of the gate. There were beautiful mountains and rivers, as well as various birds soaring through the sky and small beasts scurrying on the ground. It was a world virtually the same as the Tian Yuan Continent.

“Jian Chen, this is the largest gateway into our Changyang clan. It is called the World Gate, and it is rarely ever opened. However, whenever it is opened, it is because of a large-scale mobilization of the experts in the clan or because someone of great status has come.” Changyang Zu Yunxiao stared deeply at Jian Chen, wanting Jian Chen to understand just how the Changyang clan felt in regards to him.

Jian Chen examined the World Gate, but he failed to find anything special about it after looking around. He also lost interest as a result. He said, “Great-grandfather, great-grandmother, let’s go in.”

“Go in with my father and mother, Jian Chen. I’ll be waiting outside,” Changyang Zu Yunkong said with a dark expression.

“Why can’t you come in with us, great-grandfather?” Jian Chen looked at Changyang Zu Yunkong in confusion. His main reason for visiting the clan this time around was to help Changyang Zu Yunkong remove the seal in his head.

Changyang Zu Yunkong gently sighed and said nothing. He was

in a horrible mood.

“Jian Chen, it’s true that Yunkong can’t go in. As soon as he enters the clan, the Emperor Armament will lose control and lead to an utter disaster,” sighed Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

Jian Chen stopped talking after hearing that. Holding Huang Luan’s hand, he entered the clan with the old couple. The giant World Gate also vanished once they passed through it.

“The independent space of the Changyang clan is divided into the outer clan and inner clan. Jian Chen, I originally planned to take you directly to the inner clan, but since it’s your first time coming to the protector clan, I’ll take you through the outer clan and help you understand the exact layout of the protector clan.

“We’re currently in the outer clan. This is where all the ordinary clansmen live. They are at the bottom of the hierarchy, and there are many of them—at least several million. They all live in this city built by this mountain.”

“In the clan’s space, there are many mountain ranges and thus countless magical beasts. Many clasmen will move in groups, and once they step out of the city, they can be slain by these magical beasts at any time. A portion of the people who live in the outer clan have been weeded out from the inner clan due to their poor talent, while the other group were born there. They will all grow and cultivate in the outer clan. People of the outer clan are only able to enter the inner clan if they become a Heaven Saint Master or exhibit great talent, where the cultivation environment is much better. As a result, there are very few Heaven Saint Masters

present in the outer clan since they have all been gathered by the inner clan.”

“The members of the outer clan are no different than mercenaries on the continent. They hunt magical beasts for their monster cores so that they can cultivate and feed off their flesh. They will struggle all year round on the road to Heaven Saint Master, so quite a few outer clan members fall to the mouths of magical beasts every year.”

Jian Chen listened to Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s explanation as he flew toward the depths of the clan. As he passed over various mountain ranges, he would find a few members of the outer clan in intense battles with magical beasts. He could not help but think back when he was no different, trying to increase his strength. He killed magical beasts for their monster cores and ate them for food, paving a path out of magical beast corpses. He would live in forests filled with danger. Only those who had experienced this themselves could truly understand the difficulties.

Jian Chen also saw the city mentioned by Changyang Zu Yunxiao as he traveled. It was not an extraordinarily big city. It was covered in the marks of time, having stood for countless years. However, it continued to stand strong, and it was encased by a powerful barrier to protect the people living in it.

Jian Chen passed through the outer clan very soon and arrived at the inner clan. The abundance of the energy of the world in the outer clan could only be compared to some blessed lands on the Tian Yuan Continent, while it was several times more abundant in the inner clan.

“The rate of cultivation in the inner clan is equivalent to using monster cores. The energy of the world here is extremely abundant, making it several times easier to cultivate,” Jian Chen sighed inside when he sensed the abundance of energy in the inner clan. A vast disparity existed between the inner and outer clan.

At this moment, Jian Chen suddenly narrowed his eyes. Some disbelief filled his face. He saw a piece of land floating in the sky. The land was huge, several dozen kilometers across. It was as large as a king city.

People could be seen moving about everywhere among the structures constructed on the piece of land. Jian Chen could even feel a few vast presences radiating carelessly from some closed buildings, and the number was astounding.

The most eye-catching part was the very center of the piece of land. A palace, several hundred meters tall, stood there quietly like a slumbering primordial beast, radiating with an invisible pressure that would shock anyone. It seemed like the ruler of the piece of land.

“This floating piece of land is the center of our Changyang clan. It is where all our experts gather, and the divine hall in the center is where all the great elders cultivate. Other clansmen with superb talent are also allowed in,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao explained from beside Jian Chen.

Dong!

Suddenly, a great chime rang out. The sound spread everywhere and so did its echo, ringing magnificently through the entire space in which the clan inhabited.

The moment the chime rang out, everyone on the floating piece of land stopped. They all stared at the sky in surprise.

Dong! Dong!

The chimes rang out three times consecutively, and when the third one rang out, many doors of the closed buildings suddenly opened. Various cultivators who lived in them emerged.

“This is the chime of the Bell of Grand Clarity. It was made to welcome valued guests, and it hasn’t rung for a hundred years. I wonder which valued guest has come to visit our clan. It must be a great elder of some other protector clan...”

“The bell has chimed three times. The person must be someone who can raise storms...”

Quite a few discussions broke out among the people who emerged.

The chiming did not stop. More, humongous sound waves swept through the space, reaching every corner of the clan. Very soon, it had chimed six times in total.

A portion of the other buildings suddenly opened after the sixth chime. Saint Rulers emerged as vast amounts of energy coiled around them. They stared at the sky in surprise, and one of them softly murmured, “It’s been a whole century since the Bell of Grand Clarity has rung. I remember last time, it was due to a visit from a great elder of the Tyrant’s Blade School, and it only rang three times, yet the bell has rung six whole times now. Is the guest the grand elder of Mercenary City?”

“Probably only the grand elder of Mercenary City could make the bell ring six times nowadays. Has he really come to visit our clan?” A sagely old man said in surprise and suspicion as his beard gently floated.

Dong!

This time, the bell chimed once more, summing to a total of seven chimes.

The entire clan fell into an uproar immediately after the seventh chime. At that moment, everyone who lived on the floating piece of land emerged from their residences. Even the people who had entered life-or-death seclusion forcefully came out, staring at the sky in shock.

Dong!

The giant divine hall that silently stood at the center of the land originally only had two small doors open on its sides, yet with the eighth chime, its main entrance slowly opened up with a great

rumble and a simple but desolate presence began to radiate from the door. It seemed like it had not opened for a very long time.

Afterward, six people of various ages stepped through the door. They all stared into the distance with a smile, before moving together. They took to the sky, going up to personally receive the guest.

The six of them were all great elders of the clan.

Dong!

With the ninth chime, a large number of people had appeared on the floating piece of earth. All of them were in shock. The ninth chime of the Bell of Great Clarity was only present in the records of the clan. It had not appeared for several tens of thousand years already, because it usually would only ring nine times to welcome Saint Emperors.

# Chapter 1082: Making Trouble

---

After the ninth chime, Jian Chen had arrived near the floating piece of earth with Changyang Zu Yunxiao. The six great elders of the Changyang clan stood in a row before them, smiling as they personally welcomed Jian Chen.

In order to welcome Jian Chen, the Changyang clan had shown their sincerity. Not only did they chime the Bell of Grand Clarity nine times, even all the great elders of the clan had been mobilized. Only Saint Emperors could enjoy something like this.

“Hahahaha, our most outstanding genius in all of history has finally returned. Changyang Xiangtian, I, Changyang Qing Yun, welcome you on behalf of all the clansmen.” A merry but sagely old man chuckled at Jian Chen among the six. He was extremely joyful.

Changyang Qing Yun was the most senior member of the Qing faction, as well as the most powerful person in the entire clan. He was the only one who had reached the Great Perfection of Saint King in the clan, having been stuck at the bottleneck of Saint Emperor for many years now.

“Jian Chen, allow me to introduce the other great elders...” Changyang Zu Yunxiao stepped forward and introduced the remaining five people to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen finally gained some understanding regarding the identities of the great elders with each introduction. Of the seven



great elders, there were two great elders from Zu faction as well as the Yuan faction, while the Qing faction was the most powerful. They had three great elders. The great elders of the Zu faction were the two people Jian Chen was already familiar with—Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Xiao. The two great elders from the Yuan faction were called Changyang Yuan Wuji and Changyang Yuan Zhenghua. Other than Changyang Qing Yun, Jian Chen had met the other two great elders of the Qing faction as well. One of them was Changyang Qing Jueri, who had come to Lore City to obtain the Bright Moon Divine Hall, while the final person was the same great elder who had been trapped in the Bright Moon Divine Hall a few years ago. He was Changyang Qing Yunfeng.

After Changyang Zu Yunxiao's introduction, Changyang Qing Jueri said, "Yunxiao, you should call him Changyang Xiangtian. After all, that's a more suitable name. Let's discard the name Jian Chen. From today onwards, there is only Changyang Xiangtian on the continent and no Jian Chen." Changyang Qing Jueri's gaze towards Jian Chen hid an unperceivable coldness.

"Hahaha, Jueri, you've put it well. Since Changyang Xiangtian has returned to the clan, we obviously should refer to him with his surname. Let's discard the name of Jian Chen today," Changyang Qing Yun agreed with a smile.

Changyang Qing Fengyun and the two great elders of the Yuan faction all nodded in agreement as well, approving of the suggestion very much. Changyang Zu Yunxiao remained silent and did not comment, while Changyang Zu Yunxiao furrowed his brows. A slightly troubled expression filled his face as he turned to Jian Chen, "Great-grandson, how do you feel about that?" It was

very rare for Changyang Zu Yunxiao to refer to Jian Chen like that, but he placed some stress on ‘great-grandson’ this time. He seemed to be showing off to the great elders of the other two factions, that the unprecedented genius who had been received by the nine chimes of the bell was his own great-grandson.

Jian Chen’s face remained the same, and he replied without an extra thought. “No, Jian Chen is my name. I will not be changing my name. I do not oppose the name of Changyang Xiangtian, but it is only a second name.” Jian Chen answered unswervingly, leaving no room for discussion. His name was not something that could be changed just because they had said so. After all, the name came from the memories of his past life.

The amicable smile on the great elder’s faces quickly vanished. They furrowed their brows slightly and seemed to be displeased. However, Changyang Zu Xiao stepped forward, “The name is just a way of reference, so there’s no need to pay so much heed to it. Plus, the name Jian Chen has been used by my great-grandson for a very long time, and it’s already renowned throughout the continent. How can it be changed so easily?”

The great elders of the other two factions no longer dwelled on the matter with Changyang Zu Xiao’s mediation. They all showed their consent with their silence. Jian Chen was their junior, but the strength he possessed was something that even protector clans dared not to look down upon. Even when ignoring his strength and shocking talent, just the Winged Tiger God was enough for them to treat him carefully.

Not to mention, Jian Chen had the support of Rui Jin and Hei Yu,

two supreme experts who could rival Saint Emperors.

“Great elders, since I have already come to the clan as promised, may I ask if the seal in great-grandfather Yunkong’s head can be removed?” Jian Chen said.

“There’s no hurry, no hurry at all. Xiangtian, since you’ve returned to the clan, there needs to be a welcoming ceremony. We’ll remove the seal after we hold this ceremony,” said Changyang Qing Jueri.

“In my opinion, I think we should first remove the seal in my great-grandfather’s head before holding this ceremony. It’s not like it’ll take a lot of time.” Jian Chen held strong, putting Changyang Zu Yunkong as the priority.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Xiao both gently smiled when they heard that. Meanwhile, the five other great elders all became stunned. They had all become rather unhappy with Jian Chen’s demanding tone time and time again.

Although Jian Chen’s talent was great and his strength could not be underestimated, he was still their junior after all. As great elders of a protector clan, they had never been ordered around by a junior like this.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao gazed past the other great elders and a sliver of anger flickered through his eyes. He clearly said, “The seven of us made an agreement before. If Yunkong brought Xiangtian back to the clan, the seven of us would remove the seal

from Yunkong's head. Now that Xiangtian has returned, it's about time for us to follow through with what we said. Great elders, let's go remove the seal in Kong'er first, or wouldn't we be eating our words?"

The two great elders of the Yuan faction found what Changyang Zu Yunxiao said to be reasonable. As a result, one of them agreed, "Alright, let's go remove the seal in Yunkong's head first."

The three great elders of the Qing faction could only follow along since the Yuan faction had agreed. The seven great elders all left the independent space soon after that, going to the outside world to remove the seal in Changyang Zu Yunkong's head. Only Changyang Zu Yeyun was left to guide Jian Chen.

"Jian Chen, Huang Luan, come with me. I'll go introduce you to a few important figures of the clan," smiled Changyang Zu Yeyun, before descending with the two of them. They landed on the floating piece of earth below.

As soon as Jian Chen touched the ground, he was surrounded by a large group of people from all directions. Soon, they were surrounded by crowds of people as all of them curiously observed the unfamiliar Jian Chen and Huang Luan. They were suspicious.

"I only recognize great-grandmother Yeyun among the three of them. Who are the other two?"

"Are the male and female standing beside Yeyun the people who were welcomed with the nine chimes?"

“Even the reputed grand elder of the Mercenary City has only received six chimes to welcome him, yet these two unfamiliar people are worthy of nine chimes. Are they both Saint Emperors?”

“I haven’t left the clan in a very long time, but I do know a little about the outside. It’s said that the Tian Yuan Continent currently has the path lord of carnal desires as its only Saint Emperor. Is this young man him, the path lord of carnal desires?”

“Impossible, he’s definitely not the path lord of carnal desires. When the Beast God Continent invaded our continent on a large scale before, I personally saw the path lord. That young man definitely isn’t him.”

“If he’s not the path lord, then who is he?”

The surroundings buzzed with discussions as many people guessed at Jian Chen’s identity.

“Changyang Xiangtian, it’s actually you!” Suddenly, a high-pitched scream rang out from the crowd. An elegant, middle-aged woman threateningly walked over with two ladies who possessed sculpturesque features and seemed to be in their twenties.

Jian Chen turned to the source of the sound and recognized the three woman with a single glance. They were the people who had gone with Changyang Qing Jueri to Lore City in attempt to obtain the Bright Moon Divine Hall.

The three woman paid no attention to everyone's surprised gazes. They walked up to Jian Chen. She put her hands on her hips as she said in a snobbish manner, "And who did I think it was? So it's the junior, Changyang Xiangtian, who has no regard for his seniors. Changyang Xiangtian, I never thought that you would be so rude and enter our protector clan in such an arrogant fashion. You sure have surprised me."

Changyang Zu Yeyun's face immediately sank when she heard that. She became furious, while even Jian Chen's face sank as well. Huang Luan furrowed her brows and frowned. She also seemed unhappy.

"Lengshuang, do you recognize this brother? Who is he?" From behind, a hunch-backed old man asked with a husky voice.

The middle-aged woman treated the old man with a lot of respect. Her expression immediately changed and she mildly said, "Uncle Fangyu, you've been in seclusion for many years so you definitely won't know about Changyang Xiangtian. Changyang Xiangtian's the offspring of Changyang Zu Yunkong who was exiled from the clan due to his wrongdoings. At such a young age, he completely disregards his elders just because he has some strength. He's arrogant, unlike the descendent of a powerful clan at all. Last time, when I went with great elder Jueri, who personally went to the Tian Yuan Continent to visit him, this arrogant Changyang Xiangtian actually recklessly dismissed great elder Jueri. How dare he!"

"Yeah, Changyang Xiangtian has gone overboard. Doesn't he

even think about who he is? Isn't he just a junior from someone that has been exiled from the clan? A mighty great elder of a protector clan would lower himself and travel great distances just to visit him in the tiny Lore City. Sure, Changyang Xiangtian has no idea about what is good for himself, but-but- but he actually behaved so disrespectfully, dismissing great elder Jueri who is admired by everyone. He cannot be forgiven," One of the younger women spoke righteously as she pointed at Jian Chen.

# Chapter 1083: Patience Wearing Thin

---

Everyone in the surroundings immediately gained an understanding of Jian Chen, and their gazes toward him all underwent some changes.

“I never thought that Changyang Xiangtian was actually like that. He doesn’t even respect his elders...”

“How dare he disrespect his elders? He even dared to dismiss great elder Jueri! He cannot be forgiven...”

“I really do wonder how such a disrespectful and immoral person can enter our protector clan. He was even personally welcomed by the great elders and received the nine chimes of the Bell of Grand Clarity...”

“In my opinion, Changyang Xiangtian probably has some powerful person supporting him, which is why he’s able to act so unrestrained. The nine chimes earlier were probably not for Changyang Xiangtian, but the person behind him in my opinion...”

Soft discussions appeared in the surroundings. All the clansmen began to point at Jian Chen after hearing the middle-aged woman’s explanation and behaved as if they did not welcome him at all. There were even some people who looked at Jian Chen with hostility.

Changyang Zu Yeyun cracked very soon after listening to the discussion regarding Jian Chen. She called out, “All of you shut up!



Not only is Changyang Xiangtian the most outstanding genius of our clan in all of history, he's a valued guest of the clan at the same time! Someone who is welcomed by nine chimes of the Bell of Grand Clarity isn't someone you can make judgements on so easily!"

"Yeyun, I know that Changyang Xiangtian's a descendent of your son Yunkong. This is why you're protecting him. To be honest, if Changyang Xiangtian, this disrespectful, arrogant person, wants to remain in the protector clan, I'll be the first one to disagree," the middle-aged woman coldly replied. She seemed to think of something and gently sighed. "I wonder if the esteemed great elders have become confused today or not, to use nine chimes of the bell to welcome a disrespectful junior who even dares to dismiss a great elder."

Changyang Zu Yeyun became so furious she began to tremble. Her face was bleak as she glared at Changyang Qing Lengshuang. She coldly said, "Lengshuang, the only thing that is respected on the Tian Yuan Continent is strength. Changyang Xiangtian has the ability to dismiss anyone in the protector clan, and with his current abilities, he should be enjoying a treatment like the nine chimes."

"Yeyun, don't bring up the matters of the Tian Yuan Continent. Why don't you open up your eyes and look at where we are. This is the protector Changyang clan, not some Tian Yuan Continent," Changyang Qing Lengshuang coldly responded. She thought inside, "Changyang Xiangtian, don't think that just because you have some abilities, you can overlook us seniors. I've already shown you enough respect back in Lore City, yet you didn't appreciate it at all and are showing no respect to us seniors again."

It's not my fault if that's the case. Hmph, I know you're very strong, but the protector clan is not a place where you can act without restraint."

Jian Chen calmly stood with his arms crossed. He stared nonchalantly at Changyang Qing Lengshuang and said, "You're Changyang Qing Lengshuang, right?" Jian Chen's voice was rather icy, and it possessed no emotion whatsoever.

However, what he said was a great provocation and was without a doubt scornful in Changyang Qing Lengshuang's ears. She immediately became enraged as she screamed, "Changyang Xiangtian, you disrespectful descendant. How dare you refer to me by my name? Are all the seniors of the clan nothing in your eyes?" Changyang Qing Lengshuang looked around at the crowd as anger filled her face. She continued, "Look, everyone, just which rule of the clan has Changyang Xiangtian broken already..."

As soon as Changyang Qing Lengshuang finished talking, she became surprised. In that moment, she felt like the surrounding temperature had plummeted, as if she had been thrown into a cavern of ice. Her feet and hands immediately grew cold. The next moment, a suffocating feeling suddenly appeared. Her neck had already been tightly grasped by Jian Chen's hands, preventing her from breathing.

Her face immediately became rather pale. The unpleasant sound of choking came from her throat. She had lost her ability of speech now that her neck was being tightly grasped.

She felt astounded inside as she gave Jian Chen a death glare

with her wide eyes. She struggled to believe just how bold Jian Chen was, to move against her even in the protector clan.

Jian Chen tightly grasped her neck as the powerful grip of his right hand crushed her neck forcefully. Without showing any mercy just because she was female, he said, “Changyang Qing Lengshuang, do you really think that I won’t do anything to you just because we’re in the protector clan right now? I can kill you even here.”

Everyone fell silent at that moment. They all stared at Jian Chen in shock as disbelief flooded their face. No one had ever thought that Jian Chen would actually be so reckless, conducting such a treacherous action before everyone as a junior.

“Release aunty Lengshuang!” At this moment, the two woman who always followed Changyang Qing Lengshuang finally returned to their senses. Without any fear, they drew their Saint Weapons and stabbed at Jian Chen as hard as they could.

A sharp light flickered through Jian Chen’s eyes and the surrounding space froze in that instance. He used his abilities as a Saint Ruler to forcefully immobilize the two women.

Bang! The next moment, the frozen space violently shook before suddenly shattering. The two women both flew back after vomiting a mouthful of blood. They were heavily injured and were caught by two old men in the end.

The two old men were both Saint Rulers. After quickly checking

over the two women, their expressions changed, and they furiously yelled at Jian Chen, “How dare you Changyang Xiangtian! How dare you act so recklessly and injure people from the protector clan! Everyone, let’s capture this arrogant bastard!” The two old men charged at Jian Chen. Powerful presences radiated from every part of them. They had no intentions of holding back.

Several other Saint Rulers in the crowd also became furious and charged at Jian Chen.

Just as a wrinkly old man wanted to charged up to teach Jian Chen a solid lesson, he was suddenly stopped by a middle-aged man. The old man could not help but call out furiously, “What’re you stopping me for? Move, I want to teach that disrespectful junior a solid lesson.”

“Old man, it’s best if you don’t take part. That junior’s something else. We can’t afford to provoke him,” the middle-aged man used a communication technique as he stared at Jian Chen in deep fear.

Similar occurrences happened elsewhere. Throughout various parts of the crowd, a few other people who wanted to teach Jian Chen a lesson were stopped by their good friends. There were still some people who knew things about Jian Chen in the protector clan. There were not many of them, but everyone who did understand Jian Chen’s abilities helped out their friends.

Even though a few Saint Rulers were stopped by their companions, five Saint Rulers, who didn’t understand the depth of

Jian Chen's abilities, angrily charged at him. They reached for Jian Chen with their powerful hands, trying to capture him. Meanwhile, the two old men who had caught the ladies had drawn their Saint Weapons. Energy rippled from the weapons as one of them stabbed at Jian Chen. The other one chopped at Jian Chen's arm that was mercilessly holding Changyang Qing Lengshuang by the throat. He wanted to sever Jian Chen's entire right arm.

Even though Jian Chen faced the attacks from five Saint Rulers at the same time, he did not panic at all. He remained composed, except his gaze became colder. It turned into a glare.

"You want to harm me, mere Saint Rulers? You overestimate yourselves," Jian Chen growled. His voice was clearly heard by everyone.

A few people who did not know who Jian Chen was felt shocked when they heard his cold and arrogant words. They all thought that Jian Chen was extremely arrogant inside, where he even looked down on Saint Rulers and even provoked them by labeling them as overestimating their own abilities.

Jian Chen's grasp on Changyang Qing Lengshuang's neck remained tight, while his empty hand curled into a fist. Without even looking at the five Saint Rulers, he threw a punch at the Saint Weapon that chopped toward his arm.

Jian Chen's punch possessed unbelievable speed. The instant it began moving, it temporarily disappeared. The punch contained Jian Chen's Ninth Heavenly Layer comprehension of space, so it contained Spatial Force. It struck the Saint Weapon instantly.

Bang! The collision made a muffled sound. Jian Chen's fist was like a tough piece of diamond; his fist remained unscathed after colliding, while the Saint Ruler was blown back along with his Saint Weapon. In the middle of the air, there was the sounds of bones breaking, and his right arm slumped down, powerless. The bones in his arm had been shattered by Jian Chen's punch.

Jian Chen's body was tough enough to endure a full-powered attack from a Saint Ruler's Saint Weapon, and not only did he come out unscathed, he had even knocked the opponent away with a single punch.

Jian Chen did not hesitate after that. He continued with another punch, striking the second old man with his Saint Weapon. He, too, was knocked away with his Saint Weapon, ending up just like the first old man; his arm was shattered as well.

Against mere Saint Rulers, Jian Chen had no need to use his sword since it would be going overboard. Just his bare hands were enough, and he would create a deterrence by just using his hands.

At this moment, three other old men arrived beside Jian Chen. Six powerful hands locked onto Jian Chen's joints on all his limbs, and they pulled at the same time. The old men wanted to dislocate Jian Chen's limbs.

But, the next moment, all three of them became astounded. Shock flashed through their eyes. They suddenly discovered that they did not feel like they had grabbed a joint but a piece of steel

instead. No matter how much force they used, they could not move them at all.

With their strength, even if it was a piece of steel, it would immediately change shape just with their grip, yet Jian Chen's bones were actually countless times tougher than steel. Their fingers had even begun to ache slightly from their use of force, yet Jian Chen's bones did not move at all.

“My god, what is this body? Probably even magical beasts don't have a body this tough.” The three old men all became extremely shocked.

# Chapter 1084: Inauguration

---

With a deep bellow, Chaotic Force surged within Jian Chen and a powerful force shot out. It shook off the three Saint Rulers that had grabbed him.

Jian Chen exploded with the strength of the third layer of the Chaotic Body. It was equivalent to the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King, far greater than anything Saint Rulers could withstand. The three Saint Rulers all shot back as they vomited blood, now heavily injured.

A few people immediately flew out of the crowd to catch the injured people. When they checked their injuries, their expressions changed in surprise.

“Do you really think that I won’t do anything to you just because we’re in the protector clan? I’ll spare your lives this time considering we are in the same clan and come from the same ancestor. If something like this happened on the Tian Yuan Continent, your lives would be dancing at my fingertips,” Jian Chen coldly said as he glanced past the five Saint Rulers. He showed them no respect, nor did he bother to ask which faction they were from.

To Jian Chen, he recognized no one else in the protector clan other than Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun.

With a wave of his hand, Changyang Qing Lengshuang was thrown toward the crowd like the carcass of a pig. His eyes so cold



and sharp they appeared like knives, as Jian Chen said, “Changyang Qing Lengshuang, it’s best if you hold back your pride as a member of a protector clan and not flaunt your seniority. Otherwise, I can kill you even if you have the path lord of carnal desires supporting you.”

No one went to catch Changyang Qing Lengshuang. She hit the ground heavily in the end and became caked in soil. She was reduced to a rather horrible condition.

Although it was packed with people right now, only a deathly silence existed. No one said anything, all stunned by Jian Chen’s strength and arrogance.

Five Saint Rulers had personally moved together, yet they were injured in such an easy fashion. They were even more fragile than tofu. Moreover, the one who did all that did not even fear the path lord of carnal desires, which had shocked all of them deeply.

As one of the protector clans, the Changyang clan was one of ten most powerful clans on the Tian Yuan Continent. They were an existence close to being divine, dignified and supreme. They were admired and looked up to by people. They had welcomed a junior today with nine chimes of the Bell of Grand Clarity, so was that junior really a Saint Emperor?

Changyang Qing Lengshuang was extremely prideful since young. Coupled with her impressive talent, she was greatly favored by Changyang Qing Yun, and along with the fact that the Qing faction was the strongest of the three, she believed that she towered over everyone else. She immediately lost her rationality

due to anger. She had been embarrassed before everyone, so she obviously ignored Jian Chen's threats, screaming out, "Changyang Xiangtian, how dare you lay your hands on a senior! Where are the disciplinary elders? Where are they? Why don't you quickly tie up this disrespectful person and hand him over to the great elders for punishment!?" Changyang Qing Lengshuang was no longer as glorious as before. She was currently disheveled while her clothes were soiled, even ripped in some places. She seemed more like a beggar.

A middle-aged Saint Ruler covered her mouth, but his hand was flung away mercilessly. She was like an angered lion right now, except she had yet to charge up to Jian Chen and maul him.

Six well-dressed, dignified, and righteous old men walked out of the crowd together. They stared at Jian Chen with mixed emotions and felt troubled.

The six of them were disciplinary elders of the Changyang clan. They were all Saint Rulers of the Ninth Heavenly Layer, and their status and authority was only second to the great elders.

"Disciplinary elders, why don't you quickly punish this disrespectful clansman?" Changyang Qing Lengshuang had become irrational from her anger, but she still knew that she was not Jian Chen's opponent. As a result, she yelled at the six old men.

The disciplinary elders all sighed inside. They understood Jian Chen extremely well. When he had returned from the sea realm a few years ago, they had all personally witnessed the great

disturbances that had occurred on the continent. They knew that he was young, but he was someone that even the ten protector clans wished not to offend. They obviously dared not to intentionally offend Jian Chen.

The disciplinary elders arrived before Changyang Qing Lengshuang, and one of them extended a finger to her neck. She was silenced, and the old man then gently sighed, “Lengshuang, how can you offend a valued guest that was welcomed by nine chimes from the Bell of Grand Clarity? Today, it is all your fault. Once the great elders return, we will tell them what has happened.” The six of them did not say the same thing to the five injured Saint Rulers, however. They were not thick-headed; they knew exactly who they could afford to offend and who not to.

Seven vast presences appeared in the distance. The seven great elders of the clan had all returned from outside, arriving on the floating piece of earth very quickly. Looking around, they immediately discovered that something was off. One of them asked with a deep voice, “What has happened?”

The six disciplinary elders immediately reported to them about what had happened. They reported Jian Chen’s deeds as lightly as possible, placing almost all the blame on Changyang Qing Lengshuang.

The six disciplinary elders were normally just and straightforward people, but they knew how to talk at moments like this.

Changyang Qing Lengshuang stamped her feet and became

flustered on one side. Her face was filled with an unwillingness for this to occur and a feeling of being wronged. It was just a pity that she could not talk and that she was immobilised by two disciplinary elders beside her. She received no chance to challenge what they had said.

Changyang Qing Yun slightly frowned after the disciplinary elders gave their report. However, before he could speak out, Changyang Zu Xiao growled, “Changyang Qing Lengshuang, you cannot be forgiven for treating a valued guest like this. Disciplinary elders, immediately imprison her in the Thousand-year Ice Cavern for a hundred years.”

“Yes sir!” The disciplinary elders bowed in response.

The three great elders of the Qing faction frowned even more, Changyang Qing Yun in particular. A sliver of anger had even appeared in his eyes. Changyang Qing Lengshuang was one of the most talented members of his Qing faction. Imprisoning her in the Thousand-year Ice Cavern was like robbing her of a hundred years of cultivation.

“The seven others who dared to attack the valued guest will be imprisoned for a hundred years too,” Changyang Zu Xiao continued. He was extremely solemn, to the point where he could not be denied.

In the end, Changyang Qing Lengshuang, the two women who followed her, and the five Saint Rulers, all suffered severe punishments. Those who wanted to punish Jian Chen but were stopped in the end all sighed inside for their luck.

“Great-grandson, are you satisfied with this sentence?” Changyang Zu Xiao’s seriousness vanished as he smiled amicably at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen slightly nodded, “Has the seal in great-grandfather Yunkong’s head been removed?”

“My great-grandson, it’s all because of you that the seal torturing Kong’er for so many years has been successfully removed. From today on, Kong’er can finally continue his cultivation,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao chuckled aloud. He was relieved.

After talking some more, Jian Chen was brought to the divine hall by the great elders. Huang Luan was left outside with Changyang Zu Yeyun.

Soon after, a great voice boomed from within, echoing through the entire independent space.

“From today on, Changyang Zu Xiangtian of the Zu faction will be a great elder of our Changyang clan, the eighth great elder...”

The announcement was made by the seven great elders together. They declared Jian Chen’s identity, but they added the extra character ‘Zu’ in Changyang Xiangtian to indicate he was a member of the Zu faction.

Once the news broke out, the clan was immediately thrown into

an uproar. Various discussions broke out everywhere. Though, around half of them were objections. After all, Jian Chen was still an outsider in the eyes of many people.

Immediately, a group of people who didn't approve of Jian Chen's inauguration as a great elder gathered together, objecting the matter outside the majestic divine hall.

However, their objections were clearly nothing before the seven great elders. They weren't able to do anything at all. The seven great elders stepped forward together to quell the crowd.

The seven great elders possessed absolute authority in the Changyang clan. They represented everything—as long as they all agreed, they could decide everything for the clan.

Jian Chen possessed the strength of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King, and by his side stood the Winged Tiger God as well as Rui Jin and Hei Yu, two supremely powerful experts. It was impossible for the protector Changyang clan to not pour everything they had to pull someone like that to their side. Once Jian Chen became a member of the protector clan, the great power in his hands would also fall into the hands of the protector clan.

Not to mention, Jian Chen's fiancée, You Yue, had been accepted by fairy Hao Yue as a disciple. She had obtained the Bright Moon Divine Hall, and her future accomplishments were unfathomable.

On the top floor of the divine hall was a grand and majestic hall. It was well-decorated, where the level of extravagance far exceeded

the imperial palaces of the three great empires. This was the ancestral hall of the protector Changyang clan.

The hall was filled with memorial plates, reaching an innumerable amount. All of these people were former great elders of the clan, and there was no lack in Saint Emperors among them. However, all of them had passed away already.

Jian Chen stood with the seven great elders in a row before the vast numbers of memorial plates. They paid respects to the people that the plates represented since they were all ancestors of the clan.

Jian Chen had expected this to happen before he had come to the clan. He did not want to take up the position of great elder in the clan, but a single sentence from Changyang Zu Yunkong changed his mind.

“Great-grandson, you are a member of our Zu faction; you will become the glory of our faction.”

Jian Chen changed his mind because of that exact sentence. He did not reject his inauguration as great elder, as all of it was to glorify his great-grandfather Changyang Zu Yunkong.

“Alright, the ceremony has come to completion. Great-grandson, we should take you to the library of the clan next. All the records collected throughout the years by the clan are there, including many matters regarding secrets that happened in the past. There are also various cultivation methods, Saint Tier Battle Skills, and

the experience and comprehensions left behind by ancestors. Now that you've become a great elder of the clan, you have the right to view these records," smiled Changyang Zu Xiao. He felt glad inside.

Jian Chen's interest was piqued. He was extremely interested in the records of secrets from the past. He did not really care about the cultivation methods or Saint Tier Battle Skills since they were not suitable for him at all.

Jian Chen did not visit the library immediately. He said, "Great elders, someone has planted an ancient secret technique on Luan'er that ties Luan'er's fate with his own. May I ask if you have a method to remove it?"



# Chapter 1085: Treasure of the Protector Clans

---

“There are countless ancient secret techniques, as well as many that share the same name. Some are extremely simple while others are extraordinarily profound. Xiangtian, let’s check and see what ancient secret technique it is first,” said Changyang Yuan Wuji.

Jian Chen left the ancestral hall with the seven great elders and invited Huang Luan inside. They gathered in the discussion hall on the first floor.

The seven great elders gathered around Huang Luan as they all pointed a finger at her head. They used a secret technique to sense the technique imbedded in Huang Luan’s soul.

A while later, the seven of them opened their eyes simultaneously. They all began to frown slightly.

“This ancient secret technique is quite complicated. It was planted directly onto her soul and has almost fused with it. It’s extremely difficult to remove,” Changyang Yuan Zhenghua gently sighed. He was filled with a sense of helplessness.

“Does that mean even you cannot help me remove this secret technique?” Jian Chen became rather flustered inside.

Everyone fell silent for a while before Changyang Zu Xiao said, “I remember an ancient secret technique called the Void Soul

Transcendence that can remove this secret technique. Though, the ancient secret technique is just too profound, so I don't know it."

A sliver of despair appeared in Jian Chen's eyes.

"I just happen to know the Void Soul Transcendence. Xiangtian, why don't you let me try it?" Changyang Qing Yun suddenly said. He was very calm right now as he gently smiled. He seemed to have completely forgotten about the displeasures from before.

Jian Chen hesitated slightly, before allowing Changyang Qing Yun to try as he had no other choice in the end. However, he mentioned that he wanted to watch over the entire process.

"Jian Chen, breaking ancient secret techniques planted directly on the soul is extremely dangerous. I need to devote all my focus onto it, and I cannot risk any disturbances, or the consequences will be unthinkable. It's best if you wait outside for the safety of your beloved. Moreover, you're a great elder of the clan now. We're all one big family, and I'm your great-grandfather by seniority as well. Don't you trust your great-grandfather?" Changyang Qing Yun turned down Jian Chen's request to watch over on one side, before entering a room in the divine hall with Huang Luan.

Jian Chen worried for Huang Luan, so he immediately extended his presence beyond his body to follow Changyang Qing Yun. However, every inch off the divine hall was filled with the divine hall's power, so Jian Chen's presence could not extend past the obstructions. It was suppressed.

Helpless inside, Jian Chen could only sit and wait there. The other great elders also stayed there with him. Only Changyang Qing Jueri left due to some matters.

“Xiangtian, don’t worry. Great elder Qing Yun’s abilities are fantastic. He’s reached Great Perfection for many years already, so he can be described as someone with a foot planted in Saint Emperor already. With him acting personally, even if Huang Luan’s seal can’t be broken, she’ll still come out unscathed,” comforted Changyang Yuan Zhenghua. He had no negative opinion of Jian Chen.

Jian Chen waited for three days, but Huang Luan and Changyang Qing Yun did not emerge. He did not even receive a single piece of news, so, in the end, out of boredom, he was taken around the clan again by Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao lead Jian Chen around on the floating piece of earth, explaining to him a few rules of the clan as well as some interesting events that occurred in the past. The two of them came across many clansmen of the inner clan, who call out and bowed to Changyang Zu Yunxiao. Although Jian Chen was also a great elder, no one showed any respect to him.

Jian Chen did not care at all. He continued beside Changyang Zu Yunxiao and listened to his explanations.

“Mum, is that person beside great elder Yunxiao the outsider, Changyang Xiangtian?” Jian Chen heard a young voice at this

moment. Several hundred meters to his left, there was a boy, roughly six or seven years of age, pointing at Jian Chen as he spoke to a middle-aged woman.

“Shhh! Qing Lin, be quiet, or you’ll suffer a similar severe punishment.” The middle-aged woman quickly covered the boy’s mouth before glancing in Jian Chen’s direction in fear.

The boy was young and fearless, so he rejected what his woman said. He righteously said, “Mum, I’m not scared. Great-grandfather Tianying was injured by Changyang Xiangtian, and then locked up. Changyang Xiangtian is a bad guy. He’s a big bad guy! He’s not good... Mmm... Mmm..” The boy got louder as he spoke, but the woman became quite terrified. She quickly covered his mouth and left with him in a hurry.

Jian Chen glanced at the boy before sighing inside.

In front, there were a few young Heaven Saint Masters that walked past as well. They seemed to be roughly Jian Chen’s age.

“I greet the great elder,” the young man all bowed courteously to Changyang Zu Yunxiao, but their gazes toward Jian Chen were not so kind.

The protector clan was separated from the world, so almost all the younger members of the clan had not stepped upon the Tian Yuan Continent. Only a portion of the senior members had gone out, so they had no clue about the brutality and laws of survival outside. As a result, they did not accept that strength reigned

supreme. With their understanding, respect was based on seniority and had nothing to do with personal strength.

They all disagreed very much with the fact that Jian Chen had become a great elder at such a young age. At Jian Chen's age, any single person in the inner clan was his senior.

“Great-grandson, don't get too mad. The protector clan has been separated from the world for too long, which has caused the members of the younger generation to deteriorate. Looks like choosing to become a hermit clan was not a smart choice. We should let these juniors wander the Tian Yuan Continent more often and witness the brutal world.” Changyang Zu Yunxiao sighed.

Jian Chen paid no mind to them. Although he was someone who would always collect his debts, he was not petty.

“What's that place?” Suddenly, Jian Chen's eyes froze, and he focused on something in the distance. Within a mountain range beyond the floating island, the space constantly twisted as a vast, devastating aura radiated.

“That's the forbidden grounds of our clan, the place where the Emperor Armament is nourished. There are no clansmen that can approach it except for the great elders. Let's go and have a look.” With that, Changyang Zu Yunxiao lead Jian Chen in that direction.

“The forbidden grounds are surrounded by layer upon layer of formations for protection. They were cast down by previous Saint

Emperors, used specifically restraining the Emperor Armament as well as the powerful sword Qi and pressure that radiates from it all year round,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao explained as he moved.

Jian Chen passed through the many formations, and as soon as he arrived inside, a vast pressure swept forward. Coupled with it was surging sword Qi, which made him shudder inside.

At the center of the forbidden grounds was a huge ancient sword stabbed into the ground. The tip of the sword was buried and the hilt pointed to the sky. It possessed a supreme presence, as if it could split the sky and rival the heavens. It was filled with a domineering presence.

Jian Chen became extremely serious as he stood before the Emperor Armament. He said with a deep voice, “What a powerful Emperor Armament. My Emperor Armament is just too, too weak. Before it, I even feel that I have already been defeated. Unbelievable.”

Changyang Zu Yunxiao examined the Emperor Armament with mixed emotions and sighed, “This Emperor Armament existed when our clan was first founded. It was left behind by the founder, our first Saint Emperor. It has already existed for more than a million years.”

“An extremely ancient technique was left behind with the founder’s Emperor Armament. It recorded the method to nourish the Emperor Armament. Once every Saint Emperor of our clan passes away from cultivation, they will leave behind their Emperor Armaments and fuse them with the Emperor Armament through

the method left behind by the founder.

“After countless years, we have never been without Saint Emperors except in recent years. At our peak, we even had more than ten of them existing at the same time, so over a hundred Saint Emperors have appeared in our clan’s history. That means that over a hundred Emperor Armaments have been fused with the founder’s Emperor Armament. Its power is unimaginable now and requires multiple Saint Emperors to control it, but even with that, it’s impossible to use all of its power. At the same time, they will sustain extremely severe backlash that’s extremely difficult to recover from. If we control it for too long, everyone’s life may even fall into danger, and we might even die as a result.”

Jian Chen was deeply shocked with that. He felt extremely fearful of the Emperor Armaments of the protector clans. They could only be controlled by multiple Saint Kings, and even with all those Saint Kings, not all of its power could be used. The controllers would even suffer severe backlashes, so Jian Chen struggled to imagine just how powerful the Emperor Armaments really were.

His own Emperor Armament immediately paled in comparison. They were both Emperor Armaments, but the disparity in power was just too vast.

“These Emperor Armaments are the treasure of the protector clans. They are the trump cards of the protector clans, as well as our ability to deal with Saint Emperors. It is also what protects us,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao sighed emotionally.

“I wonder if the origin energy armor on Rui Jin and Hei Yu can withstand the Emperor Armaments if the protector clans use it despite the consequences.” Jian Chen wondered inside. He had no idea, but he made up his mind at that moment. He would never, ever agitate the Emperor Armaments of the protector clans unless he had no other choice.

Jian Chen felt a lot of fear for the Emperor Armaments of the protector clans. Before them, even divine halls could be cleaved into two. Only Saint Emperors could withstand the power.

Jian Chen left the forbidden grounds with Changyang Zu Yunxiao, returning to the divine hall once more. Huang Luan remained in the room with Changyang Qing Yun. No one knew whether the secret technique in her could be removed.

Jian Chen entered the library all by himself and made his way through the section where the cultivation methods and Saint Tier Battle Skills were stored. He was heading to where the ancient records were kept.



# Chapter 1086: Ancient Records

---

There were many ancient records, all stored neatly on the bookshelves. Each book was made from high-class beast leather as the power of the divine hall circulated within. It provided two layers of protection for the books, so they could last for a very long time.

Even though that was the case, many books still possessed some wear. Even though they were made from high-class beast leather and were protected by the divine hall's power, they had begun to yellow, like an old man approaching his end.

Everything major that had happened since ancient times had been recorded, along with some unprecedented occurrences and extremely famous figures. This included records regarding the greatest human expert, Mo Tianyun, the Winged Tiger God of the Beast God Continent, the war god Aergyns of the Hundred Races, and the sea goddess.

Jian Chen had always been extremely curious regarding the matters that had occurred between the four of them, so he began to flip through their information first.

He looked up Mo Tianyun first. He wanted to learn about Mo Tianyun's growth. He must have had a glorious record of battles as an unparalleled legend.

However, Jian Chen suddenly discovered that there were no such records after flipping through them. Mo Tianyun's name rocked

through the world when the Hundred Races invaded since he had fended them off. However, before the invasion, Jian Chen actually found no information regarding him at all, as if he had truly emerged from a fairytale.

Also, as soon as he had appeared, his strength was unparalleled. No one was his opponent, and he was invincible. He blocked the experts of the Hundred Races that had forced the humans to retreat all by himself, killing many of members of the Hundred Races before going to outer space and guarding the Tian Yuan Continent as a form of deterrence.

Afterward, the war god of the Hundred Races, Aergyns, stepped into outer space with his golden battle-axe. His battle intent flooded the world, causing the sky to shatter. He was embroiled in a grand battle with Mo Tianyun.

During that battle, both the heaven and earth cracked. The entire continent shook and lost a tenth of its area, transforming into the sea. In the end, Aergyns retreated in defeat.

During that age, the world was chaotic. Saint Emperors emerged one after another, while the humans, magical beasts, and members of the Hundred Races warred constantly. There were countless casualties.

The Hundred Races originally inhabited the Beast God Continent, before they were chased out by the Winged Tiger God and the experts of the magical beasts. That was how the ancient war began. The Hundred Races first retaliated against the magical beasts, and after no success, they turned to the humans. They

wanted to occupy the Tian Yuan Continent, but they were all stopped by Mo Tianyun.

Aergyns clashed with Mo Tianyun many times, and the last time they fought was at the center of the continent.

It was the most intense battle. Mo Tianyun displayed his vast abilities while Aergyns used his great Mysteries of War. The pressure was so great that even Saint Emperors could not withstand it, forcing them to retreat over ten thousand kilometers away.

However, the battle ended extremely quickly as well. The moment it began, Aergyns tried to retreat in defeat once more. He suffered unprecedented injuries, never daring to step upon the Tian Yuan Continent again. A bottomless pit had formed below their battleground, and Mo Tianyun used his abilities to move the earth, filling it in. He founded Mercenary City there.

Jian Chen gasped inside as he read up to that point. The moment Mo Tianyun injured the war god, he had suffered unprecedented injuries. Just how great was he? Jian Chen even seemed to be able to imagine Mo Tianyun standing in a heroic posture as his white robes ruffled in the wind.

“The bottomless pit definitely is the tunnel to the World of Forsaken Saints,” Jian Chen murmured as he held onto the book. He continued to browse through it.

After retreating from the battle with Mo Tianyun, the Hundred

Races did not give up. The war god then lead his clansmen to attack the magical beasts again, leading to great casualties on both sides. After several battles, the war god was slain by the Winged Tiger God in the end. Golden blood splattered across the earth.

From then on, the four supreme experts of the ancient times turned into three.

It was rumored that the war god's body would not rot even though he had died. It would exist forever, so the experts of the Hundred Races retrieved it along with the war god's blood. They wanted to use an absolute technique to revive him.

But, in the end, the Winged Tiger God descended and took away the war god's corpse, interfering with their plan of revival. He used his great abilities to seal the war god's corpse into a bleak continent, and the war between the three races ended there.

Mo Tianyun became the city lord of Mercenary City and faded from the center of attention over the next few decades. Afterward, he vanished, only leaving behind one message. He had already secretly struck an agreement with the Winged Tiger God: the Tian Yuan Continent and the Beast God Continent would never go to war against each other.

Obviously, the ancient Winged Tiger God became the god among magical beasts, leading the entire race. A hundred years later, a phenomenon occurred on Dragon Island and the Winged Tiger God also disappeared with the Divine Phoenix clan and Dragon clan. No one knew where they vanished to, forming an unsolvable mystery.

Jian Chen did not find any information regarding the Winged Tiger God's life in ancient times. It seemed to have appeared out of nowhere, possessing supreme strength as soon as it had appeared. It was unlike the white tiger, who was known throughout the world before it had even matured.

At that time, the war between the three races had yet to erupt. The magical beasts inhabited the same continent as the humans. The current Cross Mountains was the location where the magical beasts lived. As soon as the Winged Tiger God appeared, it lead the magical beasts out of Cross Mountains to the Beast God Continent where they drove the Hundred Races away. This lead to the war between the three races.

Afterward, Jian Chen checked on the records regarding the war god Aergyns. They said that he was born into an ordinary farmer's family, and golden blood was discovered as soon as he was born. He also possessed great strength, virtually the same as Tie Ta in his youth.

Soon after, all the hall elders of the Hundred Races gathered. They invited the young Aergyns to the great War God Hall excitedly and courteously. After that, there was no sound of him.

This lasted for five hundred years. Then, Aergyns emerged from the War God Hall. At that time, he had already surpassed Saint Emperor. He grew at a stunning rate where his name rang through the world. As soon as he emerged, he became the leader of the War God Hall.

Afterward, Jian Chen checked up on the sea goddess. Perhaps due to the fact that the Sea race was the only race that did not take part in the war, there was even less information regarding her, just a few lines.

Jian Chen then found a record regarding the Beast God Hall. It mentioned that on the ninety-ninth floor of the hall was the first Winged Tiger God's legacy. Only magical beasts with the bloodline of the Winged Tiger God could enter and obtain it. Though, no one knew whether it was actually true or not.

Very soon, Jian Chen found another ancient record regarding the arctic Ice God Hall. It reported the organization as mysterious and powerful and that it had always remained in the arctic.

The Ice God Hall had existed for an extremely long time. The first Saint Emperor of the clan had once written that in ancient times, before the ten protector clans had existed, before the war between the three races had erupted, the Ice God Hall had quietly stood in the arctic for countless years.

In the eyes of the ancient protector clans, the arctic Ice God Hall was a powerful and mysterious force. They never moved on the Tian Yuan Continent, nor did they interfere with any conflict on the continent. Even when intense battles erupted during the war of the three races, the Ice God Hall continued to act as it wished, remaining in the arctic.

If the Ice God Hall was weak, then so be it. However, Jian Chen had also found the messages from many previous Saint Emperors to never provoke the Ice God Hall.

Jian Chen sat on the ground as he slowly flipped through the ancient record regarding the Ice God Hall. He reached the end very quickly, which suddenly made him narrow his mind. He discovered at the end of all that was a newly-scribed paragraph.

“The arctic Ice God Hall descended on Lore City on the XXX of XXX, year XXX. Snow filled the skies, summer turned to winter and ice sealed up a radius of ten thousand kilometers...” The information near the end included records of the holy maiden of the Ice God Hall, Changyang Mingyue. It included when she was born, what she went through as she grew up, and so on.

Jian Chen slowly closed the book as he constantly thought about the Ice God Hall. It was just a pity that the records did not contain many details about the origins of the Ice God Hall, shrouding it in mystery.

“Just what kind of an organization are you?” Jian Chen was filled with suspicion inside. He knew from the records that for all the years the Ice God Hall had existed, it had only descended once, and it was for his sister, Changyang Mingyue.

“Since both Mo Tianyun and the Winged Tiger God of the ancient times were born on the Tian Yuan Continent, why is there no record of you two growing up at all. Has it all been forcefully erased?” Jian Chen pondered.

“Out of the four supreme experts of the ancient times, the war god died in battle. The sea goddess passed away due to age and now

exists in the form of a soul because of the Winged Tiger God's kindness, yet the Winged Tiger God who is powerful enough to help the sea goddess has disappeared with the Dragon and Phoenix clans.

“And the Winged Tiger God disappeared at a similar time to senior Mo Tianyun. Did the two of you disappear at the same time? Did you two really die, or did you go to another place as described by Xiao Ling?” Mysteries blossomed in Jian Chen's head at that moment.

“Dragon Island was occupied by magical beasts. It was the territory of the Winged Tiger God. In ancient times, the Yinyang Saint Rock fell on Dragon Island, and then it was moved through the void to a distant region of space by Mo Tianyun and his powerful formations. Afterward, Dragon Island underwent a great change, while the Winged Tiger God, the Dragon clan, the Phoenix clan, and Mo Tianyun vanished without any news, causing many people to believe that they all died.

“In that world created by the Yinyang Saint Rock, the sliver of consciousness left behind by Mo Tianyun recognized the sword spirits. Therefore, it's extremely likely that senior Mo Tianyun came from the same world as the sword spirits.” Jian Chen deduced inside. Afterward, his eyes widened and an audacious possibility crossed his mind. Maybe Mo Tianyun did not die, and the Winged Tiger God did not die either. They just had some unknown connection, leaving behind the sea goddess while they disappeared themselves, maybe leaving for another place as companions.



# Chapter 1087: Comprehending the Great Divination Technique

---

“And the ten protector clans of the Tian Yuan Continent all have an Emperor Armament similar to the one in the Changyang clan. They’ve all been passed down since the ancient times, left behind by their ancestors.” Jian Chen learned many secrets from the records.

Afterward, Jian Chen checked on some comprehensions and experiences for cultivation left behind by some seniors. He left after staying there for two days. Although they were invaluable, equivalent to someone’s legacy, they were mostly of no help to him. All they provided him with was some information that he could draw on, broadening his understanding.

In the end, Jian Chen visited the section where the battle skills and cultivation methods were stored. He discovered several dozen Heaven Tier Battle Skills and cultivation methods, as well as a few Saint Tier cultivation methods sealed by a force and a few stone carvings of Saint Tier Battle Skills.

Jian Chen pulled out a brush and ink from his Space Ring and copied down a few Heaven Tier Battle skills and cultivation methods before leaving the library. Although they were useless to him, they were invaluable to the Changyang clan in Lore City and the Flame Mercenaries.

Jian Chen did not bother with the Saint Tier cultivation techniques. They were sealed up by an ancient secret technique and could only be unlocked with a corresponding method. He

could not read them at all. On the other hand, the Saint Tier Battle Skills were carved into stone tablets and required comprehension. Unless he could take the tablets away, there was no method of transcribing their content.

The section containing the ancient secret techniques was enveloped by a layer of the divine hall's powerful energy. It had basically become an independent world, so Jian Chen could not enter even though he was interested.

Jian Chen returned to the discussion hall of the divine hall after emerging from the library. He then proceeded to Changyang Zu Yunxiao to hear about Huang Luan.

“My great-grandson, Qing Yun has yet to come out. He probably hasn't removed the ancient secret technique completely. After all, any secret technique that affects the soul is relatively difficult to deal with. Any carelessness can lead to severe consequences. Just wait for a few more days. You cannot hurry this,” sighed Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

Helpless, Jian Chen could only remain in the protector clan. During that time, he paced about outside the room, but he could not check on the situation inside at all. His presence still could not pass through the walls of the divine hall.

Jian Chen found an empty room and planned to go into seclusion for a few days due to boredom.

In a room with only a ray of light, Jian Chen sat on the ground.

With the flip of his hand, he pulled out the Octoterra Divine Hall from his Space Ring.

Divine halls could only be created by Saint Emperors, and they would fuse in their comprehension of space. This was why divine halls could shrink and expand. It currently stood in Jian Chen's hand as the size of a fist.

"The divine hall's been reduced to ruins by Kaiser of the Beast God Continent. It's power is still circulating inside, currently recovering automatically, but it'll probably take a very long time at this rate," Jian Chen stared at the ruined divine hall as he felt pity inside.

Two jade-white, glistening skeletons of Saint Emperors sat in the divine hall. They were left behind by the second and third masters of the Octoterra Divine Hall. Each skeleton hid extremely pure energy, and Jian Chen could even vaguely feel a vast and profound presence in each skeleton. They were the mysteries of the world, having fused perfectly with the pure energy within.

Jian Chen understood that absorbing the energy within the skeletons would also lead to the comprehension of the mysteries of the world that was in the energy. However, the comprehension would depend on luck and ability.

"These two skeletons are treasures that cannot be purchased with money, especially on this continent. If a Saint Emperor's skeleton appeared, probably even the protector clans wouldn't be able to sit still. They'll definitely go and try take it for themselves," murmured Jian Chen. He knew the value of the skeletons

extremely well.

“The energy required for the fourth layer of the Chaotic Body is much more than the third. Even if I absorb both skeletons, it won’t be enough for me to reach the fourth layer. At the same time, I cannot reach Saint King with my comprehension, so the mysteries of the world would be wasted for nothing. If I give it to Ming Dong or great-grandfather Bi Hai, their strength will definitely skyrocket and reach Saint King in the shortest time possible. That’s the best way to use the Saint Emperor skeletons.” Jian Chen put the divine hall away. He did not plan on using the skeletons for himself.

Jian Chen then pulled out an ancient book from his Space Ring. It was the Great Divination Technique he had obtained from old man Situ all those years ago.

The Great Divination Technique was known as a book of a way to the sword spirits. It belonged to the Way of Divination. It was an extremely special and obscure way that was very difficult to comprehend, and incredibly few people would comprehend it. However, its wonder and uniqueness was beyond imagination. It could predict the future, show the truths of the world, perceive the mysteries of the universe, and exhibit the origin of everything.

Jian Chen opened the book and began reading it diligently. He was very interested in this book of a way that could forecast the future.

The method to practice the Great Divination Technique was not recorded in words. Instead, it was constructed from a few simple-looking but profound lines and images.

The lines and images seemed to fuse with the world and the ways. Although they were simple, they gave people a feeling of possessing everything. The shape and trajectory of every line and image seemed to demonstrate the beginning of the universe.

Jian Chen became deeply drawn in very soon, submerged in the mysteries of the Great Divination Technique. At that moment, Jian Chen seemed to see a limitless universe, and he also seemed to see a world of chaos. He seemed to see the birth of the universe as well, and in a daze, he seemed to understand something, yet he understood nothing. It was intangible, where he could not grasp it even when he tried.

The Great Divine Technique was extremely profound. With just a few lines, it drew Jian Chen's conscience to a different world.

In the blink of an eye, half a month passed. Jian Chen remained in the room, comprehending the Great Divination Technique. He was deeply submerged into it, where he did not stir even once.

During this period of time, Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Xiao visited him many times. Seeing how he was cultivating, they did not disturb him and silently left.

In another room of the divine hall, the ruddy, sage-like Changyang Qing Yun sat with Huang Luan. Both of them had their eyes closed and were completely serious.

Changyang Qing Yun's finger remained planted between Huang

Luan's eyebrows. Powerful pulses of energy were emitted from the tip of the finger as the profound presence of the mysteries of the world and a desolate, mysterious presence surged into Huang Luan's forehead.

Suddenly, Changyang Qing Yun snapped open his eyes. An odd gleam appeared in his eyes as they were widely opened. They seemed fierce.

“Break!” Changyang Qing Yun bellowed and used an ancient secret technique with his strength at the Great Perfection of Saint King. The two presences stabbed into the center of Huang Luan's eyebrows like a sword, forcing out the seal on Huang Luan's soul. Afterward, the mysterious, desolate presence immediately surrounded it. Using the Void Soul Transcendence, it burned the seal planted on Huang Luan's soul into nothingness.

Now that the seal on Huang Luan was removed, Changyang Qing Yun could not help but deeply exhale. He softly sighed, “I finally removed that seal after so much effort.” But soon after speaking, a sinister smile appeared on his face. He seemed to be fiendish, conflicting with his sagely appearance.

“I can't just help you remove this ancient secret technique for nothing. There has to be something in it for me as well.” Changyang Qing Yun bit the tip of his tongue and drew out a droplet of essence blood. Forming a seal with his hands, he used an ancient secret technique to refine the blood, which then entered between Huang Luan's eyebrows in the form of a wisp. It fused with her soul, becoming a part of her soul.

Huang Luan felt nothing with her eyes closed. She had fallen unconscious long ago, losing all sense of the outside world.

After all that, Changyang Qing Yun smiled when he succeeded. However, he returned to how he acted before very quickly. He gently extended a finger to Huang Luan's forehead again and woke her up.

Huang Luan slowly opened her eyes. She looked at Changyang Qing Yun in confusion first, but a gleam of light flashed through her eyes soon after. She politely asked, "Senior, may I ask if the ancient secret technique has been removed?"

Changyang Qing Yun smiled amicably. His smile was filled with benevolence as he slowly said, "It's been removed successfully. Girl, you don't need to worry about it anymore."

"Thank you senior." Huang Luan rejoiced and immediately thanked Changyang Qing Yun after standing up.

...

Jian Chen quickly learned about how Huang Luan's seal was removed. He immediately stopped his comprehension of the Great Divination Technique to meet up with her.

The Great Divination Technique really was profound. Even though Jian Chen had entered such a wondrous state, he had still failed to comprehend the technique. However, he did seem to

vaguely understand some of the laws within the technique.

Huang Luan sweetly smiled to Jian Chen in the hall, “Jian Chen, the ancient secret technique planted on my soul has finally been removed.”

Rejoicing, Jian Chen wholeheartedly thanked Changyang Qing Yun. After talking a little more, he bid farewell to everyone. He wanted to leave the protector clan.

“Xiangtian, you’re leaving so soon! Why don’t you stay for a few more days?” Changyang Qing Yun urged.

“I still have matters to attend to, so I don’t have much time on hand,” said Jian Chen.

“Go deal with your important matters first since you need to attend to them. Though, do come back and visit the clan whenever you have time,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Xiao walked in from outside. They spoke for Jian Chen.

Changyang Qing Yun became hesitant. He said in the end, “Xiangtian, since you have matters at hand, you should go. Though, we do hope you can leave the Winged Tiger God with the clan. We will use everything we have to raise it and provide it with an even greater space to grow in.”

Jian Chen’s expression changed slightly. He did not think that the Changyang clan would still be thinking of the Winged Tiger



God and that they would try to take it right now.

“I thank you on Xiao Bai’s behalf, elder Qing Yun. However, Xiao Bai doesn’t need any assistance in any aspects right now,” Jian Chen declined without any hesitation. The Changyang clan had existed for over a million years. They possessed countless ancient secret techniques, so he worried that they would use one of them to control Xiao Bai if he left the white tiger here or do detrimental things to the white tiger.

## Chapter 1088: Guihai Yidao (One)

---

“Xiangtian, you’re now a great elder of our clan. You must consider the clan in anything and everything you do. I hope you can consider the future of the clan. If the Winged Tiger God is raised as the guardian beast of our clan, our strength will instantaneously surpass the nine other clans. Of course, if you let the Winged Tiger God successfully mature under the two great magical beast experts, there’s a great possibility that it will bring disaster to the continent. Do you really want to be condemned by the entire continent for all of eternity?” Changyang Qing Yun sternly argued.

“Elder Qing Yun, I am very grateful that you removed the seal within Luan’er, but there is no room for discussion in regards to the Winged Tiger God,” Jian Chen flatly replied.

“The clan takes priority over everything, Changyang Xiangtian. If you’re unwilling to leave behind the Winged Tiger God, we won’t make it difficult for you. However, I do hope your fiancée can move the Bright Moon Divine Hall into our clan from outer space, so many more female descendants of the clan can enter the divine hall to cultivate and thus strengthen our clan.” Changyang Qing Jueri and Changyang Qing Yunfeng walked in from outside. The speaker was Changyang Qing Jueri. He still had his sights set on the Bright Moon Divine Hall.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Xiao looked at one another, and they frowned slightly. They became troubled.

Jian Chen’s face grew cold, “Yue’er needs to absorb Moonlight

Force to cultivate. The divine hall can only gather Moonlight Force at a faster rate in outer space, so if it's moved into this independent space, it'll definitely affect Yue'er cultivation greatly, and if you want to cultivate by absorbing Moonlight Force, you need to have fairy Hao Yue's cultivation method and a special constitution. Even if you send the female clansmen into the divine hall, they can't absorb Moonlight Force."

"All the high-tier battle skills and cultivation methods obtained by ancestors have been stored in the library of the clan so that our heritage deepens. Jian Chen, you're also a great elder of the clan, so can't you think of the future of the clan?" Changyang Qing Jueri spoke to Jian Chen with an ordinary tone. He seemed like he was discussing something simple with Jian Chen.

Jian Chen sneered, and his eyes suddenly narrowed. A pressing coldness constantly flickered in his eyes as he called out, "Changyang Qing Jueri, are you forcing me to do that?" Jian Chen referred to Changyang Qing Jueri by his name. He was furious, so he showed no respect.

Changyang Qing Jueri stared blankly at how Jian Chen behaved, where he wanted to fight as soon as there was a disagreement. A sliver of cold light flickered in the depths of his eyes, and he said with a deep voice, "Changyang Xiangtian, this is the rules of the clan. All predecessors have abided by them. Do you plan on breaking them?"

"Jueri, enough. Xiangtian's only just returned to the clan. He hasn't adapted to the rules, so let's not talk about the Winged Tiger God and Bright Moon Divine Hall for now," Changyang Qing Yun

mediated. He knew that forcing Jian Chen to do things he did not want to do with his stubborn personality would probably lead to blunders.

“Changyang Qing Jueri, do you really think that I, Jian Chen, really care about the position of a great elder? If it weren’t for my great-grandfather, I definitely would not have taken up the position. I hope none of you mention requests that go overboard in the future, or don’t blame me for disrespecting my elders,” Jian Chen coldly said. Even though he was in a protector clan right now, he felt no fear.

“Luan’er, let’s go!” Throwing that down, Jian Chen strode toward the exit of the clan with Huang Luan. He paid no attention to Changyang Qing Yun and the others who had already paled.

“Everyone, let’s not go overboard with Xiangtian. He’s no ordinary clansmen. We got him to join the protector clan after much difficulty, so if we end up chasing him away, only we will be in for the loss,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao grumbled. He seemed extremely displeased.

“Think about the matters with Flame City. Back then, when the ten protector clans appeared at the same time to stop Jian Chen, everyone still ended up helpless in the end,” added Changyang Zu Xiao, before leaving with Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

Jian Chen and Huang Luan left the protector clan accompanied by Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Xiao. As they traveled to the exit, the two great elders constantly comforted Jian Chen and also put in good words about the protector clan.

“My great-grandson, don’t let elder Qing Yun and Jueri get to your mind. The clan’s rules are indeed like that, so they’re just considering the clan’s future,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao explained.

Jian Chen did not want to dwell on the matter anymore, so he said to Changyang Zu Yunxiao, “I want to know about the strength and location of the Yama Hall.”

“The Yama Hall!” Changyang Zu Yunxiao slightly frowned. After a while of thought, he said, “That’s an organization that has existed on the continent for over a hundred thousand years. Their strength is quite impressive, much stronger than ordinary ancient clans. The leader of the organization was a Saint King at the Eighth Heavenly Layer a thousand years ago, but he was heavily injured by the sect master of the Bloodsword sect, Houston. He was at death’s door, but now that a whole millenium has passed, I wonder if the former Yama has recovered.

“Other than the former Yama, who is the most powerful, there are two other Saint Kings. One of them is the current Yama while the other is the Spectral Elder. Their strengths are unknown, and the organization is set up in a divine hall. It often moves around, so even if you use everything you have to look for them, it’s extremely difficult to find where they are in a short amount of time.”

Jian Chen learned some information regarding the assassination organization from Changyang Zu Yunxiao before bidding farewell to them. He directly proceeded to the sea realm through a Space Gate constructed by Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

Jian Chen and Huang Luan appeared above a boundless ocean, heading to where the Sea race was after determining their orientation.

Suddenly, the sunny sky darkened in an instant. A thick layer of clouds gathered at a shocking rate, blotting out the sky. The clouds radiated with light of seven colors.

“Someone’s reaching Saint King.” Both Jian Chen and Huang Luan became stunned. Jian Chen stared at the rainbow clouds in the sky as he murmured.

From today on, there would be one more Saint King.

On a desolate little island several tens of thousand kilometers away from Jian Chen, a bare-chested, middle-aged man in shorts sat on the ground. The profound presence of the mysteries of the world constantly radiated from him as the surrounding space violently shook so much that it was warping. It blurred the man’s figure.

In the independent space inhabited by the Tyrant’s Blade School, a hundred-meter-tall, glistening machete stood in a valley protected by multiple powerful formations. It possessed a devastating might as it radiated with a bright glow.

Suddenly, the machete began to tremble slightly even though it had stood there without moving for a very long time. Something seemed to have awakened within the blade, causing it to radiate

with a vast pressure. It constantly increased, reaching an unbelievable level in the blink of an eye.

An extremely powerful energy fluctuated within the machete. It usually never stirred, yet it began to flow slowly at this moment.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The powerful formations in the surroundings that trapped the machete all exploded. The clear resonance of the blade rang through the entire space, and then the machete turned into a silver blob. It ripped through space and vanished from the independent world.

“Sh\*t! The Emperor Armament’s run away!”

A panic-stricken and terrified cry suddenly rang out at almost the same time the machete had disappeared. Six people of varying ages fused with the surrounding space, arriving where the machete was in a single step.

All six of them were great elders of the Tyrant’s Blade School. Fear and disbelief had flooded all of their faces right now.

“What’s happened? It was all fine, so how could the Emperor Armament run off without any reason...”

“This has never appeared in the records, so in other words, this is the first time something like this has happened in all of history...”

“The Emperor Armament is the treasure of our Tyrant’s Blade School. We can’t afford to lose it. We need to get it back...”

“The Emperor Armament ties into the heritage of the Tyrant’s Blade School. No matter how great the price is, we have to get it back...”

The great elders all became extremely stern as they panicked inside. They immediately opened the World Gate to the outside world and used a secret technique to sense where the Emperor Armament was. They chased after it.

In the vast ocean, the seven-colored rainbow clouds flooded the sky. The burly, middle-aged man remained with his eyes closed as he sat on the desolate island.

At this moment, an extremely terrifying energy appeared boldly from the horizon. A streak of dazzling white light cut through the sky, traveling straight for the middle-aged man with unbelievable speed.

Jian Chen sensed the extremely powerful energy ripple immediately from several tens of thousand kilometers away. He immediately became astounded and hoarsely said, “An Emperor Armament, this is the presence of an Emperor Armament. What terrifying pulses of energy. It gives me the feeling that I’m faced up against a Saint Emperor. It’s a mere weapon, yet it possesses such terrifying might. Is it an Emperor Armament of a protector clan?” Jian Chen hesitated for a moment before hurrying over quickly



with Huang Luan.

The blinding white light descended onto the island, stopping above the middle-aged man's head. It transformed into a 1.5-meter-long machete. The blade hovered gently as it enveloped the man with a dazzling glow.

The man seemed to sense nothing as he remained seated there.

The space near the island ripped open and formed a five-colored Space Gate. The great elders of the Tyrant's Blade School charged out from inside, arriving on the island. As they ran through the air, they surrounded the middle-aged man, who was in the middle of his breakthrough. They were all filled with shock.

## Chapter 1089: [Guihai Yidao](#) (Two)

---

“This is the Emperor Armament that has existed in our Tyrant’s Blade School for more than a million years. Can anyone give me an explanation on what is happening?” A great elder said in shock as disbelief filled his face.

“Who is this person? Why is the Emperor Armament of our school so close with him? This has never happened before...”

“Has the Emperor Armament come out just for this person?”

The great elders of the Tyrant’s Blade School were all frightened. The Emperor Armament was just too important to the protector clan. They could not afford to lose it. They all felt very uneasy when they saw how the Emperor Armament was floating so close to an outsider.

“The Emperor Armament was left behind by our founding ancestor. No one has been able to control it in all these years, yet the Emperor Armament’s behaving in such a strange way now. Has it been controlled by an outsider?”

“The Emperor Armament cannot fall into the hands of outsiders. If it really reaches that point, we’ll kill this person,” an older great elder sternly said. His voice was filled with killing intent.

“Let me retrieve the Emperor Armament.” One of the middle-aged men took a step forward. His hand was protected by a thick layer of Saint Force and World Force as he grabbed at the hilt.

However, as soon as his hand approached the glow of the Emperor Armament, blood was thrown into the air. His hand was reduced to a bloody mess. If he had not pulled it back so quickly, his hand would probably have been destroyed.

“I-impossible... impossible. I’ve actually been injured by the Emperor Armament, and this isn’t because of the backlash from the Emperor Armament.” The man stared at his bloody hand. He felt astounded.

The other great elders of the Tyrant’s Blade School were all shocked as well. They struggled to believe what had just happened. When they touched the Emperor Armament before, they would only suffer a backlash from the great power of the Emperor Armament. This was the first time an injury from the Emperor Armament had occurred.

The great elders did not understand what was happening to the Emperor Armament, but they could not approach it. As a result, all they could do was stand there and slowly wait.

Jian Chen and Huang Luan approached the island very quickly. They saw what was happening there clearly. Jian Chen recognized the weapon as an Emperor Armament of a protector clan, so he secretly raised his guard.

“Jian Chen, do you know what they’re doing?” Huang Luan leaned on Jian Chen as she asked a question out of curiosity while pointing her finger at the island.

Jian Chen shook his head as he stared attentively at the Emperor Armament and the man who had suffered earlier. He too felt extremely curious.

The great elders discovered Jian Chen as he approached them and recognized him with a single glance. A sliver of fear appeared in their eyes as they looked around cautiously before relaxing a little.

“Jian Chen, the Tyrant’s Blade School has matters here. I hope you do not approach us just in case it leads to a misunderstanding.” An elderly man clasped his hands at Jian Chen from afar.

Jian Chen and Huang Luan did not get any closer, watching on from afar in amusement.

“So it’s the Emperor Armament of the Tyrant’s Blade School. By the looks of it, the Emperor Armament seems to have lost control and has come here by itself. Though, who is that person, and why has the Emperor Armament suddenly sought him out?” Jian Chen deduced inside.

The great elders all formed a circle around the middle-aged man who was breaking through to prevent him from suddenly fleeing after rousing from the breakthrough.

The Emperor Armament levitated above the burly man as a layer of blinding white light enveloped the man from above. This was an extremely powerful type of light, able to easily injure Saint Kings.

Clearly, it was protecting the middle-aged man who was in the middle of his breakthrough.

This lasted for six whole hours before the man completed his breakthrough. He slowly opened his eyes.

In that instant, two bolts of lightning seemed to shoot out of his eyes. His eyes became abnormally bright, like two bright pearls in the dark night.

All the great elders of the Tyrant's Blade School shuddered inside under the gaze of the man. At that moment, they discovered in shock that they seemed to have been seen through by the middle-aged man, as if nothing was a secret to him.

The great elders all became extremely astounded. They were all people who had stepped into Saint King for many years, yet they had just been seen through by someone who had just reached Saint King. They found this unbelievable.

The heavy gaze of the middle-aged man vanished very quickly and returned back to normal. His pitch-black and profound eyes seemed to contain a whole different world, as if it was a vast and boundless universe.

The man slowly raised his head toward the sky and faintly smiled. He produced a deep sigh, "Tian Yuan Continent, I, Guihai Yidao, have finally returned. I never thought that the energy of the world would have become so thin after being gone for so long." The man was melancholy. He gently waved an arm and the

Emperor Armament floating above him immediately and obediently flew into his hand. The glow of the blade actually failed to harm the man.

“I have already returned successfully. I wonder if you guys have returned.” Reminiscence flooded his eyes as he stared at the sky.

The great elders all witnessed what the Emperor Armament did. They felt utterly dumbfounded. The Emperor Armament had existed for so many years in the Tyrant’s Blade School, yet there was no one in all of history who could wield it in such an easy fashion.

“Sir, who are you? In your hand is the Emperor Armament of the Tyrant’s Blade School. Please return it immediately, just in case it leads to a misunderstanding,” The elderly great elder said.

The man leveled his gaze at the great elders around him. He said, “Are you disciples of the Tyrant’s Blade School? I never thought the Tyrant’s Blade School would become weaker and weaker.”

“What did you say!?”

The great elders’ expressions all drastically changed. Their eyes narrowed, and they seemed to be ready to fight over the next disagreement.

As one of the ten protector clans of the continent, the Tyrant’s Blade School was an overlord without a doubt. No one had ever

dared to speak to them like that.

The man smiled scornfully, “My name is Guihai Yidao. I wonder if there’s still anyone who remembers me after so many years.” As he said that, he gently swung the Emperor Armament and cut through the space like a hot knife through butter. A Space Gate formed and he directly left through it. However, the landscape beyond the Space Gate seemed the same as the space where the Tyrant’s Blade School dwelled.

The great elders all stood there astounded. Disbelief flooded their faces as their hearts churned. They struggled to calm down.

“Guihai Yidao, Guihai Yidao... I-i- is he...”

One of the great elders said with a trembling voice as shock filled his face.

“Impossible, it can’t be him...”

The great elders all involuntarily cried out. None of them were able to remain calm.

“He can actually return to our independent space without going through the World Gate. Let’s return quickly.” The elderly great elder hurriedly said as he watched the man disappear.

Afterward, the great elders all split open the space and left, returning to the protector clan as fast as they could.

From afar, Jian Chen stared deeply in the direction where the great elders had disappeared. A gleam of light flashed through his eyes as he began to ponder. He felt extremely curious about the middle-aged man's identity.

"Guihai Yidao. That person's called Guihai Yidao. Who is he?" Jian Chen gently murmured. However, before he could obtain an answer, he left with Huang Luan, continuing his way to the territory of the Sea race.

Soon, Jian Chen arrived in the air above the sea realm with Huang Luan. The sea goddess' illusionary figure appeared almost the moment he arrived.

"Your majesty, Luan'er possesses the Water Spirit's Body. I want to leave her in the sea realm to cultivation," Jian Chen clasped his hands to the sea goddess in an extremely courteous manner.

The sea goddess slowly nodded. She turned her blurry face to Huang Luan, "Jian Chen, the secret technique that entwines your friend's fate with someone else has been removed, but another secret technique has been planted in her by someone else."

"What? Another person's planted a new secret technique in Huang Luan's soul?" Jian Chen paled in fright. He seemed to have been struck by a bolt from the blue.

Huang Luan's face also began to sink. A sliver of paleness appeared on her face as she tightly clenched her fists. She



remained silent.

“Correct, and this secret technique has been recently planted. It has completely fused with her soul, so it hides extremely deep. If it weren’t for my powerful soul, probably no one would have realized it,” said the sea goddess.

Jian Chen’s face began to darken. He gnashed his teeth, “Changyang Qing Yun! It must be Changyang Qing Yun that old fox.” Jian Chen’s face was cold as killing intent flooded him inside.

“Jian Chen, I can sense that this secret technique cannot pose any harm to your friend for now. Leave your friend in the Sea Goddess Hall. I’ll get the hall master to think of a method and see if she can remove the seal or not. However, the secret techniques of the protector clans are extremely profound, and those that target the soul are especially complicated. Even I am helpless before them,” said the sea goddess.

Jian Chen clasped his hands in gratitude before leaving Huang Luan there.

“Jian Chen, I will come and find you after I become a Saint King.” Huang Luan cried out as she tearfully stared at Jian Chen’s back. She knew that there she wouldn’t see Jian Chen for a very long time.

In the Tyrant’s Blade School, the Emperor Armament had been returned to the forbidden grounds. It was stabbed into the ground in a hundred-meter-long form as it radiated with powerful blade

Qi. The bare-chested Guihai Yidao sat on the giant hilt with his eyes closed.

The great elders returned from outside and excitedly stared at Guihai Yidao with a group of Saint Rulers.

“Are you really the founder of our Tyrant’s Blade Sect?” The elderly great elder asked with a trembling voice. His eyes were filled with hope.

“So many years have passed. I didn’t think you bunch of juniors would still remember me. Looks like I didn’t found this school for nothing,” Guihai Yidao said with his eyes closed. His voice was extremely indifferent, giving off an unfathomable feeling.

The group of expects immediately rejoiced when they confirmed Guihai Yidao’s identity. However, all of them were filled with endless suspicion at the same time.

“Founder, it’s been over a million years since that age. H-how is it possible for you to still be alive?” A great elder asked.

“When I reached the end of my life, I used an absolute secret technique to seal my memories into the Wave-breaking Blade and threw my soul into samsara at the same time. Once the circumstances are right, my memories sealed in the Wave-breaking Blade will sense it and control the weapon to come find me. The weapon will return my memories, allowing me to remember my past life. I have only just recovered my memories right now.” Guihai Yidao explained.

Note: Guihai Yidao translates roughly to ‘a stroke (of the blade) to the sea.’

# Chapter 1090: Devastating the Yama Hall (One)

---

All the experts of the Tyrant's Blade School became utterly astounded when they heard this story that was sounded like a fairytale. Their horizons had been broadened.

“The founder really is remarkable to know such a heaven-defying technique.” All the experts began to curry up to him. All of them felt extremely emotional. Their founder had actually revived and could masterfully wield the Emperor Armament. This was a blessing for the protector clan.

Many of them could even see a future where the Tyrant's Blade School would surpass the nine other protector clans.

“My nine other good friends chose the same method as me to be revived. Has there been any disturbances with the nine other protector clans lately?” Guihai Yidao questioned.

“Founder, it has all been peaceful with the nine other protector clans. It's just that an unprecedented genius has appeared in the Changyang clan, reaching Saint King in less than a hundred years,” the elderly great elder politely replied.

Guihai Yidao snapped open his eyes as he thought inside, “He really is an unprecedented genius to reach Saint King in less than a hundred years. He would be a genius even in the Saints' World. Though, I feel like he can't be that friend of mine.”

Guihai Yidao sat in silence for a while before he then said, “I’ve only just reached Saint King. All of you leave. I need to go into seclusion over the next period of time and recover my strength from before as soon as possible.”

“Yes, founder!” All the experts of the protector clan replied together before slowly leaving.

Soon after that, the World Gate of the Tyrant’s Blade School closed, completely cutting off all connection from the Tian Yuan Continent. The revival of the founding ancestor was an extremely important matter to the protector clan. To prevent it from being leaked, they sealed the entire realm, just in case there was anyone who wanted to harm the founding ancestor before he recovered his strength.

A small valley that barely anyone knew about existed at the edge of the Cross Mountains. The entire valley was covered by a faint barrier, while simple and honest villagers lived their lives there. They farmed for their own food, passing their days steadily and away from worldly affairs.

Today, a Space Gate suddenly appeared outside the barrier in the quiet little valley. The white-clothed Jian Chen emerged with the black-robed Hei Yu, before entering the valley.

The barrier outside the valley was used to repel attacks from magical beasts, so the two of them easily passed through it.

Longevity Valley seemed the same as before. Jian Chen made his way down the familiar path of the village. A few farmers in the fields saw Jian Chen. They greeted him enthusiastically, while Jian Chen responded with a smile and some light responses.

Jian Chen found uncle Xiu Mi in the village spinning a new wicker basket. Half of Xiu Mi's hair had already turned gray since the last time Jian Chen saw him, even his eyebrows had grayed a little.

“Jian Chen, you've finally returned.” Xiu Mi was not surprised at all with Jian Chen's return. He stopped what he was doing, dusted off his hands, and stood up.

“Uncle Xiu Mi, your hair...” Surprise and doubt filled Jian Chen's eyes as he stared at Xiu Mi's white hair.

Xiu Mi freely smiled, “It's nothing. I'm just approaching the end of my life, that's all.”

Jian Chen's heart trembled when he heard that. He said, “Uncle Xiu Mi, what did you say? You're approaching the end of your life? How much more time do you have?”

“Heaven Saint Masters only have a thousand years of life. I've lived for more than a thousand years already. If it weren't for the ten-thousand-year heavenly resources from father, I would have died long ago. I have roughly thirty or forty years left,” Xiu Mi sighed. His face became filled with indescribable melancholy.

“Uncle Xiu Mi, don’t you worry. Before that time, I will do everything I can so you can reach Saint Ruler,” Jian Chen sternly said. When his Saint Weapon had shattered back then, it was uncle Xiu Mi who had brought him to Longevity Valley, thus saving his life. He definitely could not just watch uncle Xiu Mi approach the end of his life.

Xiu Mi shook his head, “Jian Chen, I thank you for your kindness, but don’t waste your efforts. I can never become a Saint Ruler.”

“Impossible. That can never be the case. I will definitely find a way,” Jian Chen swore.

“Jian Chen, he’s congenitally incomplete. He can never reach Saint Ruler,” Hei Yu spoke from beside Jian Chen.

“What! Congenitally incomplete!” Jian Chen became stunned. He asked, “Uncle Xiu Mi, what is this about?”

Xiu Mi gently sighed, “I need to start the story with my mother. A thousand years ago, my mother died in the battle between the Bloodsword sect, the Yama Hall, and the Underworld sect. At that time, I was still a fetus and not born. Originally, I was supposed to die in my mother’s belly, but I was saved by my father in the end. Although my life was left intact, I was not born normally, so I have always been congenitally incomplete. I don’t have any birth defects, but my talent is horrendous, and it can’t be altered even with heavenly resources. I can’t reach Saint Ruler either. My father had even once said that for me to reach Heaven Saint Master had caught him by surprise.”

“Isn’t there any other way to make up for this incompleteness?” Jian Chen asked urgently.

Xiu Mi shook his head and gently smiled, “Actually, everyone will face death. Even great Saint Emperors only have a lifespan of ten thousand years. I am only leaving first, and everyone will end up like me sooner or later. I have already gotten past death.”

Jian Chen fell silent as he struggled to accept the situation inside.

Xiu Mi pulled out a divine hall from his Space Ring and passed it to Jian Chen. He said, “Jian Chen, my father has already gone into seclusion. Before he left, he specially made me give this divine hall to you. This divine hall is the foothold for the Bloodsword sect on the continent. It’s controlled by the sect masters of every generation, and now that you’ve become the sect master, this divine hall should be yours.”

Jian Chen accepted the divine hall as he stared at Xiu Mi with mixed emotions. He solemnly said, “Uncle Xiu Mi, it doesn’t matter if there’s no hope. I will try to find methods to help you.”

Xiu Mi shook his head, “Jian Chen, I am destined to not reach Saint Ruler, so don’t waste your efforts. Now that my father doesn’t have much time left either, if he departs as well, there’ll only be Little Fatty and his mother left. If you want to help me, help me look after Little Fatty and Shelly.

“Shelly used to be the young lady of a great clan. After marrying



me several decades ago, she has spent her time with me in this valley that completely cuts us off from the rest of the world. It's been too hard on her." Xiu Mi felt ashamed.

For Xiu Mi to not feel any regrets, Jian Chen swore to look after Little Fatty and his mother. He then asked Xiu Mi where the Yama Hall was located.

"Jian Chen, have they offended you since you're looking for them so suddenly?" Xiu Mi immediately brightened up when he heard about the Yama Hall. He stared at Jian Chen in interest.

"Correct," replied Jian Chen.

"The location of the Yama Hall is always extremely well-hidden. It changes often, so they have no fixed location. However, they can't hide it from the investigators of our Bloodsword sect no matter how they try. The matters of the Bloodsword sect used to all be handled by me, so I just happen to know where they're located.

"A thousand years ago, my mother died to the combined attacks of the experts from the Yama Hall and Underworld sect. I've never seen my mother's face. My father still holds extremely deep hatred for the two organizations even though he's stepped away from the continent over the past few years. It's just that he swore to my mother in the past, so my father's been enduring the hatred within him and did not wipe out the two organizations. Jian Chen, if it's possible, I hope you can wipe out the Yama Hall for us and take revenge for me mother." A cold light flickered in Xiu Mi's eyes.

“Don’t worry, uncle Xiu Mi. Since you can’t take revenge personally, leave it to me,” Jian Chen swore.

After learning the location of the Yama Hall, Jian Chen left Longevity Valley with Hei Yu. However, Jian Chen remained heavy-hearted due to uncle Xiu Mi reaching the end of his life.

If he had not brought Jian Chen into Longevity Valley back then, Jian Chen probably would have been reduced to a cold corpse long ago. It would have been impossible for him to still be alive and attain such great accomplishments. Although he did not care about his own death at all, Jian Chen did not want to watch him just die from old age.

“Senior Hei Yu, is there really no method for uncle Xiu Mi to reach Saint Ruler?” Jian Chen asked Hei Yu.

Hei Yu shook his head, “He’s congenitally deficient in his soul, so he can’t comprehend the mysteries of the world. Naturally, he can’t reach Saint Ruler either. Honestly, it’s already extremely surprising that he could reach Heaven Saint Master with his current circumstances.”

Jian Chen’s mood grew even heavier, and he said nothing more.

Jian Chen summoned Rui Jin, Hong Lian, and the white tiger from the artifact space, before passing through a Space Gate to Flame City. He called all the Saint Rulers that had joined the Flame Mercenaries, only leaving behind Jiede Tai to watch over the city.

Jian Chen left with Rui Jin, the five Saint Rulers, and the others through another Space Gate that took them to where the Yama Hall was located.

The assassins of Yama Hall had once made an attempt on Jian Chen's life. They were also the murderers of uncle Xiu Mi's mother, people who owed a blood debt to uncle Xiu's family. As a result, Jian Chen needed to wipe out the Yama Hall whether it was for his own revenge or for uncle Xiu's revenge. However, if he did it under the name of the Flame Mercenaries, it would make them even more famous.

Jian Chen's group of nine along with the Winged Tiger God arrived through a Space Gate. They traveled threateningly toward the Yama Hall, and just as they arrived, the news that the Flame Mercenaries wanted to deal with the Yama Hall of the three great assassination organizations quickly spread through the Flame Mercenaries. The news immediately caused a very large disturbance in Flame City, before spreading like wildfire. Every single person who heard the news became astounded.

# Chapter 1091: Devastating the Yama Hall (Two)

---

“The Flame Mercenaries want to take on the Yama Hall. It’ll be troublesome for the Yama Hall now...”

“Not necessarily. The Flame Mercenaries may be very strong, but they have only developed in the past few decades after all. On the other hand, the Yama Hall has stood on the Tian Yuan Continent for over a hundred thousand years. Their heritage is very great, so if the Flame Mercenaries want to wipe them out, it won’t be easy...”

“The Flame Mercenaries already have the capability to take on the Yama Hall. Both of them will suffer great casualties from this battle...”

“The Flame Mercenaries has already reached into the millions. I wonder how many people they are going to mobilize...”

The matter about the Flame Mercenaries clashing with the Yama Hall became the center of attention for many people. Many of them discussed the news.

In a desolate region of the Tian Yuan Continent, a pitch-black palace stood quietly in a group of mountains. The palace was covered by boulders, so even if someone flew over from above, they would struggle to notice its existence. It was extremely well-hidden.

The black-clothed Bi Dao sat in a room within the palace. He was pale-white while an odd gleam of light flickered in his eyes, like two dancing will-o'-wisps.

Walls of flames connecting the floor to the ceiling of the room surrounded Bi Dao, trapping him there. Although the flames lacked any heat, they possessed a stunning force. Not only could they scorch the air, they could even melt space, causing the space around the flames to distort and warp.

“Brat, you’ve really brought disaster to me. You’ve actually entered the divine hall of the Yama Hall. Now we’re both trapped here,” venerable Poisonsword said with a sunken face. His resentment for Bi Dao had already become bone-deep.

Over the past few days of being trapped here, venerable Poisonsword had tried many times to charge out, but every attempt was obstructed by the black flames. The flames were called Demonic Hellfire, and they were extremely harmful to the soul. They restrained venerable Poisonsword who was just a soul.

“I didn’t think that they’d be people of the Yama Hall either, let alone the fact that this would be such a powerful divine hall,” Bi Dao said with a communication technique. His voice was extremely stern. He had miscalculated, underestimating this group of murderers.

“Hahaha, descendant of the Bi family, have you thought it through? Are you going to hand over the beast fur or not? If you

do, we might be able to give you a chance and spare your life. Otherwise, there will only be death.” A husky voice rang from the darkness as a black-cloaked man slowly appeared outside the flame. He coldly stared at Bi Dao.

Venerable Poisonsword’s flickering eyes locked onto the man. He became hesitant as he thought inside, “That brat’s actually gotten me trapped in this divine hall, and my soul is being injured by the Demonic Hellfire. I don’t have much power left either, so it’s impossible for me to escape. There is only death. I need to find another way to survive.”

He finally made up his mind after hesitating. Clenching his teeth, he said, “Call the Yama of your organization. I have something to say to him.”

“Have you finally made up your mind? I am the Yama, so go on ahead,” laughed the man.

“Yama, I am venerable Poisonsword who once freely wandered the continent. After facing the end of my life, I used a secret technique to protect my soul, and now I share the same body as this brat, Bi Dao. If you can assist me in taking over this body, I am willing to help your Yama Hall do three things. Of course, I will also hand over that beast fur you are talking about,” said venerable Poisonsword.

“Old bastard, you’ve betrayed me!” Bi Dao fell into a fury as his soul immediately began to struggle. He wanted to forcefully break free of venerable Poisonsword’s restraint and regain control of his body.

“Venerable Poisonsword? Is it that venerable Poisonsword who had a foot planted in Saint Emperor and clashed against a Saint Emperor ten times without suffering defeat?” The Yama became surprised, and his eyes immediately lit up.

“Correct, that’s me!” Venerable Poisonsword raised his chest and pridefully replied. His eyes flickered violently as he did everything he could to restrain Bi Dao.

The Yama stared at venerable Poisonsword for a while before coldly laughing. He said, “I never thought it would actually be the infamous venerable Poisonsword. Though, you should know that once you enter this divine hall, there’s only death unless a Saint Emperor comes personally. Right now, your life is completely in my hands. If you want it back, three things is far from enough.”

“Then I will do ten things,” venerable Poisonsword said with a deep voice.

“No, no, no, that’s still not enough. Venerable, if you want to live, there is only one way, and that is to join our Yama Hall and become a Protector King,” chuckled the Yama.

“Okay, I agree!” Venerable Poisonsword agreed in the end after hesitating a little.

The Yama immediately began to laugh without restraint, “I welcome venerable Poisonsword for joining our Yama Hall...”

Before he could finish speaking, a violent boom rang from outside. The entire divine hall violently shook, and both the Yama and venerable Poisonsword stumbled since they were completely caught off guard. They almost fell.

“God dammit, what’s happening?” The Yama’s face changed, and he immediately vanished into the darkness. When he reappeared, he was on the top floor of the divine hall. Cracks had already appeared on the ceiling of the divine hall as streaks of sunlight flooded in. They illuminated the dark interior slightly.

“T-the divine hall’s been broken.” The Yama immediately paled in fright as he looked at the crack. He involuntarily cried out, “Has there been a Saint Emperor who has come to destroy our divine hall?”

Although he was shocked, he responded extremely quickly. With a flip of his hand, a few pieces of jade appeared, and he immediately crushed all of them.

Figures moved about within the divine hall, and the ten Protector Kings, completely shrouded in black cloaks, appeared by the Yama’s side. They stared at the cracked ceiling in shock.

Outside, Jian Chen, Rui Jin, Hei Yu, Hong Lian, the white tiger, and the five Saint Rulers of the Flame Mercenaries levitated above as they stared down at the black divine hall. Hei Yu wielded a machete as he radiated with a chilling pressure. It was the weapon that possessed origin energy.



The five Saint Rulers stood side by side behind them. They carried a huge banner—the banner of the Flame Mercenaries.

“This divine hall’s rather tough. It must have been made by an extremely powerful Saint Emperor. I’d like to see how many times it can endure my attacks though,” sneered Hei Yu. Another powerful blade Qi appeared out of nowhere and struck the divine hall, causing it to tremble violently once more. It shattered quite a few rocks in the surroundings while the cracks grew larger.

“May I inquire which senior has come, and why you are targeting our Yama Hall? Has our Yama Hall offended you in any way?” A husky voice rang out from within, but the person did not appear.

“The captain of the Flame Mercenaries, Jian Chen, has come personally. Yama Hall, why don’t you hurry up and come receive him?” The Saint Ruler carrying the banner called out. His voice was thunderous, spreading through the surroundings.

“So it’s captain Jian Chen. My Yama Hall has failed to welcome you from afar, so please forgive us. However, may I ask when have we offended captain Jian Chen?” The Yama’s voice rang out from within.

“Many years ago, I was targeted by your organization in the City of God when I moved around under the name of Yang Yutian. I’ve come for revenge today,” Jian Chen coldly answered.

“Captain Jian Chen, I am the current master of the Yama Hall. I

did not know about this, but I will definitely investigate the matter with everything I have. If it is true, we are willing to hand over the assassin who targeted you back then. I hope captain Jian Chen can spare the Yama Hall,” the Yama submissively replied. He had heard about Jian Chen long ago, and he knew that Jian Chen was someone that even the ten protector clans could do nothing to.

“It won’t be that simple. Senior Hei Yu, please destroy this divine hall for me,” Jian Chen said coldly as dense killing intent appeared in his eyes.

“I’ve never felt what it’s like to destroy a divine hall, so let me try it today.” Hei Yu became rather exited, before flying up to the divine hall. His machete glowed with a dazzling light as he mercilessly chopped at the divine hall.

Bang! Bang! Bang!...

Violent sounds constantly rang out. Every strike from Hei Yu was no weaker than a Saint King’s attack. The divine hall quickly began to shatter under Hei Yu’s constant attacks. The entire top portion of the divine hall was removed.

The trembling of the divine hall had already alerted all the assassins within it. Many of them lost their usual composure and began to panic.

The Demonic Hellfire on the first floor of the divine hall disappeared. Bi Dao’s eyes flickered while Venerable Poisonsword remained in control. He gazed at the shaking divine hall in shock

and suspicion as he murmured, “What’s happening to the Yama Hall? Why is the trembling so powerful? Has an enemy come for revenge, and are they attacking the divine hall right now?”

He immediately became extremely emotional when he thought what could be happening. He seemed to see hope of escaping.

# Chapter 1092: Devastating the Yama Hall

## (Three)

---

“Bi Dao you brat, how dare you place me in jeopardy, almost dooming me eternally. Once I get out, I’ll let you have it real good. Don’t blame me for not showing you mercy now that you’ve acted so heartlessly,” venerable Poisonsword viciously said.

“Venerable Poisonsword, aren’t you going to keep the promise between us?” Bi Dao coldly asked. His voice was hoarse.

“Keep it my ass. You’ve made it so difficult for me. I almost died to the Yama Hall. Your bloody promise can go to hell.” Venerable Poisonsword was completely without fear now. After controlling Bi Dao’s body for so long, his soul had grown much more accustomed to the body. He was very confident that he could suppress Bi Dao’s resistance and thus gain full control over the body.

“Once I get out of here, the first thing I’ll do is devour your soul and make up for the overconsumption of my soul,” said venerable Poisonsword. The two of them communicated in their consciousness, so no outsider could hear them.

At this moment, the divine hall swayed once more and shook violently. It almost caused venerable Poisonsword to lose his footing.

The top portion of the divine hall had been completely destroyed, revealing the interior to the sunlight. Hei Yu did not seem to want

to chop the divine hall in half with a single stroke, so he currently shaved away at it stroke by stroke.

Rui Jin and Hong Lian did nothing, standing coldly by Jian Chen's side. They stared coldly at the ruined divine hall.

At this moment, Rui Jin and Hong Lian's eyes suddenly narrowed. Just as they were about to move, Jian Chen turned in an instant and drew the Emperor Armament at the same time, stabbing out with unbelievable speed.

With a boom, Jian Chen's Emperor Armament collided with a black dagger that had suddenly appeared out of nowhere. Afterward, the black-robed Yama appeared there, quickly retreating with the dagger in his hand. Bright red blood sprayed from his mouth, drifting through the air in the form of mist.

"Your hiding technique is extremely great, but tricks like that are useless against me," Jian Chen wielded the Emperor Armament as he sneered at the Yama.

As soon as he said that, another ten Saint Weapons appeared out of nowhere, silently stabbing at Jian Chen with a dark light.

The ten Protector Kings of Yama Hall had struck out at the same time.

Jian Chen smiled scornfully. With a jolt of his arm, he stabbed out ten times in an instance, and it became difficult to distinguish

between what was real and false with the blurs. Every stroke cut through space, creating a small crack. They were all extremely accurate, striking the ten Saint Weapons with the utmost precision.

The Saint Weapons in the hands of the ten Protector Kings suddenly shattered. They were destroyed by the Emperor Armament like a hammer taken to a nut, while a small, bloody slash appeared on their necks, before quickly expanding.

Not only did Jian Chen's attacks shatter their Saint Weapons, it even cut through their necks. Slivers of brutal Chaotic Force entered their heads from their neck, wiping out their souls.

The ten Protector Kings were killed off in a single clash with Jian Chen. Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers were as weak as an ant before a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King. They could not even resist.

Boom!

Hei Yu had lost interest in playing any more. With a deafening boom, he swung out as hard as he could and split the ruined divine hall in half. All the formations within collapsed before the attack.

The divine hall had been completely destroyed. Losing their greatest protection, all the assassins hiding within flew out and fled in all directions.

“Hahahaha, I’m right. There really is a supreme experts who’s come to seek trouble with the Yama Hall. Even the extremely tough divine hall has been destroyed. God is on my side, I’m finally free!” Venerable Poisonsword laughed aloud as he charged out of the ruined divine hall. He did not stick around, joining the group of assassins as he fled into the distance as fast as he could.

“Senior Rui Jin, don’t let them escape, or there’ll be endless future troubles,” Jian Chen coldly said, before charging at the Yama who had just ambushed him.

“Don’t worry, leave it to me,” Rui Jin nonchalantly replied before forming a seal with his hands. He called out, “Secret technique of the Dragon clan, Dragon’s Domain!”

The surroundings suddenly lit up, and in that instant, the deep-blue sky disappeared. The entire world became coated in a thick layer of golden light that expanded in all directions to several kilometers away with Rui Jin as its center. It formed an independent world, severing the connection to the outside and thus trapping all the assassins in there.

Also, a mysterious power filled the golden world, firmly trapping them all where they could not move at all.

There were quite a few Saint Rulers hidden among the assassins that fled. Trapped by the mysterious power, they immediately began to struggle as hard as they could, but even with their strength as Saint Rulers, they could not break free no matter how much they tried.

Yama was also affected. Although it did not immobilize him, he seemed to have sunk into quicksand, where his movements became slow.

Jian Chen charged toward him threateningly with the Emperor Armament. With a black flicker, the weapon stabbed mercilessly toward the Yama with a destructive energy.

A sliver of panic appeared in the Yama's eyes. Even at his peak, he was not Jian Chen's opponent, much less now that his body was restricted, dulling all his movements. It made it even more impossible for him to block Jian Chen's attacks.

"Jian Chen, are you really going to kill all of us? There are quite a few assassins of the Yama Hall outside. Aren't you afraid that they'll come hunting your Flame Mercenaries with their assassination skills?" The Yama called out in alarm, wanting Jian Chen's determination to kill to waver.

However, the Yama's threat did nothing. Jian Chen's Emperor Armament stabbed mercilessly into his chest, impaling him. Slivers of destructive, brutal Chaotic Force entered the Yama's body through the Emperor Armament, destroying all signs of life within him as they snaked toward his soul.

The Yama's body was reduced to a bloody mess before the brutal Chaotic Force. The violent pain caused him to shriek, and the top of his head immediately shattered. His soul had fled from his body, escaping into the distance.



A gleam of light flashed through Jian Chen's eyes. Controlling the surrounding space with his thoughts, he trapped the Yama's soul so that he could not flee.

The Yama was a Saint King, but he was extremely weak as a soul. He could not break free from the space frozen by Jian Chen with Jian Chen's comprehension at the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler.

The Yama's body fell out of the sky. With his sharp eyes and quick hands, Jian Chen immediately removed the Space Ring from the Yama's finger, before quickly checking it.

A while later, Jian Chen's face lit up in joy. He pulled out a rock with a radius of half-a-meter from the Space Ring and involuntarily smiled without restraint, "Hahaha, this trip was not a waste! I've finally found the Heaven's Soulstone!" Jian Chen felt extremely excited after obtaining the rock. He felt several hundred times more excited over this than wiping out the Yama Hall since he needed to find fewer and fewer materials for the Azulet swords now.

The Yama's soul immediately understood that the rock was extremely important to Jian Chen when he saw how Jian Chen rejoiced after obtaining it. He immediately used a communication technique on Jian Chen, "Captain Jian Chen, I can tell you where this rock comes from if you let me go."

Jian Chen stared blankly as he pointed the glowing Emperor

Armament at the Yama's soul. With dense killing intent in his eyes, he coldly said, "Speak. Where does this rock come from?"

"I will tell you if you agree to let me go. Otherwise, I won't say anything even if you kill me." The Yama replied with no room for disagreement.

"If you don't talk, I'll wipe out your soul right now and then learn this from another person." The killing intent in Jian Chen's eyes deepened while the terrifying energy from the Emperor Armament ripped through space. It seemed to be trying to suck the Yama's soul into the void.

Sensing Jian Chen's killing intent, the Yama knew that Jian Chen was not joking. Making up his mind, he decided he might as well tell him and said, "This rock comes from the Wasteland Continent."

"The Wasteland Continent? Isn't that the place the Hundred Races inhabit?" Jian Chen whispered inside before swinging his hand. The Emperor Armament cleaved through the Yama's soul, wiping it out.

The master of the Yama Hall disappeared from the world just like this with his strength at the Fourth Heavenly Layer of Saint King.

Jian Chen rejoined Hei Yu, Rui Jin, and the others with the Emperor Armament dripping with Saint King blood. He coldly stared at the assassins from the Yama Hall trapped in the Dragon's Domain. He then turned to the five Saint Rulers that had followed

along. He said, “Kill all those here without mercy!”

“Yes, captain,” the Saint Rulers replied in unison. They were all extremely polite. They immediately charged toward the cloaked people, killing the assassins below Saint Ruler at leisure.

Down below, venerable Poisonsword in Bi Dao’s body was immobilized by the mysterious force within the Dragon’s Domain. He immediately began to panic when he saw that the group of experts who had destroyed the divine hall had begun killing off the assassins. He called out, “Seniors, I am not a member of the Yama Hall. I was trapped in there until you came along and destroyed the Yama Hall. That was how I managed to break free. Please spare me, seniors.”

Venerable Poisonsword meekly begged the people who had easily destroyed the divine hall for his life. Even with his former strength, he would not dare to offend them, much less now.

# Chapter 1093: Saving Bi Dao

---

Venerable Poisonsword in Bi Dao's body mixed in with the group of assassins. Coupled with the fact that Bi Dao also wore long, black robes, he did not attract Jian Chen or the others' attention, until he spoke.

Jian Chen and Rui Jin turned to venerable Poisonsword at the same time. Rui Jin's expression remained the same as before, but Jian Chen's eyes suddenly narrowed. He blankly stared at venerable Poisonsword as his expression changed very quickly.

Even after so many years, Jian Chen was still able to recognize Bi Dao. Bi Dao was his mother's brother as well as his uncle by blood. He would never forget one of his few relatives.

"Uncle!" Jian Chen cried out in surprise, immediately flying toward him.

A sliver of amazement crossed over Rui Jin and Hong Lian's faces when they heard what Jian Chen said. They followed Jian Chen.

Venerable Poisonsword had obviously heard Jian Chen's cry as well, which stunned him. He became rather puzzled.

"Xiangtian, it's actually Xiangtian. He's actually Xiangtian..." Bi Dao's soul began to violently pulse, no longer as calm as it was before.

“Xiangtian? What Xiangtian? Brat, you recognize these people?” Venerable Poisonsword jumped inside as he felt an ill omen.

At this moment, venerable Poisonsword could feel the mysterious power immobilizing him disappear. He had regained his freedom, but he dared not flee. Any attempts of resistance and escape before an expert like this were futile.

“He’s my nephew. Venerable Poisonsword, I’d like to see how you kill me now,” Bi Dao gnashed his teeth. He began to violently struggle in attempt to regain control over his body.

“What! Your nephew!?” Venerable Poisonsword paled in fright. He worked hard to suppress Bi Dao’s soul as his heart churned.

“That’s completely impossible, you brat. Your nephew cannot be older than you, and you’re not even a hundred years old. How can you have such a powerful nephew? Bi Dao, do you really think that I’m a kid you can trick?” Venerable Poisonsword loudly voiced his thoughts, but he was not confident with what he was thinking at all. Jian Chen’s call of uncle was already perfect evidence.

Jian Chen had arrived by venerable Poisonsword’s side. He stared at venerable Poisonsword in shock, and just when he wanted to speak, he seemed to sense something. His expression changed as his eyes suddenly narrowed. He called out, “You’re not my uncle! Who are you?”

Venerable Poisonsword’s body shook as he became uneasy. However, it was already too late for him to make up for what he

did, so he shamelessly said, “Nephew, I’m your uncle. Don’t you even recognize your uncle Bi Dao anymore?”

Jian Chen sharply glared at him, before he pointed the Emperor Armament in his hand at venerable Poisonsword, radiating with an aura of destruction. He called out, “You still want to lie? Speak, who are you?” A powerful killing intent began to surge from Jian Chen.

Venerable Poisonsword’s heart shivered when he saw how Jian Chen did not fall for his trick.

Rui Jin and Hong Lian arrived by Jian Chen’s side. Their eyes flashed with gleams of light as they stared fixedly at venerable Poisonsword.

“Jian Chen, this body has two souls. Someone is forcefully suppressing the soul of the original owner and, hence, controlling the body.” Rui Jin explained.

Jian Chen’s expression changed, and he yelled at venerable Poisonsword, “Leave my uncle’s body at once, or I’ll wipe you out.”

Venerable Poisonsword’s expression changed as well. He said, “Your uncle is still alive. I’ve fused with your uncle’s soul right now, so if you kill me, your uncle will die as well.”

Jian Chen’s heart sank. If Bi Dao had suffered any physical

damage, there were many ways to heal it regardless of how heavy it was. However, matters would become extremely annoying when they were related to the soul.

“He still hasn’t gained full control over the body, so he’s still not the owner of it. I have ways to deal with him,” Hong Lian suddenly informed them. She extended a finger toward Bi Dao’s chest and stabbed into his heart, removing a droplet of dark-red essence blood. At the same time, a ball of white flames appeared out of nowhere in Hong Lian’s left hand. With a flick of her right hand, Bi Dao’s essence blood shot into the white flames.

The flames turned a red-white as soon as the essence blood entered, and with a wave of her left hand, the flames immediately surged toward Bi Dao’s body.

Hiss! Although it was just a small ball of flames, the flames spread very quickly once they touched Bi Dao. They encased him with a bright surging fire.

“Argh!” Venerable Poisonsword immediately shrieked out in pain under the scorching of the fire. The flames produced no ordinary fire; they were extremely harmful to the soul, where even someone like venerable Poisonsword could not resist.

Hong Lian casually spoke when she saw Jian Chen’s worried expression, “Don’t worry, your uncle’s essence blood has already been fused into the flames by me. It cannot harm your uncle at all and will only target objects that do not belong to your uncle. Using it to deal with that foreign soul in your uncle’s body is extremely suitable for the situation.”

Jian Chen immediately stopped worrying when he heard her explanation.

The flames rolled around Bi Dao's body. Although they did not give off any heat, there was no doubting their strength. The marks left behind by venerable Poisonsword in Bi Dao's body were slowly burned away.

Venerable Poisonsword's shrieks became more and more painful and more and more chilling. Enduring the scorching, he no longer had any extra strength to suppress Bi Dao's soul, allowing Bi Dao to regain control over his own body once again. Venerable Poisonsword's shrieks also became pulses of a soul in Bi Dao's head.

"You old bastard, didn't you want to devour my soul before? Let's see who will be devouring whose soul now." Bi Dao was not a weakling. Without even talking to his nephew, he immediately began to devour venerable Poisonsword's soul instead.

Originally, it would have been impossible for Bi Dao to devour the soul of a Saint King at Great Perfection with his powers, but venerable Poisonsword's soul had become extremely weak under the scorching of the flames. Since his soul was also in Bi Dao's head, Bi Dao was provided with this rare opportunity to devour the soul.

However, Bi Dao's current strength was just too low. His appetite was nowhere great, so Bi Dao reached his limit as soon as he



devoured a tiny portion—venerable Poisonsword was still a Saint King at Great Perfection, even though his soul had become extremely weak. It was impossible for Bi Dao to devour it all in a short amount of time.

The flames that burned venerable Poisonsword's soul gradually subsided, and his soul stopped shrieking. All that was left was a gray pearl floating in Bi Dao's head. It was filled with the presence of the mysteries of the world and the dense power of a soul.

“That foreign soul that's taken over his body has been wiped out. As long as a small portion of the soul remains in your uncle's body, the comprehensions of the mysteries of the world in the foreign soul will remain because of the wonders of my fire and the environment, so if your uncle can absorb all of it, his strength will greatly increase. It is a great opportunity for him.” Hong Lian nonchalantly spoke. Afterward, she raised her hand and a ball of flames rushed out of Bi Dao, returning to her hand before disappearing.

Jian Chen obviously became extremely happy knowing that Bi Dao had obtained such a great opportunity to increase his strength. He arrived by Bi Dao's side and asked out of concern, “Uncle, are you alright? How do you feel?”

Bi Dao slowly opened his eyes. They were filled with weakness and exhaustion. He had yet to convert the portion of the venerable Poisonsword's soul he had devoured into his own, while even more fragments of the soul and mysteries of the world remained in his head. The weakness in his soul was due to the suppression he suffered as well as the fact that his body's control was forcefully

seized from him.

Bi Dao looked at Jian Chen with mixed emotions as gladness filled his face. After so many years, his nephew was becoming more and more outstanding.

“Xiangtian, you’re fine now. The Yama Hall was the mysterious people who wiped out our Bi family long ago. Only you can complete the revenge now,” Bi Dao said.

Killing intent surged in Jian Chen’s eyes when he heard that. He grit his teeth, “I never thought that the mysterious people who wiped out the Bi family back then was the Yama Hall. I can finally avenge the Bi family now.

“Uncle, go rest first. Leave everything to me,” Jian Chen said to Bi Dao. He gazed around and saw that a large portion of the thousand or so assassins of Yama Hall had been slaughtered by the five Saint Rulers. Only a dozen or so Saint Ruler assassins remained.

Although there was the punishment of Celestial Decay if Saint Rulers or above killed those below Saint Ruler, that was only applicable to massacres, targeting those who kill millions of people. Just killing a thousand people would not lead to Celestial Decay.

Violent booms constantly vibrated around. The battle in the distance became even more intense. The five Saint Rulers now worked together as they encircled the Saint Ruler assassins, killing

them one by one.

The Saint Ruler assassins were all limited in their movements. Although they could counterattack, it was very difficult for them to move, so even if they were more powerful, they could not resist the joint attacks of the five Saint Rulers. In the blink of an eye, two of the weaker Saint Ruler assassins were killed off by the five Saint Rulers.

On the other hand, the slaughter of those above Saint Ruler would not increase the sins of a person and lead to Celestial Decay, no matter how horrifying the slaughter was.

Jian Chen coldly stared at the remaining Saint Ruler assassins. With his Emperor Armament, he used the Illusionary Flash, charging toward them from where he was in the form of a blur. Everytime he passed by one of them, the Emperor Armament would turn into a black streak of light and a head would be launched into the air.

Even Saint Rulers at the Ninth Heavenly Layer were not Jian Chen's opponent. Very soon, all of them died to Jian Chen's hands. Their souls were all wiped out as blood dyed the sky, falling like rain.

Jian Chen's white robes fluttered as his long hair swept about. He stood in the air with his Emperor Armament, which dripped with blood, seeming just like a god of slaughter. He glared at the destroyed divine hall and coldly called out, "How much longer are you going to hide, you, the real experts of the Yama Hall? Are you still not going to come out."

He had learned from Changyang Zu Yunxiao that there was not a lot of Saint Kings in the Yama Hall, but there was more than one.

Suddenly, an extremely thin spike appeared behind Jian Chen. It stabbed at the back of Jian Chen's head with lightning speed and utter silence, wanting to wipe out his soul in a single stroke.

# Chapter 1094: Spectral Elder

---

Suddenly, an extremely thin spike appeared behind Jian Chen. It stabbed at the back of Jian Chen's head with lightning speed and utter silence, wanting to wipe out his soul in a single stroke.

The spike had appeared suddenly, without any prior signs. Even as it shot out, it was completely silent, not radiating with any energy. It was extremely fast, enough to rival Jian Chen's sword.

Jian Chen's eyes suddenly narrowed. Although he failed to notice the killing strike from behind him, he could sense everything since he had expanded his presence. Using the Illusory Flash, he left a blur where he was standing before and appeared three meters away. The Emperor Armament in his hand cut through space as it stabbed at the spike.

The black spike passed through Jian Chen's afterimage before returning with unbelievable speed. It collided with the Emperor Armament.

With a boom, the Emperor Armament struck the tip of the spike. A terrifying energy erupted, wreaking havoc in the surroundings, causing the area to violently tremble.

Jian Chen took a few steps back from the great force. A silver-clothed figure could vaguely be seen that quickly retreated. The figure seemed to be fused with the surroundings, becoming extremely faint to the point where it was barely visible. The next moment, the figure suddenly vanished, disappearing completely.

Jian Chen finally became rather stern. He knew he had come across a true expert now. To be able to match his Emperor Armament, not only did his opponent reach the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint King, his opponent also possessed an extremely profound concealing technique. He could fuse with the surroundings, and even Jian Chen's presence was not enough to sense where he was.

"What a great concealing technique!" Jian Chen could not help but praise. Many people knew techniques where they could hide themselves from others. Those were only small tricks, but these small tricks could not escape the senses of Jian Chen's presence. However, the assassin's concealing technique was able to hide from Jian Chen's presence in such a way that Jian Chen could not find him.

"You must be the previous Yama of the Yama Hall," Jian Chen emotionlessly said. He fully expanded his presence and paid attention to everything, keeping his guard against the life-threatening attack that the hidden assassin could deal at any moment.

"I am the Spectral Elder of the Yama Hall, not the former Yama. Captain Jian Chen, since you want to devastate the Yama Hall, I can only lay my hands on you," an old voice rang out from the empty space, making it impossible to pinpoint where the speaker was.

Jian Chen slightly frowned. His presence had already enveloped the entire Dragon's Domain, but he failed to find where the person

was hiding.

“Jian Chen, this person’s concealing technique has already reached a state of absolute mastery while my grasp over the Dragon’s Domain has yet to reach perfection. It is unable to limit his movements, and I can’t find where he’s hiding,” Rui Jin said to Jian Chen through a communication technique.

Jian Chen chuckled at the sky, “Finally an opponent equal to me. Spectral Elder, so what if your concealing technique has reached a level of perfection? You still can’t make sneak attacks on me. Senior Rui Jin, senior Hei Yu, and senior Hong Lian, leave this person to me.”

“Hmph, you’re too confident, Jian Chen. You’ll die for sure today. Unless I am facing is a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King, no one can survive my assassination skills,” the Spectral Elder’s voice rang out once more, but it was still impossible to find where he was.

Suddenly, the black spike appeared behind Jian Chen again. It shot toward Jian Chen silently and by following the trajectory of the spike, an extremely vague figure could be seen. It seemed like a cloud of smoke.

A sharp gleam of light flickered through Jian Chen’s eyes. He wanted to stab the Emperor Armament back and engage in a battle with the Spectral Elder, but the Spectral Elder did not bother to tangle with him too much. He hid in the empty space once more where Jian Chen lost track of him.

With a cold face, Jian Chen constantly stabbed at the empty space before him. He created a dense net of blurs that enveloped the space in front of him as he tried to force the Spectral Elder out of hiding.

However, the black spike appeared once more at this moment on Jian Chen's left side. The spike fused with the surrounding space, arriving near Jian Chen in an instance. It easily pierced through Jian Chen's body, puncturing his left shoulder. It traveled all the way to his left shoulder bone.

Jian Chen roared as the Chaotic Force within him surged. All of it gathered in his left shoulder and by enduring the heart-stabbing pain, he used the bone to stop the spike from advancing as he swiftly attacked the Spectral Elder with the Emperor Armament, which was filled with an aura of destruction.

The Spectral Elder coldly snorted as Saint Force surged out of the spike, shattering Jian Chen's left shoulder bone. He removed the spike and then quickly retreated, wanting to hide in empty space again.

Unfortunately, Jian Chen did not give him that chance. The instant the Spectral Elder hid in empty space again, the Emperor Armament passed under his arm, leaving behind a wound. A sliver of Chaotic Force entered the wound from the Emperor Armament, quickly destroying the Spectral Elder's flesh and blood.

Although he was powerful, his body was nowhere near as tough



as Jian Chen's body. He was unable to withstand the Chaotic Force as the intense pain from the Chaotic Force caused him to involuntarily grunt. Afterward, his body completely disappeared in empty space without leaving behind a single drop of blood.

Jian Chen snickered. He had a wondrous connection with Chaotic Force. Even though the Spectral Elder had hidden in empty space, Jian Chen could find where he was through the sliver of Chaotic Force that had entered his body.

"Spectral Elder, I'd like to see where you run off to now!" Jian Chen took a single step and traversed thousands of meters. The Emperor Armament stabbed at empty air.

Ding!

The Spectral Elder blocked Jian Chen's Emperor Armament with the Saint Weapon in his hand. He could no longer remain hidden in space, finally appearing before Jian Chen.

He was a bald, old man, skinning and small. He wore a silver robe made out of some unknown material, which was tightly wrapped around him.

The area below his arm had already become red with blood. The residual Chaotic Force was forcefully being suppressed by the old man's powerful Saint Force, preventing it from expanding.

"How is this possible? How did you find where I was?" The

Spectral Elder stared at Jian Chen in shock.

“Your hiding techniques are useless before me. Let’s have a solid battle with our own strengths,” sneered Jian Chen. He attacked the Spectral Elder once more with the Emperor Armament.

The Spectral Elder did not buy it. With a flash, he disappeared into empty space once again, but he was immediately discovered by Jian Chen, forcing him out of hiding.

“Hmph, my Void-movement technique may be ineffective against you, but I can still kill you.” The Spectral Elder no longer hid in empty space. A vast surging energy leaked from him as the black spike in his hand began to glow with dark light. He began engaging in an intense battle with Jian Chen.

Every assassin of the Yama Hall rarely engaged in open battles. They were more used to assassinations, often using the easiest method to catch the opponent off-guard and deal a fatal blow. Now that the Spectral Elder’s assassination techniques were useless against Jian Chen, he could only fight him head-on.

The Spectral Elder was an assassin, but he was still a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King. He had gone through countless battles on the edge of life and death, so he was extremely powerful even without his assassination techniques. He possessed extremely rich experience in combat.

Violent booms filled the surroundings. The Emperor Armament in Jian Chen’s hand had already turned into a vicious black

dragon, moving so fast that space shattered. His Emperor Armament stabbed out continuously in the form of blurs, moving extremely quickly. Each strike was sharp and fast and filled with viciousness, only aiming to harm the Spectral Elder.

The spike in the Spectral Elder's hand stabbed out quickly as a terrifying energy wrapped around it. It was no slower than Jian Chen's attack speed, but the only difference was that every attack from Jian Chen was extremely fluid, flowing from one to another like water. It seemed to possess some other profoundness at the same time. On the other hand, the Spectral Elder focused more on power. Each strike possessed an earth-shaking might, wanting to suppress Jian Chen with supreme strength.

It was an intense clash, a battle between power, a collision of strength. More importantly, it was a fierce fight of life and death.

Jian Chen matched the Spectral Elder with his Emperor Armament, fighting to the point where the surroundings fell into chaos. Even Rui Jin's Dragon's Domain violently trembled.

The two of them clashed over a thousand times very soon. They both were dyed with blood and wounds littered their bodies. No one gained an advantage.

“Ancient secret technique, Devouring the World!” The Spectral Elder suddenly bellowed out. He exhaled after opening his mouth. Immediately, a huge ghost's face appeared, opening its pitch-black mouth toward Jian Chen before sucking violently.

Faced with the sudden suction, Jian Chen immediately flew toward the ghost's mouth. Jian Chen saw the glimmering of stars within the pitch-black mouth—the boundless cosmos.

This was an extremely powerful ancient secret technique. Jian Chen knew that once he was sucked into it, he would probably be released in that region of outer space, without any hopes of returning.

Jian Chen drew closer and closer to the mouth. The suction was extremely powerful and had already locked onto him. He could not escape.

Jian Chen roared at the sky as Chaotic Force wildly ran through his body like wild horses. The Emperor Armament glowed with a blinding, dark light as a presence of destruction filled the domain. He then sliced as hard as he could at the ghost face, causing it to violently tremble.

Jian Chen struck out over ten times in that short instance. Each attack utilized all he had, causing the ghost face to continuously tremble. In the end, it ripped apart into several pieces.

Spurt! With the ancient secret technique shattered, the Spectral Elder also suffered a backlash. He vomited a mouthful of blood and paled. The injury this time was bad, much more severe than all the wounds he had received earlier.

# Chapter 1095: The Former Yama

---

Jian Chen reacted extremely quickly. After breaking through the ancient secret technique, he immediately attacked the Spectral Elder. He sent a huge sword Qi, ten meters long, toward the Spectral Elder.

The Spectral Elder was no longer as powerful as before. After blocking the attack, he moved back several dozen meters uncontrollably. Before he had regained his footing, Jian Chen had already appeared in front of him through the Illusory Flash. The Emperor Armament fused with the surrounding space and radiated with a terrifying energy, stabbing toward the Spectral Elder's head.

In that crucial moment, the space around Jian Chen suddenly froze. Jian Chen's motion paused, and his strike headed toward the Spectral Elder's head slowed.

Jian Chen roared out. His long hair and clothes danced about wildly as surging Chaotic Force shook up his insides. He broke through the frozen space, but the obstruction still affected him. Not only did he lose a perfect opportunity to kill the Spectral Elder, the Spectral Elder had stabbed out and punctured his chest.

"Jian Chen, I'll take your life with us if you want to wipe out the Yama Hall," at the same time, Jian Chen heard a voice. A black-robed, young man, who seemed to be in his twenties, silently appeared beside the Spectral Elder. He held the exact same spike as the Spectral Elder, stabbing at Jian Chen's forehead with lightning speed.

“That’s a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King,” Rui Jin’s expression changed as he watched on from afar. He immediately disappeared from where he was, swiftly rushing over.

Rui Jin was very fast, but the young man was even faster. The black spike arrived before Jian Chen’s forehead in an instance. Rui Jin could not save Jian Chen even with his speed.

Jian Chen could not dodge at all. The attack had locked onto his presence, so he felt like he could not avoid it no matter what he tried. All he could do was take it forcefully.

The moment before death, Jian Chen became extraordinarily calm. A golden streak of light flashed from his forehead during a crucial moment and a fist-sized golden tower immediately flew out. It collided with the black spike in the form of a golden streak of light.

With a great boom, the life-threatening attack that came from the young man was successfully blocked by the saint artifact.

A sliver of pity appeared in the young man’s eyes. He glanced in Rui Jin’s direction, and he immediately became stern. He swung a palm full of dense energy toward Jian Chen’s chest before immediately disappearing into empty space. He had vanished.

Jian Chen vomited a mouthful of blood as he was blown away like a broken kite. His chest had completely caved in, his ribs had all shattered, and his organs had all ruptured. His injuries were

severe.

Killing intent flashed through the Spectral Elder's eyes when he saw how heavily injured Jian Chen had become. He immediately pursued Jian Chen, wanting to end his life.

Rui Jin had already arrived where the young man was before. With a sunken face, glaring eyes, and a glimmering, golden body, a vast pressure filled with anger appeared in the surroundings. He had clearly been angered.

“Magical beast, I know I'm not your opponent, so farewell today!” The young man's cold voice rang out from empty space.

“Argh!” On the other side, Jian Chen furiously roared. Chaotic Force rampaged within him, quickly healing his injuries. Although it was impossible for him to make a full recovery in such a short amount of time, he suppressed his injuries as fast as he could.

“Spectral Elder, I can still claim your life even if I'm heavily injured,” Jian Chen yelled out. His battle intent increased, and not only did his might fail to decrease, it had become even greater than before.

This was the strongest aspect of the Chaotic Body. With a powerful body and vitality, Jian Chen possessed battle prowess far greater than ordinary people. Unless he came across people that were far stronger than him, he could take on people at the same level as him even if he was heavily injured.

The bloodied Jian Chen began fighting the Spectral Elder once more. He was even more wild and even more bold than before. He cast away everything and fought the Spectral Elder in a way that traded blow for blow. The saint artifact floated above his head, ready to block a sneak attack from the hiding Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King at any moment.

By himself, Jian Chen possessed the might of a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King. He only possessed strength at the Seventh Heavenly Layer because of the Emperor Armament, so the Seventh Heavenly Layer was his current limit. It just happened to be equal to the Spectral Elder's strength, so as the two ferociously fought, their wounds constantly increased.

The residual Chaotic Force in the Spectral Elder's body had already been forced out by his supreme strength, so it could no longer deal any more damage to the Spectral Elder.

With a cold expression, Rui Jin growled, "My Dragon's Domain is a smaller realm, independent from the outside world. Unless you are at Great Perfection as well, you cannot escape."

"If I don't come out of hiding, you can't find me either. I can perform sneak attacks on you all the time," said the young man.

"Your status in the Yama Hall must be extraordinary with your strength. If I've guessed correctly, you should be the master of the Yama Hall that was heavily injured by the sect master of the Bloodsword sect a thousand years ago," replied Rui Jin. He had some understanding in regards to the Yama Hall's current strength from what Jian Chen had told him before.



“Correct, I am the previous Yama. Now that my wounds have completely healed, I am roughly just as strong as you. I may not be your opponent, but if I pester you, I will irritate you. Magical beast, do you think there’s a need for us to brawl it out,” said the former Yama. He feared Rui Jin, so he wanted to stop fighting with him.

Scorn filled Rui Jin’s eyes. He said, “The Void-movement technique of your Yama Hall truly is admirable, to be able to hide from the senses of my Dragon’s Domain. It really is powerful, but finding you is as easy as a flip of my hand.” With that, Rui Jin produced a loud dragon’s roar at the sky. It was earth-shaking, possessing might that destroyed the surroundings. The terrifying sound wave caused the surrounding space to toss like waves.

The roar contained a sliver of the Dragon clan’s pressure. Since the pressure originated from a Golden Divine Dragon, a king of the Dragon clan, it was much stronger than the pressure of ordinary dragons. It could harm the souls of people.

The five Saint Rulers of the Flame Mercenaries fell unconscious, falling out of the sky. They had been knocked out by Rui Jin’s earth-shaking roar.

Jian Chen and the Spectral Elder were also affected during their ferocious fight. Both of them felt a heart-stabbing pain in their souls, causing them to become sluggish and stop fighting temporarily.

However, Jian Chen's soul was far more powerful than his current strength, so he recovered before the Spectral Elder. He immediately stabbed the area between the Spectral Elder's eyebrows with the Emperor Armament, wiping out the Spectral Elder's soul and killing him off.

Rui Jin's roar caused the surrounding space to violently tremble. The space tossed and turned like the surface of the ocean where waves rose one after another, forcing the former Yama out of hiding. He appeared a thousand meters away.

"Former Yama, even if you're at Great Perfection, you don't have the capability to irritate me. Killing you is easy. Unless you are a Saint Emperor, you have no right to discuss anything with me." Rui Jin coldly spoke. The Dragon clan was a powerful and prideful clan, not to mention Rui Jin who was a king of the clan.

Rui Jin appeared silently next to the former Yama. Without using any weapons, he extended his hands in the direction of the former Yama's head.

The former Yama became stern. Invisible World Force immediately condensed, all of it gathering on the black spike in his hand. It then shot toward Rui Jin's hands in a flash.

Rui Jin's expression remained the same. His hands were covered by a layer of golden scales in an instant, catching the black spike.

A vicious light flickered through the former Yama's eyes. Terrifying energy loudly erupted from the black spike in attempt

to blow one of Rui Jin's hands off. However, it did nothing.

"You overestimate yourself if you want to take me on." Rui Jin's hand tightly grasped the former Yama's weapon. The densely-packed scales on his hand were extremely tough; even an attack from a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King would struggle to harm him.

At this moment, Rui Jin slowly raised his left hand as it rapidly changed, turning into a golden dragon's claw in the blink of an eye. The five long claws flickered with a pressing cold light as they stabbed into the former Yama's chest with lightning speed.

The sharp claws impaled the former Yama, and the brutal force created a huge hole in the former Yama's chest.

Blood sprayed from the former Yama's mouth. He was heavily injured, and he abandoned his weapon without a second thought. Pulling back, his figure quickly began to dull. He wanted to hide in empty space.

Rui Jin took several steps through the air where each step could shatter space. They produced terrifying ripples in space, causing it to become extremely unstable. The instability prevented the former Yama from hiding. The dragon's claw flickered with a dull, golden light as inscriptions flashed. The claw came down from above, traveling toward the former Yama's head.

In that instance, time seemed to stop. Even the air stopped, freezing everything. The space below Rui Jin's claws seemed to

turn into an independent domain, a domain without time. The former Yama's movements halted.

Rui Jin's giant claw flickered with golden inscriptions. It fell from above with incomparable force, and the moment that it came in contact with the former Yama's head, his head loudly exploded. His soul had been wiped out before it could even break out of his body.

The claw continued down without any reduction in speed. It fell from above, heading down, continuing into the former Yama's body. With just a few booms, the former Yama's body was squashed into pieces. He died without a full corpse.

The former Yama was a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King. He was an expert who stood at the very apex of the continent, yet someone so strong as him could not even withstand a blow from Rui Jin.

Jian Chen felt deeply shocked when he witnessed just how easily Rui Jin had slain a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King. He could not remain calm. This was a battle where Rui Jin purely used his own strength against the former Yama without any use of his origin weapon.

A Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King could not even fight back before Rui Jin.

“Rui Jin sure is worthy of being a dragon king. His strength is too terrifying. Our differences are just too great. It would've been

impossible for me to kill that former Yama so easily if it were me,” Hei Yu sighed in amazement. He too felt shocked by Rui Jin’s terrifying strength.

# Chapter 1096: Fragments of a Saint Tier Battle Skill

---

Killing a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King was like nothing to Rui Jin. He did not even glance at the squashed former Yama a second time. Instead, he turned around to look at the bloodied Jian Chen and asked, “Jian Chen, are you fine?”

Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath and slowly calmed himself down. Rui Jin’s supreme strength that slaughtered a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King deeply shocked Jian Chen. The Ninth Heavenly Layer stood at the very apex of Saint King. It still possessed some difference from Great Perfection, but this difference was tiny. Yet, the difference had become so extreme when it involved Rui Jin, becoming as wide as a chasm.

A Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King could not resist Rui Jin. They could not even injure him.

Jian Chen shook his head, “I thank senior Rui Jin for your concern. I still can support myself.” Jian Chen’s voice was a little weak. His injuries from the battle against the Spectral Elder did not affect him much. On the other hand, the palm strike from the former Yama had heavily wounded him. If it were not for his Chaotic Body, he would have collapsed long ago.

Bi Dao flew over to Jian Chen’s side. Hong Lian’s pearl had blocked off Rui Jin’s earthshaking roar for Bi Dao. After all, the pearl could defend against all soul attacks, which was why he remained unaffected.

“Xiangtian, now that the Yama Hall has been devastated, the revenge of our Bi family is complete as well. This is all because of you. You’re very heavily injured right now, so you should go recover quickly, just in case it leaves behind any future problems.” Concern filled Bi Dao’s voice. Although Jian Chen’s strength left him deeply astounded, right now was obviously not the time for them to catch up.

Jian Chen nodded. Then, he ordered the five Saint Rulers who had just woken up to clean up the battlefield. Afterward, he entered the artifact space, while Rui Jin and the other two watched over the saint artifact.

Covered in blood, Jian Chen sat in the center of a room within a well-adorned hall of the palace. He completely bathed in extremely dense origin energy of Radiant Saint Force, which allowed his wounds to quickly recover.

The white-robed artifact spirit stood silently by Jian Chen’s side. He controlled the Radiant Saint Force origin energy, as it continuously entered Jian Chen’s body. Coupled with the recovery of his Chaotic Body, Jian Chen’s severe wounds started to vanish at an unbelievable rate.

Jian Chen did not use his own Radiant Saint Force origin energy. When he initially broke through to Class 7, he did not manage to fuse a lot of the origin energy into his soul, so this origin energy was a consumable. Every strand would disappear after he used it. It would be even more difficult to replenish than Chaotic Force. He needed his current Radiant Saint Force origin energy to form a

foundation so that he could reach Class 8 in the future.

On the Tian Yuan Continent, the abilities of every single Radiant Saint Master was inborn. It would be decided as soon as they were conceived, so it was impossible to become a Radiant Saint Master after birth. As a result, it was much easier for Radiant Saint Masters to undergo breakthroughs. All a Class 6 Radiant Saint Master needed was to fuse some of the Radiant Saint Force origin energy into his soul to reach Class 7. Breaking through to Class 8 only needed accumulation, one needed to use vast amounts of Radiant Saint Force origin energy to increase the quality of their soul. That was the secret to reaching Class 8.

However, there had only ever been one Class 8 Radiant Saint Master in the ancient times. The world lacked Radiant Saint Force origin energy, so it did not offer the conditions required for the birth of Class 8 Radiant Saint Masters.

However, Jian Chen possessed the saint artifact that specially refined Radiant Saint Force origin energy. He possessed an overwhelming advantage, so reaching Class 8 was only a matter of time for him.

Jian Chen fully recovered after four hours. He left the room after he changed into a set of clean clothes. Then, he asked the artifact spirit about the elite members of the Flame Mercenaries he had sent into the artifact space.

“Master, they have constantly fought magical beasts, continuously increasing their experience in battle and their mastery over Heaven Tier Battle Skills. A small portion of them



have broken through to Heaven Saint Master now, while the rest are all Earth Saint Masters,” reported the artifact spirit.

Jian Chen nodded in satisfaction, “They really are improving quite quickly. I haven’t poured so many heavenly resources into them for nothing. Once they reach the peak of Heaven Saint Master, I’ll send them to Mercenary City and get Xiao Ling to assist them in breaking through to Saint Ruler. Artifact spirit, remember that none of them are allowed to die in here.”

“This one understands. But master, even though the heavenly resources have improved their constitutions, merely a good constitution will not allow one to reach Saint Ruler. They need to have high levels of comprehension, and I’ve observed every single of them. I’ve discovered that almost all of them have no hope of reaching Saint Ruler. Their limit is Heaven Saint Master,” said the artifact spirit.

“You don’t need to worry about this. There is a wondrous item in the sea realm called the divine water of the world. It possesses marvelous effects on the soul. Once consumed, it can make up for this aspect that they lack,” Jian Chen said confidently. He was extremely confident in regards to everything. This group of people had followed him the earliest out of everyone. They were also the same people who joined the Flame Mercenaries the earliest, so he poured everything he had into raising them. He wanted to develop them into the core power of the Flame Mercenaries.

Jian Chen could not help but grow excited when he thought about the fact that the Flame Mercenaries would have several dozen Saint Rulers as their core power in the future.

Although the current Flame Mercenaries possessed enough people who could stand at the very top, it was far too lacking in terms of experts that belonged to the center—not too weak or strong. They were nowhere near ancient clans. However, this aspect could not be made up for in a short amount of time, and it needed to be accumulated over time.

Boom!

At this moment, a rumble shook up another hall nearby. A pressure that originated from the world permeated the surroundings. It was extremely powerful and heavy as if a supreme lord had descended, which caused everything to submit to its rule. It could deeply shock anyone.

Jian Chen stood outside his own hall, as he stared deeply at the hall where the sound came from. He remained silent.

“Master, your friend is trying to alter the Saint Tier Battle Skill. He has tried things like this many times in the past few years, almost demolishing the hall several times. I ended up toughening his hall specially,” the artifact spirit said as some helplessness filled his face.

“The Octoterra Emperor left behind this Saint Tier Battle Skill. Its might is far greater than battle skills that Saint Kings can create, so it won’t be easy if Nubis wants to alter a Saint Tier Battle Skill for members of the Sea race so that it suits magical beasts. However, he seems to have achieved some success now. I just

wonder how much time he needs before he completes it truly,” murmured Jian Chen. Reminiscence filled his eyes. Nubis had already gone into seclusion for many years now, so he somewhat missed the times where they had fought and struggled for their lives together.

Jian Chen left the artifact space. When he appeared in the outside world again, Rui Jin’s Dragon’s Domain had already vanished. The surroundings had returned to their previous state, while the great banner of the Flame Mercenaries was firmly planted on the highest point of the ruined divine hall. It danced and moved about in the wind, signaling the victory of the Flame Mercenaries.

The five Saint Rulers arrived before Jian Chen and passed over a Space Ring. They said, “The after battle clean-up is complete. All the Space Rings and treasures within the divine hall have been stored in there.”

As soon as Jian Chen accepted the Space Ring, Rui Jin flew out from the ruins. He held two square, stone tablets that were a meter wide and long, as he arrived before Jian Chen. He said, “Jian Chen, look what this is.” He directly flung the two pieces of stone toward Jian Chen as he smiled.

Jian Chen caught the two tablets with a single hand and his hand immediately sunk. The two tablets that were not very big were extraordinarily heavy, actually more heavy than gold. There were clear images distinctly carved into them, but it was incomplete.

Jian Chen raised the two tablets and carefully examined the

images. Afterward, a gleam of light flashed through his eyes, and he immediately pulled out a similar stone tablet from his Space Ring. The three stone pieces were the same in both size and color, just that the carvings differed.

“These are fragments of a Saint Tier Battle Skill!” Jian Chen exclaimed in surprise. The Saint Tier Battle Skill fragment in his possession was obtained when several kingdoms formed a coalition and attacked the Gesun Kingdom. He had found it in the treasury of the Qiangnan Kingdom.

“Correct, these are fragments of a Saint Tier Battle Skill. It seems like it has been split into six pieces,” Hei Yu said indifferently. A Saint Tier Battle Skill may mean nothing to Jian Chen, but it was much, much more than that to the Flame Mercenaries.

Jian Chen stowed the three fragments away before thanking Hei Yu. Then, he left with everyone else. Jian Chen had already sent Bi Dao into the artifact space so that he could properly recuperate.

Hei Yu personally ripped open a Space Gate to the Changyang clan in Lore City. After that, they left with Jian Chen.

The surroundings fell into a deathly silence once more with their departure. Only a large pile of corpses and a devastated divine hall stood there. A light breeze traveled through the place and blew the bloody smell everywhere.

Only a bunch of ruins and corpses remained of the Yama Hall, which was one of the three great assassination organizations that

had stood on the Tian Yuan Continent for over a hundred thousand years.

Jian Chen let the five Saint Rulers return to Flame City by themselves after they returned to the Changyang clan. Afterward, he paid a visit to Bi Yuntian's room all by himself. All he found was his mother sitting by her bed, as she sewed a piece of clothing lined with golden silk.

“Mother!” Jian Chen called out. Although she was already more than fifty years old, Bi Yuntian still had the appearance of a lady in her twenties. Time left no mark on her face, but she did seem much more mature and much more dignified.

# Chapter 1097: Visiting Dragon Island Once More (One)

---

Bi Yuntian's face immediately lit up with joy when she saw Jian Chen stride through the doorway. Deep love filled her eyes as her hands stopped working. She stood up with the piece of clothing still in her hands and smiled, "Xiang'er, perfect. Try on this piece of clothing to see if it fits. I've sown it according to your body shape after buying some supreme cloth from outside."

Jian Chen's heart warmed up from his mother's love. Outside, he was a cold expert who shook the continent and someone that various forces feared, but at home, he was an extremely obedient and filial child.

"Mother, let's talk about this later. I have something much more important," Jian Chen said. Afterward, a streak of golden light shot from the spot between his eyebrows and turned into a fist-sized golden tower. With a flash of golden light, the black-robed Bi Dao suddenly appeared in the room.

"Brother!" Bi Yuntian immediately cried out when she saw Bi Dao. Great surprise filled her face.

Bi Dao also noticed Bi Yuntian, who stood beside him. Immediately, he became stunned as he blankly stared at her. Disbelief flooded his face.

"Sister, w-w- weren't you... how are you still alive?" Bi Dao's face was filled with surprise. To him, his sister had been murdered

several years ago; she should have become a pile of dirt by now.

After death had separated these siblings for so many years, they had a lot to say once they were together again. Bi Yuntian revealed the secrets of her revival, which immediately stunned Bi Dao. An even greater sense of happiness filled his gaze as he looked at Jian Chen. He sighed inside. His nephew kept shocking him more and more. Not only had he become a supreme expert, but he had also become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master at the same time.

Bi Dao also spoke about his encounters outside over the past few years. Ever since Bi Yuntian had died, he had wandered the Tian Yuan Continent alone, personally finding ways to increase his strength. In the end, he discovered a several-thousand-year-old heavenly resource that a Class 6 Magical Beast guarded. He obtained it after he had chased away the magical beast with a Heaven Tier Battle Skill. He used it to reach Heaven Saint Master.

Afterward, he continued to wander the Tian Yuan Continent. He entered the depths of the Soul-claiming Mountains within the Karl Empire and was poisoned. He also faced the pursuit of a few powerful poisonous Class 6 Magical Beasts. He hid in venerable Poisonsword's old dwelling after he fled. Venerable Poisonsword's soul saved him.

In the end, the two of them had a discussion and reached an agreement. Venerable Poisonsword would help him complete his revenge, and he would offer his body to venerable Poisonsword in return.

However, he had never thought that the events he would

experience would be so dramatic. Not only was venerable Poisonsword wiped out, a portion of his soul and comprehensions of the mysteries of the world remained in Bi Dao's head, benefiting him greatly.

Bi Dao spoke indifferently, but Bi Yuntian could still feel the amount of pain Bi Dao had endured during those years. Tears continuously rolled down her face as she sobbed, "Brother, it has really been tough for you over the past few years. You've done too much for our Bi family."

"No, I haven't done much. The one who's done a lot is Xiangtian. He has devastated the Yama Hall that wiped out our family back then, so our revenge is finally complete," Bi Dao sternly explained. He understood extremely well that he would probably be dead now if it were not for his nephew.

Afterward, Bi Yuntian told Bi Dao that their ancestor, Bi Hai, was completely fine, which Bi Dao rejoiced over.

During that night, Jian Chen returned to his room with the Space Ring from the five Saint Rulers. He spent four hours checking through the thousand plus Space Rings inside. He found countless purple coins and monster cores of various classes. There were several dozen Class 7 Monster Cores and even five Class 8 ones.

Class 8 Monster Cores could only be obtained after the death of a magical beast at the level of Saint King. Jian Chen had found them in the Space Rings of the Spectral Elder and the former Yama. Only experts at their levels could obtain such high class monster cores.



Jian Chen had even found numerous Heaven's Soulstones in the Space Rings of other assassins. Clearly, the rock was not valuable to them. Every high-level assassin of the Yama Hall possessed a small piece that had been carved into a unique shape as a token of identification.

Jian Chen put away all the Heaven's Soulstone and the Class 7 and 8 Monster Cores. He did not even glance at the purple coins a second time. He planned to give them all to Bi Lian the next time he visited Flame City.

“And to think that back then, I would work as hard as I could, kill without regard for myself, and dance on the edge of life and death just for those purple coins and low class monster cores. Now, these items are basically trash to me,” Jian Chen smiled brilliantly as he stared at all the Space Rings on the floor. He immediately laughed at himself while he involuntarily thought back to the days when he would constantly fight to live.

A while later, Jian Chen returned to his senses. He stored all the Space Rings from the Yama Hall into a single Space Ring before he left the room. He stared at the pitch-black sky as he suddenly rose from the ground. He shot off into outer space with a wild gust of wind and disappeared in the blink of an eye.

A huge, silver-white divine hall floated above the Tian Yuan Continent in outer space. It just happened to be above the Gesun Kingdom. Bright and clear moonlight flowed around the divine hall. The hall continuously absorbed Moonlight Force.

Jian Chen charged into outer space like a comet. He landed steadily outside the main entrance of the divine hall. Currently, the main entrance was tightly closed. Jian Chen seemed rather insignificant compared to the majestic entrance with his stature that had not even reached two meters.

At this moment, a rumble rang out. The closed door slowly opened and revealed a beauty in a white dress. She held a scepter and stood silently in the doorway.

She was You Yue.

You Yue sweetly smiled when she saw Jian Chen outside the doorway. She hugged one of Jian Chen's arms intimately and softly said, "Jian Chen, my master said you had come, but I didn't believe her at all. I didn't think you'd actually come. Have you come to see me?"

Jian Chen gently smiled. He said as he stared at You Yue's joyful face, "Yue'er, I've come specifically to see you. Cultivating is extremely boring, especially when you have to cultivate alone in outer space, so I was wondering if you could endure the loneliness."

You Yue smiled even more sweetly. She looked at Jian Chen with affection, "It is boring and lonely, but as long as I work hard, I won't drag you down once I become powerful. At that time, I can roam the world with you."

Jian Chen became stunned. He suddenly felt distressed for some

reason, and the Heavenly Enchantress and Huang Luan quickly flashed through his head. He owed You Yue far too much.

“Yue’er, I promise you that once I deal with all my matters, I’ll hold a grand marriage with you in the Gesun Kingdom,” Jian Chen swore to You Yue. This was something that had originated from the bottom of his heart.

“Alright!” You Yue nodded her head slightly as she happily smiled. Afterward, she sat down on the door sill and hung onto Jian Chen’s arm, staring at the huge moon in a daze.

Jian Chen and You Yue sat together on the steep door sill in cold and silent space, gazing at the stars in the distance. That night, the two of them did not say much. It was pure silence while they carefully cherished this lovely moment.

The next day, Jian Chen unwillingly bid farewell to You Yue. Then, he returned to the Changyang clan. He got Hei Yu to construct a Space Gate to Flame City, so that he could drop off the huge fortune he had obtained from the Yama Hall. After that, he described the materials needed for the Azulet swords in detail to Bi Lian, so that she could use the entire organization’s power to search the continent. Once the items were found, he ordered her to purchase them no matter the price.

After handing over the matters he needed to Bi Lian, Jian Chen and Hei Yu visited Mercenary City together.

Bi Dao remained with the Changyang clan. He had just obtained a

portion of venerable Poisonsword's powers, so he needed quite a bit of time to absorb it. Only then would it become his own power.

Rui Jin and Hong Lian entered the saint artifact. They would only appear by Jian Chen's side when he needed them while Hei Yu remained outside to accompany Jian Chen.

Mercenary City warmly welcomed Jian Chen once he arrived. He met with the grand elder without any obstructions.

Jian Chen could clearly feel an odd presence on Tian Jian at this time. He could closely sense that Tian Jian's vitality was leaking away at an extremely slow rate.

Jian Chen knew that Tian Jian had approached the end of his life long ago. Saint Kings only had a lifespan of six thousand years, and Tian Jian had reached Saint King five thousand years ago. Coupled with the time he had spent cultivating before he had reached Saint King, there was not much more of his six-thousand-year lifespan left.

Jian Chen suddenly felt a deep sorrow within him. Tian Jian had helped him too, too much before. He had begun to view Tian Jian as his own family member long ago, so he just could not bear to helplessly watch Tian Jian leave him. However, he was unable to change Tian Jian's fate with his current powers.

"Jian Chen, I've already learned about the matters with Ming Dong. Thank you for earning such a great opportunity for Ming Dong." Tian Jian's white clothes fluttered in the wind. He

remained as free and approachable as before. Although Ming Dong was not connected to Tian Jian by blood in any way, Tian Jian still treated him as his own son because of the connection of his ancestor.

Jian Chen stared deeply at Tian Jian as his emotions became complicated. He secretly sighed inside and avoided the topic of Tian Jian's lifespan. He said, "Ming Dong is a brother of mine, and we've gone through thick and thin together. I should be helping him, so there's no need to thank me, senior Tian Jian." Jian Chen paused slightly before he continued, "Senior Tian Jian, I've mainly come this time to see Tie Ta. May I ask where he is?"

## Chapter 1098: Visiting Dragon Island Once More (Two)

---

“Come with me,” smiled Tian Jian. Then, he led Jian Chen through a palace and, in the end, stopped before a huge square.

A three-meter-tall, burly man swung a huge ax in the center of the square while sweat poured from him. An extremely powerful battle intent enveloped the entire square. The elevated battle intent could affect every single person’s soul and make their blood boil. It could reawaken the desire for battle hidden within everyone.

The huge man’s every stroke was natural. The strokes flowed perfectly and flawlessly between one another. They all possessed a heart-shaking might as if they could split the entire world in half.

Jian Chen could even feel the battle intent as he stood at the edge of the square. The blood within him boiled. He felt tempted to find someone and engage in battle.

“Tie Ta sure is the war god of the Hundred Races. The speed at which his strength increases is astonishing. Without any intentional cultivation in the past few years, he has become this powerful already. The energy within him is probably at the Fifth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler, but he should be able to match Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers. If he uses the Mysteries of War, he might even be able to fight Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers,” Tian Jian explained with a deep voice that carried many emotions.

At this moment, Tie Ta seemed to notice Jian Chen and Tian Jian's arrival. He stopped swinging his ax and excitedly ran over with it on a shoulder. He said in a low, muffled voice, "Jian Chen, you've come! I've already stayed here for so long. I'm about to die from boredom. Just say something on my behalf to senior Tian Jian to convince him to let me go. I want to go outside." Tie Ta grumbled. Without Ming Dong by his side, he became even lonelier during these past few years.

"Tie Ta, actually, I've come to find you this time to take you out," smiled Jian Chen.

"Really? Jian Chen, are you sure that you're not tricking me?" Tie Ta's eyes immediately lit up as joy crossed his face.

"Of course it's true. As your best friend, I would never trick you even if I have to die," Jian Chen replied.

Tian Jian frowned slightly and sternly said, "Jian Chen, Tie Ta's identity is extremely special. If you take him outside, it's extremely likely that someone who knows about the matters of the ancient times will recognize him. It'll become troublesome then."

"Don't worry, senior Tian Jian. Since I'm brave enough to bring him out, I can obviously protect him. Even if the ten protector clans come, they won't be able to touch him at all. At that time, all I need to do is throw Tie Ta into the Bright Moon Divine Hall, and then they'll be helpless." Jian Chen was filled with confidence. He had the perfect insurance for Tie Ta's safety.

Tian Jian did not add anything else since he knew that Jian Chen had already made up his mind. He understood Jian Chen's powers extremely well, so he did not stop Jian Chen from taking Tie Ta out.

Jian Chen left Mercenary City with Tie Ta. Then, he asked Hei Yu to rip open a Space Gate to Dragon Island. He entered it with Tie Ta by his side.

They arrived outside Dragon Island after they passed through the Space Gate. They could immediately smell the moist sea breeze and below them was the deep-blue sea. Before them was an extremely dense region of fog that connected the sky with the surface of the sea.

"Jian Chen, why've you brought me here?" Tie Ta scratched his head as he asked Jian Chen in confusion.

Jian Chen smiled mysteriously, "Tie Ta, you'll find out later on. Come, follow me, but do be careful. Once you enter the fog, it's a region of illusion. Everything you see in the fog is fake, so do not treat it as if it is real." Jian Chen took a step into the fog first while Tie Ta followed close behind. The black-robed Hei Yu stepped into the fog last, behind both of them.

As they passed through the mist, the three of them experienced many attacks from the odd fish, but it did not pose any harm to them. The illusions in the mist constantly appeared and conjured various images to affect their mental state. However, now that



Jian Chen's soul was extremely powerful, they could no longer affect him much.

“Dad, mom, grandpa, why have you appeared here?” Suddenly, Jian Chen heard Tie Ta's voice. Clearly, Tie Ta had fallen into an illusion. Even with Jian Chen's warning, the illusions were just too realistic. It was almost impossible to distinguish between real and fake, which caused people to fall for them very easily.

Jian Chen's heart tightened. Just as he wanted to pull Tie Ta's arm and swiftly rush out of the region of mist, the imprint of the war ax on the center of Tie Ta's eyebrows began to flicker with a faint golden light. Immediately, an extremely powerful battle intent began to radiate out, shattering the illusion and causing the mist to violently surge.

“So it was fake. These illusions are just too powerful. I had actually thought it was real earlier,” Tie Ta sighed in amazement.

The three of them passed through the region of mist very quickly. They flew at a low altitude, below ten meters, as they headed for the center of the island. Jian Chen and Tie Ta ripped to shreds all the living corpses they came across.

When Jian Chen had entered this place with the Heavenly Enchantress for the first time, they had feared the living corpses very much. They would detour around any they came across, unwilling to provoke them so easily if at all. However, these living corpses were nothing to Jian Chen now. Even the Saint King living corpses they came across were weak, like ants before Jian Chen.

Jian Chen, Tie Ta, and Hei Yu passed through the mountains and forests and broke through many formations in the meantime. They arrived at an empty piece of land in the center of the island very quickly.

“Weird. I clearly remember that it was this place, so why is it gone now?” Jian Chen looked around as he mumbled in doubt.

“Jian Chen, why’ve you brought me here? Is there some kind of treasure?” Tie Ta could not help but ask once more. He felt extremely curious.

Jian Chen said nothing. After he pondered for a while with a frown, an idea flashed through his head. He mumbled to himself, “There are many formations hidden on Dragon Island. It’s extremely difficult for people to detect it. Maybe the droplet of Aergyns’ blood is hidden in the empty space as well. A spot where it’ll only appear if the formation has been triggered.” Jian Chen believed this idea more and more as he thought about it. Afterward, he called out the white tiger and told Hei Yu and Tie Ta to wait where they were. He jumped on the back of the white tiger and began to run around wildly.

Jian Chen did not dare to risk himself in the formation formed from a drop of Aergyns’ blood. Aergyns was someone who had surpassed Saint Emperor, so no matter how confident Jian Chen was, he did not wish to test the might of the killing formation. He could still remember that the Saint King corpses that entered the killing formation were silently turned to dust.

Suddenly, Jian Chen's vision began to change. The green mountains disappeared, and he suddenly appeared in a bleak wasteland. There was no vegetation, and it stretched as far as the eye could see. No one knew just how large it was.

"This is the place," Jian Chen rejoiced inside and immediately thought of the previous war god he had encountered here.

A surging battle intent suddenly filled the bleak world and completely engulfed the region. It seemed to have become its own domain. A condescending aura filled the battle intent, as if only the owner of the aura was supreme.

Jian Chen had rarely ever come across such a powerful battle intent. It seemed to possess a terrifying might that was able to rip through space and destroy worlds.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

With a series of booms, the ground began to violently tremble, like an earthquake was occurring. A golden figure appeared on the edge of Jian Chen's vision. The figure possessed great stature and was clad in golden armor. He carried a golden war ax on his shoulders, and his eyes burned with battle intent. He seemed to have been born for battle.

He was the war god from ancient times, Aergyns. Even though he was conjured from a droplet of blood, he still possessed the might of a war god.

Jian Chen's body shook, and he immediately paled. Every step taken by Aergyns seemed to land on his heart, which made Jian Chen feel like his heart was about to shatter.

Jian Chen's senses were much more powerful than before since this was his second time experiencing this formation. Although he possessed strength that rivaled Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Kings, he felt fragile before the golden figure. He even felt disillusioned, where even Saint Emperor who fell into the formation would not be able to face Aergyns.

Although the differences between Saint Ruler, Saint King, and Saint Emperor were huge, they all belonged to Sainthood. Aergyns had surpassed Saint Emperor and stepped into the Origin realm. The Origin realm and Sainthood were two completely different realms of cultivation. The differences could be described as chasms.

The difference between Saint Emperors and those in the Origin realm were akin to Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers.

"Xiao Bai, let's leave, quick," Jian Chen called out to the white tiger. The battle intent had already locked onto him and had rendered him motionless.

Seriousness also filled the white tiger's eyes. After the supreme battle intent enveloped it, it too could feel the strength of the opponent. The white tiger immediately growled and leaped out of the formation without any obstructions.

As the white tiger pulled Jian Chen out of the formation, the surrounding scenery returned to its previous state. The space behind them rippled violently. They could clearly see a droplet of golden blood floating in the middle of the air.

“Tie Ta, come quick,” Jian Chen called out to Tie Ta, who was quite far away.

Tie Ta and Hei Yu immediately shot over from afar and arrived before Jian Chen with a few steps. The two of them gazed unblinkingly at the droplet of golden blood that hung in the air.

“What is this? I actually feel a fear that originates from the depths of my soul. It makes me tremble, and I can feel an extremely powerful and pure energy hidden inside,” Hei Yu closely stared at the golden droplet of blood. He felt extremely astounded since even Saint Emperor could not give him such an intense feeling.

# Chapter 1099: Legacy of the War God

---

Tie Ta's gaze became rather complicated. At that moment, his heart struggled to remain calm, beginning to wildly beat and shiver. Even his burly body shook slightly as a deep feeling of sorrow radiated from him.

“Jian Chen, just what is that? Why do I feel so sad and painful when I see it? Jian Chen, I feel horrible inside,” Tie Ta's expression suddenly became extremely pained. Even he did not know why he felt like that.

“That's the blood of the war god Aergyns. Tie Ta, the owner of the blood is your predecessor,” Jian Chen explained with mixed emotions.

“What! This is blood left behind by the ancient war god, Aergyns?” Hei Yu was shocked. However, he eased up soon and said, “No wonder, no wonder my body shakes. So it's a droplet of essence blood from Aergyns.”

Tie Ta stood there blankly as he stared at the droplet of golden blood. Two clear streaks of tears ran down his face. He was the new war god. Although he was different than the previous god, they possessed a similar bloodline that came from the same origins. Tie Ta seemed to see the previous war god leading his clansmen into war as he stood before the droplet of blood, searching for a safe place for his clansmen with all he had before dying heroically in a foreign land.

A deep sorrow welled up in Tie Ta. He seemed to have formed a subtle connection with the droplet of blood before him.

The space in front of him blurred and the golden droplet of blood became fainter and fainter, as if it would disappear into the empty space at any moment.

The formation there would only be activated if someone entered it. Otherwise, it would remain well-hidden in empty space. Now that Jian Chen had already left after triggering it, the formation would disappear soon.

At this moment, the drop of golden blood began to forcefully move up and down. A blinding golden light radiated from the droplet, forcefully stopping the formation's power. An extremely powerful ripple of energy erupted from the blood with a surging battle intent.

Bang! Bang! Bang...

With several consecutive booms in the surroundings, the energy from the blood broke through the formation which restricted it, causing the surrounding mountains and rocks to crack. No longer restricted by the formation, the supreme battle intent and terrifying energy within the blood immediately began to radiate out, enveloping the entire island. It caused the mountain ranges to violently tremble.

The drop of blood turned into a golden streak of light as it flew toward Tie Ta. It then disappeared into his forehead. Immediately,

the battle ax imprint between Tie Ta's eyebrows began to radiate with blinding light, outshining the sun. The golden glow illuminated the world, dying the world gold.

Tie Ta could not help but close his eyes. His consciousness had already entered a bleak world completely enveloped by a supreme battle intent.

However, not only did Tie Ta fail to find the battle intent to be uncomfortable, he found it to be extremely warm and comforting. The feeling was like a child who had entered his mother's bosom after leaving home for many years.

Ten meters in front of Tie Ta, a man clad in golden armor stood with his arms crossed and with his back to Tie Ta. A supreme presence radiated from him, as if he was a god of the world.

Tie Ta could not see the man's face, but he felt extremely close to the man. This closeness was hundreds even thousands times more powerful than what he felt with his parents.

"My name is Aergyns. I am a member of the warring gods. Only those who are connected to me by blood can awaken this imprint..."

A heavy voice boomed through the world. It was powerful and contained a strong attack toward souls. Only those of the warring gods could withstand it.



“To think that the people of the warring gods are born from the world, blessed by the world, and inherit their abilities from the world. Our battle prowess is peerless, yet I died in a foreign battlefield in the end. What a pity, what a regrettable matter...” A deep sorrow filled the world. This was the feeling that Aergyns had left behind all those years ago.

“The magical beasts went too far. They invaded my homeland and chased away my citizens. I led my clansmen to fight the magical beasts, but I was forced to flee since I could not defeat the Winged Tiger God. I then turned to the Tian Yuan Continent, yet I was stopped by Mo Tianyun. To think that I was a warring god, possessing peerless battle prowess and abilities that came from the world itself, invincible against those at the same level of cultivation, but I was still not the Winged Tiger God or Mo Tianyun’s opponent. What a joke, what a funny joke...”

“I’ve already died, but I still worry about my citizens. New war god, go complete my final wish. Protect my citizens well and help them find an even more beautiful world. In return, I shall bequeath this drop of essence blood upon you...”

With that, Aergyns’ body suddenly shattered, disintegrating into countless fragments.

“The Winged Tiger God and Mo Tianyun are unfathomable. They have already broken through the limitations of life and survive with the world. They are eternal, so do not avenge me.” The moment before Aergyns had completely turned into fragments, another voice boomed through the sky. Afterward, Aergyns completely disappeared and the bleak world loudly

shattered apart.

The fragments of Aergyns were split into two portions. One consisted of fragments of memories that entered Tie Ta's soul while the other fragments were the energy within the essence blood, which fused with Tie Ta's body.

Immediately, Tie Ta felt many things appear in his head. These things were all the battle comprehensions of Aergyns, containing many frighteningly powerful Mysteries of War.

The droplet of essence blood had already turned into a powerful energy that flowed through Tie Ta's body. Although there was very little of it, it was still energy left behind by Aergyns. It contained vast amounts of energy of the world that had been compressed into a tiny droplet, so it was extremely terrifying and powerful.

Just that tiny amount of energy was enough to rival a portion of all the energy within a Saint Emperor, enough to rival several Saint Kings.

Tie Ta's entire body was coated by a blinding golden light. He continuously absorbed the memories of Aergyns as the extremely-pure energy flowed unceasingly into his body. It was converted into Tie Ta's own power at an unbelievable rate.

Warring gods were birthed by the world and were richly endowed with advantages. As Aergyns possessed the same bloodline as Tie Ta, there were no backlashes or consequences for

Tie Ta as he increased his strength through the energy Aergyns had left behind.

Tie Ta's presence rapidly strengthened, and the power within him increased quickly as well. He went from the Fifth Heavenly Layer to the Sixth Heavenly Layer very quickly, and not only did his rate of increase fail to show any signs of slowing down, it instead skyrocketed, becoming faster and faster.

Jian Chen and Hei Yu stood thirty meters away as they stared at Tie Ta unblinkingly, silently watching over him.

"Looks like Aergyns' drop of essence blood is being absorbed by Tie Ta. This is a droplet of blood left behind by someone who has surpassed Saint Emperor. The energy hidden inside is so terrifying that it can even injure Saint Emperors, yet Tie Ta's obtained it so easily," Hei Yu emotionally sighed as he looked at Tie Ta with some envy.

"I've guessed correctly. Aergyns' droplet of blood really is extremely beneficial to Tie Ta. Now that Tie Ta has come across this item, I wonder what level his strength will reach." Jian Chen was filled with anticipation.

Seventh Heavenly Layer...

Eighth Heavenly Layer...

Ninth Heavenly Layer...

Tie Ta's strength skyrocketed at an incomparable pace. In just half a day, he reached the Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler from his original Fifth Heavenly Layer, bypassing four lesser cultivation levels.

Jian Chen clenched his hands as he stared at Tie Ta without blinking at all. Although Saint Ruler and Saint King both belonged to Sainthood, the difference between the two was still very great. He wondered if Tie Ta could borrow the energy within the blood to break through the barrier of the Ninth Heavenly Layer and reach Saint King.

Tie Ta's presence at the Ninth Heavenly Layer slowly increased. Now, the energy he needed for each level of cultivation was increasing, which was why it took him longer and longer to break through.

Finally, Tie Ta's presence reached the very peak of the Ninth Heavenly Layer. As Jian Chen watched with much anticipation, a vast and surging pressure immediately appeared from Tie Ta's presence. It was extremely weak at first before quickly strengthening and blanketing the surroundings.

At the same time, the supreme battle intent sandwiched within the presence underwent a qualitative change, becoming much more powerful than before.

Suddenly, a golden streak of light cut through the sky. It passed through the forbidden altitude of the Dragon Island and landed

accurately in between Tie Ta's eyebrows, on the imprint of the battle ax.

This was the world passing on its teachings. Warring gods were born from the world and were blessed by the world. Every time they entered a new cultivation realm, the world would pass on teachings.

Tie Ta subconsciously raised his head and pointed the imprint at the sky. He accepted the teachings of the world as mysterious information appeared from the void, entering between Tie Ta's eyebrows through the golden streak of light.

In a desolate continent, a group of life forms vastly different from humans inhabited the land. There were ten-meter-tall giants as well as handsome-and pretty-winged elves with pointy ears. There were also dark-skinned dwarves that were no taller than a meter, and even rockmen completely made from stone.

The continent was known as the Wasteland Continent, home to the Hundred Races. It was inhabited by a myriad of races, not just a single race like humans. However, there were some races who seemed extremely similar to humans.

At the center of the continent stood a mountain range that reached into the clouds. It was barren, without any vegetation. There were odd rock formations that stood around the dangerous terrain. It was unscalable.

At the highest peak of the mountain range, a divine golden hall

radiated with blinding light all year round. It stood there silently and radiated with a simple but ancient presence. It had existed for countless years and was almost as old as the ground.

# Chapter 1100: Shock of the Hundred Races

---

The divine hall was the most sacred place among the members of the Hundred Races. It was the pillar of support for the entire continent—the War God Hall!

Currently, a wrinkly, winged, old elven man with pointy ears sat on the ground within a majestic hall of the War God Hall. He glowed with a green light as his vitality rapidly leaked away. His soul was quickly weakening as well, and even his skin was shriveling up.

Hundreds of people with different statuses sat before the elven man. Sorrow filled all of their faces.

“Don’t feel sad, don’t be sorrowful. Life and death are things everyone needs to go through. I am only leaving sooner,” the elven old man indifferently smiled. He was a hall elder of the War God Hall, having reached the Great Perfection of Saint King long ago. He was currently facing the end of his life. His soul would completely dissipate without much longer. All that would be left would be his body.

“Dzohar, go without worry. I shall be accompanying you in a hundred years,” a red-robed old man hoarsely said. His mood was extremely heavy. He too was a hall elder, and his name was Yenson, and he only had a hundred years left.

The elven old man looked at the sky and deeply sighed, “Reaching Saint Emperor is becoming more and more difficult

now...” His soul was rapidly dissipating into the surroundings. He had already reached the end of his life, and the moment his soul completely vanished, he would have passed away.

Suddenly, he became surprised. His eyes immediately began to shine with interest as he cried out, “T-t- this is the presence of the war god... I actually feel the presence of the war god. The war god of the Hundred Races has finally reappeared.”

What the elven old man said was shocking, so shocking in fact that the expression of everyone present changed.

“Dzohar, what did you say? You’ve sensed the presence of the war god?” A hall elder with similar strength cried out in astoundment.

Everyone there became shocked. Disbelief flooded all of their faces, but that disbelief was soon replaced by ravishing joy.

The war god of the Hundred Races had disappeared for over a million years. The war god meant a lot to the Hundred Races; not only was he the god to all members of the Hundred Races, he was their pillar of support and a sign for the blossoming glory of the Hundred Races.

The elven old man became extremely excited. He said with a trembling voice, “My soul is dissipating into the surroundings, so it fused with the world for a very short instance. In that moment, I sensed the presence of the war god.”



“Dzohar, are you sure it’s the war god? Are you completely sure?” A white-robed hall elder asked. He too was extremely excited.

The elven old man stood up and gazed into the distance. He confidently said, “I’ve sensed the presence of the war god many times in the forbidden grounds, and this supreme battle intent can only come from the war god. No one can imitate it, so it can’t be wrong. It can’t be wrong at all. It must be the war god. Our war god has finally descended to this world, and the Hundred Races can soar once more,” The old man became extremely emotional as two turbid streaks of tears rolled down his cheeks.

“Can you sense where the war god is right now? We’ll go welcome the great war god immediately,” a hall elder urgently inquired.

The soul of the old man dissipated faster and faster as his vitality leaked away. He became more and more shriveled. He shook his head and said with a face full of pity, “I could only sense the war god’s presence the moment my soul dissipated into the surroundings and became part of the world. I cannot sense where the war god is.”

“We’ll send orders to find the great war god. Even if we have to search the entire continent, we need to find the war god,” a well-respected elder of the War God Hall emotionally said.

“Now that the new war god has been born, we need to collect the remaining beast furs as soon as possible so that the war god can become even more powerful. Otherwise, I worry that the magical

beasts and humans will harm him before he fully matures,” said a burly middle-aged man. Although he sat on the ground, he was still five meters tall. He was the patriarch of the giants.

“I’ve just received news that the assassination organization we had secretly developed on the Tian Yuan Continent has been devastated by someone. The difficulty of finding the beast furs on the Tian Yuan Continent has become too great now,” a hall elder said with a deep voice.

“What? The Yama Hall’s been wiped out? Doesn’t that mean the only way for us to find where the beast furs are is to cast the secret technique?”

“The price to cast the secret technique is far too great. It needs the sacrifice of a Saint King at Great Perfection and the activity it creates is just too large. Not only will we find out, even the protector clans will know. We cast the secret technique several times in the past with a few elders, but the furs all ended up in the hands of the protector clans even though we found where they were. It’s almost impossible to take them back once the protector clans get their hands on them.”

“With the searching done by over ten elders in the past, thirteen of the eighteen beast furs have appeared. We are only in possession of four of them. The remaining nine are with the protector clans and Mercenary City of the Tian Yuan Continent as well as the Beast God Hall. We don’t know where the five final beast furs are.”

“If we need to gather all eighteen pieces, we need to get the beast furs in the hands of the protector clans and the Beast God

Continent. We need to go to war with them sooner or later, so it's no problem if they know where the beast furs are."

The upper echelon of the War God Hall discussed the situation. Today was the day when a hall elder was supposed to pass away from old age, and it was supposed to be a day filled with sorrow. Instead, the atmosphere had reversed because of the news of the rebirth of the war god. Nothing was more important to the Hundred Races than the rebirth of the war god.

The old elf said, "You're right. Now that the war god has appeared once more, we need to assemble all eighteen beast furs in the shortest amount of time possible. We will end up fighting the protector clans and the Beast God Continent sooner or later, so why should we worry about the remaining beast furs falling into their hands now? My life should be dissipating into the world anyway, so my life is as useless as a feather, but it looks like I can utilize my life for an even greater cause. Why don't I sacrifice my life and find the remaining five beast furs?"

"We can only do that now. Dzohar, you don't have much time left, so immediately cast the secret technique to find the remaining beast furs. Jarlie, immediately use the War God's Order to summon all the Saint Kings of the continent so they can gather at the War God Hall as soon as possible, and then send emissaries to scour the entire continent for the great war god," the fire-robed Yenson decisively handed out commands.

"Summoning all the Saint Kings of the Hundred Races? Elder, are we declaring war on the Tian Yuan Continent?" Everyone in the hall became shocked.

The hall elder shook his head. At that moment, his eyes became extremely narrowed, as if he could look through space. He seemed extremely terrifying as he coldly said, “No, we are not declaring war on the Tian Yuan Continent. We are declaring war on the protector clans. If the other beast furs appear, people of the protector clans will definitely go forth to collect them for themselves. Their clans will definitely be weakened by this, and we will take advantage of their weakness to attack the protector clans. We will take back the beast furs.”

“Esteemed elder, will we really succeed if we attack the protector clans?” A famed expert among the people asked.

The elder replied, “Our overall strength may pale in comparison to the Tian Yuan Continent by a lot, but our experts have all gathered together this time. Even if the ten protector clans work together, they cannot stop us.”

On the Tian Yuan Continent, the ten protector clans and Mercenary City were the supreme rulers without a doubt, but there were also many ancient clans and large organizations other as well as quite a few hermit experts who resided in desolate regions. As a result, even though the Hundred Races was far weaker than the whole Tian Yuan Continent, they were strong enough to deal with just the protector clans.

With the War God’s Order out, all the Saint Kings of the Wasteland Continent ripped open Space Gates to make their way to the War God Hall. Although many of them were very far away, traversing the distance was just as easy as breathing for the Saint

Kings.

Very soon, over two hundred Saint Kings gathered at the War God Hall. It was a huge number, all the Saint Kings of the Hundred Races.

Yenson was a hall elder of the War God Hall. He had reached the Great Perfection of Saint King many years ago and had already lived for six thousand years. He had a hundred years left before the end of his life, which was why he possessed such great prestige on the continent. He was one of the few who stood at the very top among the Hundred Races. He explained the rebirth of the war god as well as the plan to search for the beast furs, informing everyone.

All the experts that had gathered there became extremely excited when they heard that the war god had been reborn. Some of the older members had even begun to uncontrollably cry.

At the same time, the elven hall elder sacrificed his life to cast the secret technique to search for the beast furs. The map of the Tian Yuan Continent appeared in the empty space before him and constantly grew. In the end, a city and an ancient mountain range appeared as two golden balls of light constantly flickered in the two images.

The elven elder's body quietly turned into ash after casting the secret technique. Even his skeleton was not left behind, but his soul had already dissipated. All that was left was his will.

“Most of my energy has already dispersed, so I could only find

two of the five beast furs. The three others have been obstructed by a mysterious force, so I couldn't find them. However, I am certain that the three of them are together..."

# Table of Contents

## [Chaotic Sword God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1001: Eliminating the Tiger King \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1002: Eliminating the Tiger King \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1003: Eliminating the Tiger King \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1004: Gathering of Three Saint Emperors](#)

[Chapter 1005: Hong Lian](#)

[Chapter 1006: Legacy Treasures](#)

[Chapter 1007: Death Hunt \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1008: Death Hunt \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1009: Death Hunt \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1010: Houston's Baleful Yin Force](#)

[Chapter 1011: Rui Jin Arrives](#)

[Chapter 1012: Hong Lian Injured](#)

[Chapter 1013: Strength that Surpasses Saint Emperor \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1014: Strength that Surpasses Saint Emperor \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1015: The Seal Loosens](#)

[Chapter 1016: A Shocking Expert](#)

[Chapter 1017: Deep Underground](#)

[Chapter 1018: The Three Levels of the Origin Realm](#)

[Chapter 1019: Jian Chen's Desire](#)

[Chapter 1020: The Empyrean Demon Orbs Takes a Master](#)

[Chapter 1021: Tracks of the Murderers](#)

[Chapter 1022: Luo Duo](#)

[Chapter 1023: The Sect Master Arrives](#)

[Chapter 1024: The New Sect Master's Strength](#)

[Chapter 1025: Fighting the Imperial Protectors of the Felicity Empire](#)

[Chapter 1026: The Great Divination Technique](#)

[Chapter 1027: A Book of a Way](#)

[Chapter 1028: The Ancestral Emperor](#)

[Chapter 1029: Another Visit to the City of God](#)

[Chapter 1030: Zaar Caiyun](#)

[Chapter 1031: Fighting Zaar Caiyun \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 1032: Fighting Zaar Caiyun \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 1033: Fighting Zaar Caiyun \(Three\)](#)

[Chapter 1034: The Heavenly Enchantress? Mu'er?](#)  
[Chapter 1035: Zaar Caiyun's Feelings](#)  
[Chapter 1036: Meeting Yang Ling Again \(One\)](#)  
[Chapter 1037: Meeting Yang Ling Again \(Two\)](#)  
[Chapter 1038: Kara Liwei](#)  
[Chapter 1039: The Divine Hall Hidden at the Bottom of the River](#)  
[Chapter 1040: The Bright Moon Divine Hall](#)  
[Chapter 1041: Saint King Killing Formation \(One\)](#)  
[Chapter 1042: Saint King Killing Formation \(Two\)](#)  
[Chapter 1043: Saint King Killing Formation \(Three\)](#)  
[Chapter 1044: Saint King Killing Formation \(Four\)](#)  
[Chapter 1045: Saint King Killing Formation \(Five\)](#)  
[Chapter 1046: Fight for the Divine Hall \(One\)](#)  
[Chapter 1047: Fight for the Divine Hall \(Two\)](#)  
[Chapter 1048: Fight for the Divine Hall \(Three\)](#)  
[Chapter 1049: Fight for the Divine Hall \(Four\)](#)  
[Chapter 1050: Fairy Hao Yue's Sudden Appearance \(One\)](#)  
[Chapter 1051: Fairy Hao Yue's Sudden Appearance \(Two\)](#)  
[Chapter 1052: You Yue Takes a Master](#)  
[Chapter 1053: New Master of the Divine Hall \(One\)](#)  
[Chapter 1054: New Master of the Divine Hall \(Two\)](#)  
[Chapter 1055: New Master of the Divine Hall \(Three\)](#)  
[Chapter 1056: You Yue Emerges](#)  
[Chapter 1057: Infant](#)  
[Chapter 1058: Xiao Bao](#)  
[Chapter 1059: Disturbance at Flame City](#)  
[Chapter 1060: The First Captain](#)  
[Chapter 1061: Exploring the Tungsten Alloy Deposit Once More](#)  
[Chapter 1062: The Growing Metallic Origin Energy](#)  
[Chapter 1063: The Greed of the Changyang Clan](#)  
[Chapter 1064: Visiting the Huanggu Clan](#)  
[Chapter 1065: Disaster at the Doorstep](#)  
[Chapter 1066: Huang Tianba Saved](#)  
[Chapter 1067: Huang Luan Reaches Saint Ruler](#)  
[Chapter 1068: A Hidden Crisis](#)  
[Chapter 1069: Huang Luan Surrenders Her Body](#)  
[Chapter 1070: Entwined Fates](#)  
[Chapter 1071: Going to Mercenary City](#)  
[Chapter 1072: Comprehending the Mysteries of the World](#)



[Chapter 1073: Changes of Hellfire City](#)  
[Chapter 1074: Bi Dao's Revenge](#)  
[Chapter 1075: The Saint King Mo Jian](#)  
[Chapter 1076: Trapped in Yama Hall \(One\)](#)  
[Chapter 1077: Trapped in Yama Hall \(Two\)](#)  
[Chapter 1078: Breakthrough Obstructed](#)  
[Chapter 1079: The Five Major Realms of the Sword](#)  
[Chapter 1080: Visiting the Protector Clan](#)  
[Chapter 1081: The Bell of Grand Clarity Chimes Nine Times](#)  
[Chapter 1082: Making Trouble](#)  
[Chapter 1083: Patience Wearing Thin](#)  
[Chapter 1084: Inauguration](#)  
[Chapter 1085: Treasure of the Protector Clans](#)  
[Chapter 1086: Ancient Records](#)  
[Chapter 1087: Comprehending the Great Divination Technique](#)  
[Chapter 1088: Guihai Yidao \(One\)](#)  
[Chapter 1089: Guihai Yidao \(Two\)](#)  
[Chapter 1090: Devastating the Yama Hall \(One\)](#)  
[Chapter 1091: Devastating the Yama Hall \(Two\)](#)  
[Chapter 1092: Devastating the Yama Hall \(Three\)](#)  
[Chapter 1093: Saving Bi Dao](#)  
[Chapter 1094: Spectral Elder](#)  
[Chapter 1095: The Former Yama](#)  
[Chapter 1096: Fragments of a Saint Tier Battle Skill](#)  
[Chapter 1097: Visiting Dragon Island Once More \(One\)](#)  
[Chapter 1098: Visiting Dragon Island Once More \(Two\)](#)  
[Chapter 1099: Legacy of the War God](#)  
[Chapter 1100: Shock of the Hundred Races](#)